

BRADSTREET'S LIVES:

BEING A

1486. & 14.

GENUINE HISTORY

OF SEVERAL

Gentlemen *and* Ladies,

All living within these Ten Years past,

Remarkable for their VIRTUES, or
their VICES.

To which is added,

The AUTHOR'S System of
Government.

His Speech to a Grand Jury.

Remarks upon the last dy-

ing Agonies of the *Roman*

Empire, the Dissolution

of which was immediate-

ly preceded by the Sale of

all Offices and Prefer-

ments in Church, State,

and the Army, and esta-

blished Agents and Bro-
kers, to negotiate for, and
inform Purchasers the sel-
ling Price of every vacant
Place.

His Opinion of the fighting
Bucks of this Age.

His Observations on the Mi-
series of this Kingdom for
want of Tillage, and how
easily it may be remedied.

W I T H

A LETTER from the River SEINE to the
SHANNON, &c. &c.

D U B L I N:

Printed by S. POWELL in *Crane-lane*, MDCCLVII.



THE AUTHOR TO THE PUBLIC.



AVING no less at Stake, as to the pleasing of you, than my Existence, makes me beseech your Indulgence, as to the Errors you'll meet with in the following Work, which is generally the Misfortune of a first Edition; and especially so, if the Author happens to be dead or absent from the Press, whilst it is working off. My State of Health obliged me to stay in the Country, till it was almost done; therefore I request you to correct those Errors with your Pens, they are mostly trifling, but obvious. I also beg the Pardon of those Noblemen and Gentlemen, whose Titles and Names I have mentioned, without asking Leave; and has no more to say for myself for this Presumption, than that is has always been the Practice of grateful Authors to hand down their Patrons to Posterity.

The Author to the Publick.

The Truth of the Facts I relate, are what I rely upon to make this Book acceptable, as the Scenes of Action, or Times of my Heroes and Heroins are not remote, consequently subject to every curious Reader's Enquiry, who may judge whether or no I write with the Integrity of a just Historian. Now is certainly your Time to shake me off, by receiving my Child coolly; if he meets with a kind Reception I will continue an Incumbrance upon you, as I have another almost ready to bring forth into the World. I now commit myself to Fortune, and You. Farewel.



THE
NAMES
OF THE
SUBSCRIBERS.

A.
THE Right Hon.
Earl of Antrim
Lord Athenry, Jun.
Thomas Adderley, Esq;
Mr. Samuel Abbey
Mr. Roger Ash
Thomas Allen, Esq;
Mr. Samuel Allen
John Atkins, A. B.
Henry Ashworth, Gent.
William Anketel, Esq;
John Arnold, Jun. At-
torney
William Aughinleck,
Esq;
Philip Armstrong, Esq;
Mr. John Atchison,
Merchant
William Alrainey, Esq;

A 3

James Alleyn, Attorney
Philip Alleyn, Esq;
Walter Askin, Esq;
Colonel William Arm-
strong
William Asolton, At-
torney
Capt, John Archer
Mr. Edmond Armstrong

B.
The Right Hon. Earl of
Belvedere
Mr. James Black
John Bonham, Esq;
Mr. James Benson
Mr. Phineas Bagwell
William Baker, Esq;
Mr. Godfrey Baker
James Black, Esq;

Alex-

Subscribers Names.

Alexander Black, Esq;	George Browne, Esq;
Hugh Bowen, Esq;	Anthony Browne, Esq;
John Bowen, Esq;	John Brady, Gent.
Mr. William Braddell	Edward Bermingham,
Christopher Barnwall,	Esq; 2 Books
Esq;	Sir William Burdet, Bt.
Robert Bonham, Attor-	Francis Bland, Esq;
ney	Eg. Blake, Esq;
Ignatius Blake, Esq;	—— Blake, Esq;
Robert Birch, Merchant	Mr. Martin Blake
Knight Berry, Gent.	Francis Blake, Esq;
William Townley Bal-	Mr. John Blake, Mer-
four, Esq;	chant
William Butler, Esq;	Aug. Browne, Esq;
Mr. George Byrne, Mer-	—— Byrty, Esq;
chant	Tho. Burke, Esq;
John Brown, Gent.	Pat. O'Brien, Esq;
Mr. William Brennan	Thomas Blake, Esq;
William Buckley, Esq;	Henry Cole Bowen, Esq;
Francis Burton, Gent.	Godfrey Baker, Esq;
John Bond, M. D.	Richard Bradshaw, Esq;
John Beatty, Esq;	John Townsend Becher,
Robert Brennan, Esq;	Esq;
Thomas Burke, Att.	Samuel Baily, Gent.
John Byrne, Esq;	Mrs. Becher
Robert Browne, Gent.	Walter Baker, Esq;
George Barclay, Esq;	Thomas Barker, Esq;
Thomas Bermingham,	John Bradshaw, Attor-
Esq;	ney
Gerald Bermingham,	Pierce Barrow, Gent.
Esq;	Mr. Thomas Butler
Samuel Boyle, Esq;	Mr. Burrows, Attorney
Charles Baggot, Esq;	David Butler, Attorney
Edward Brown, Esq;	John Boswell, Esq;
Robert Barclay, Esq;	John Byrne, Attorney
Mr. Francis Baggs, Mer-	Mr. Owen Bray of
chant	Loughlinstown.
Leonard Barlow, Gent.	John

Subscribers Names.

John Browne, Esq;
Henry Bindon, Esq;
John Bonfield, Jun.
Mr. John Bourchiel
James Burke, Esq;
William Blood, Esq;
Neptune Blood, Esq;

C.

Lord Viscount Charle-
mount
Sampel Croker, Esq;
Rev. Downes Conron,
A. M.
Mr. James Coghlan
Dennis OCallaghan, Esq;
William Connor, Esq;
Colonel John Cole
Thomas Cannon, Esq;
John Colpoys, Esq;
Robert OCallaghan, Esq;
Mr. George Carleton
Benjamin Copeland, Esq;
John Chaloner, Esq;
Brook Chambers, Esq;
Cornet Archibald Co-
nyngnam, Merchant
Colonel Cuffe
Thomas Cooper, Esq;
George Clarke, Gent.
Henry Croker, Esq;
Cornelius OCallaghan,
Esq;
Ephraim Carrol, Esq;
Richard Caddell, Gent.
Joshua Carter, Gent.
Master Singleton Col-
poys
John Caddell, Attorney

John Campbell, Attor-
ney
Arc. Cumins, Gent.
John Colpoys, Attorney
12 Books
Counsellor Chapman,
Esq; 20 Books
William Cooper, Esq;
Mr. Charles Cunning-
ham
Mr. James Cowdon
Richard Cooper, Esq;
Francis Caulfield, Esq;
John Cope, Esq;
Nicholas Coin, Esq;
Charles Crosbie, Esq;
Mr. Tim. Cronin, Book-
seller
Francis Chutd, Esq;
Thomas Collis, Gent.
Mr. Dan. Cronin
Corn. Callaghan, Esq;
Mr. Peter Cossart, Mer-
chant
Mr. Dan. Kyffe Clogheen
James Carroll, Esq;
Edward Cooke, Esq;
William Connor, Att.
Ran. Crofton, Esq;
John Chamney, Jun. Esq;
William Coulthorft, Esq;
Adam Colclough, Esq;
John Cookman, Jun. Esq;
Cæsar Colclough, Esq;
Francis Coghlan, Attor-
ney
Alexander Cornwall, Gt.
William Candler, Esq;
A 4 James

Subscribers Names.

James Crow, Esq;
Edmund Comyns, Esq;
George Clanchy, Esq;
Batt. Confidin, Esq;
John Cherry, Bookseller
in Limerick, 8 Books
James Crowe, Attorney
Mr. Richard Cooke

D.

Owen Daly, Esq;
William Dance, Esq;
John Dawson, Esq;
Judge Darcy, Esq;
L. Dejean, Esq;
James Darcy, Esq;
Joshua Davis, Esq;
John Drought, Esq;
James Massey Dawson,
Esq;
Mr. Thomas Draffery
Mr. John Dennis, Mer-
chant
Thomas Drought, Sen.
Esq;
John Drought, Jun. Esq;
Thomas Drought, Jun.
Esq;
Alderman Dawson
Henry Dunkin, Attorney
Marriott Dalway, Esq;
Richard Dalton, Esq;
John Dillon, Esq;
Paul Davis, Esq;
Thomas Dodkin, Esq;
Henry Dillon, Esq;
Hya. D'Arcy, Esq;
Peter Deane, Esq;

Charles Daly, Esq;
James Dwyer, Esq;
Mr. Dennis Duggan
Anthony Dyer, Gent.
Thomas Derewzy, Esq;
Edward Donavan, Esq;
Samuel O'Donnell, At-
torney

Samuel Davoren, Esq;
Michael Dalton, Gent.
William Dixon, Esq;
Ringrose, Drew, Esq;
William Dardis, Esq;
Christopher Dardis, Esq;
James Dardis, Esq;
Mr. Stephen Draper.

E.

Patrick Ewing, Esq;
Pack. Edgworth, Esq;
Henry Edgworth, Esq;
Robert Echlin, Esq;
Mr. James Ector, Mer-
chant
Stephen Egan, M. D.
John Evans, Esq;
Hugh Eccles, Esq;
James Ellard, the Youn-
ger
Cornet Empson

F.

Mr. Marcus Ford
Charles Flood, Esq;
Doctor Flood
Revd. Richard Farmer
Francis Fox, Esq;
Samuel Forth, Esq;
William

Subscribers Names:

William Fetherston, Esq;
 William Fitzgerald, Gt.
 John Ferguson, Surgeon
 Miss Darkey Ferguson
 Faithful Fortescue, Esq;
 William Fenner, Gent.
 Mr. David Forrest
 Thomas Foresyth, Esq;
 John Ford, Attorney
 Richard Fenner, Esq;
 2 Books
 Henry Fortescue, Esq;
 ——— French, Esq;
 John French, Esq;
 Richard Ferrall, Esq;
 Lieut. John Ford
 Warden Flood, Esq; Jun.
 Richard Fitzpatrick, Esq;
 Thomas French, Esq;
 Robert Freeman, Esq;
 Mr. William French,
 Merchant
 Sir John Freke, 4 Books
 Richard Falkiner, Esq;
 Stopford Fielding, Esq;
 Col. Augustin Fitzgerald
 M. Furnell, Esq;
 John Fitzgibbons, Esq;
 Robert Fitzgerald, Esq;
 Garret Fitzgerald, Esq;
 James Fitzmaurice, Esq;
 William Fitzgerald Esq;
 Augustin Fitzgerald, Esq;
 Mr. John Fisher, Mer-
 chant
 Mr. John Ferrar

G.

Mr. Daniel Gibbes
 Edward Gardiner, Esq;
 Duke Giffard, Esq;
 Foster and Green,
 2 Books
 Thomas Green, Esq;
 3 Books
 Sir Arthur Gore
 Thomas Knox Gordon,
 Esq;
 Henry Graham, Attor-
 ney
 Col. Grimes, 12 Books
 John Gregg, Jun.
 John Gordon, Jun.
 John Gay, Esq;
 Theo. Glover, Esq;
 Francis Gray, Esq;
 George Grace, Esq;
 John Gahan, Esq;
 Richard Gafon, Esq;
 Mr. Daniel Gahan, Jun.
 Stephen Goggin, Attor-
 ney
 Richard Gore, Esq;
 Captain Gay
 George St. George, Esq;

H.

Robert Hume, Esq;
 John Hamilton, Esq;
 Mr. Ralph Harman,
 Merchant
 Richard Hume, Esq;

Mr.

Subscribers Names.

Mr. Thomas Holmes	Cornet Henry Hughes,
Mr. Thomas Hewett	Esq;
George Hart, Esq;	James Hicky, Esq;
Mr. Andrew Hamilton,	Mr. John Hayman
Merchant	Mr. John Hoy
Robert Harman, Esq;	Walter Hore, Esq;
Edward Humphry, Esq;	Jack Hatton
William Hamilton, Esq;	Mr. James Harrison
Counsellor Hamilton,	James Hornege, Attor-
Esq;	ney
Robert Hamilton, At-	William Heatly, Esq;
torney	Howard Humphry, Esq;
Alexander Hutchinson,	William Hodson, Esq;
Esq;	Mr. Richard Hornege
George Hodginson, Esq;	John Hays, Esq;
Henry OHara, Esq;	Mr. George Hadfor
Thomas Hart, Gent.	Daniel Hays, Esq; 20
Steel Hawthorn, Mer-	Books
chant	—— Hartney, Esq;
Mr. David Hay	Robert Haley, Esq;
Mr. William Harrison	Mr. William Henn
William Haven, Esq;	Richard Hogarth, Esq;
The Rev. Mr. Hutchin-	James Howson, Gent.
son Hamilton	Hugh Hogan, Gent.
Hans Hamill, Esq;	Captain Robert Harrison
Thomas Hufsey, Esq;	Luke Hickman, Esq;
Laurence OHara, Esq;	Mr. William Holt
William Hamilton, Esq;	
William Hogg, Esq;	I.
Robert Holmes, Esq;	Right Hon. the Earl of
Patrick Hanly, Attorney	Inchiquin
Richard Homan, Esq;	Capt. William Jephson
James OHara, Attorney	Thomas Jeffop, Esq;
George Hickson, Esq;	Mr. Robert Johnston,
Robert Hoare, Esq;	junior, Attorney
William Hall, Esq;	Miss Jane James
Mr. Francis Hodder,	
Merchant	Edward

Subscribers Names.

Edward Jones, Gent.	Richard Keane, Esq;
Mr. Robert Jenkin	Tho. Kanning, Esq; 6
Thomas Jones, Esq;	Books
Ambrose Jones, Gent.	Tho. Kearney, Gent.
Cornet Henry Jenney	Morgan Kanaugh, Esq;
Arthur Irwin, Gent.	Tho. Kergee, Attorney
Henry Joy, Gent.	John Kerin, Gent.
William Johnston, Esq;	Robert Keane, Esq;
Henry and Robert Joy	Ter. Kerin, junior, Esq;
Edward Jones, Esq;	

Mr. Tho. James, Merch.	L.
Henry Irwin, Esq;	The Right Hon. Lord
Matthew Joyce, M. D.	Loftus
Major Dem. James	Mr. Abraham Lane
Mat. Jones, Esq;	Mr. Anthony Lane
Henry Jesse, Esq;	Richard Levinge, Esq;
Henry Jeuer, Esq;	Gorges Lowther, Esq;
Miles Jackson, Esq;	Robert Lee, Attorney

K.	Edward Lucas, Esq;
Miss Kennedy	Francis Lucas, Esq;
James Kiernan, M. D.	Robert Legg, Esq;
Daniel Kanning, Esq;	Robert Long, Merchant.
Daniel Keife, Gent.	James Lawder, Esq;
Robert Kyle, Attorney,	Mr. Francis Lumm
6 Books	Mr. Hu. Lyons
John Kinnier, Gent.	John Lopdell, Gent.
Hon. Henry King, Esq;	Richard Lynch, Esq;
Michael Kelly, Esq;	Walter Lawrence, Esq;
John Knox, Esq;	John Lane, Esq;
Gilbert King, Esq;	Robert Lymbery, Gent.
William Kelly, Gent.	Henry Lyndon, Esq;
Richard Kirwan, Esq;	John Lamb, Esq;
Ed. Kelly, Esq;	Jones Leake, Attorney

And. Kirwan, Gent.	M.
Daniel Kelly, Esq;	George Moore, Esq;
Peter Kilkenny, Attorney	Mr. James Magrath,
James Kingston, Gent.	Merchant

Mr.

Subscribers Names.

Mr. Farrell Magauran	Malcome M'Neill, Esq;
Mr. Francis Moore	Robert Maxwell, Esq;
Mr. David Meade	William Montgomery,
Mr. William Murphy	Esq;
William Magrath, Esq;	Mr. Alexan. M'Culloch
Henry Montfort, Esq;	Mr. Samuel Macky
Anthony Malone, Esq;	Warburton Marsh, Esq;
Edmond Malone, Esq;	Mr. William Magill,
William Maguire, Esq;	Merchant
Hugh Maguire, Esq;	Mr. William Marshall,
William Malony, Esq;	Merchant
Mr. Robert Montgome-	Edward Mills, Esq;
ry	Mr. Charles Mallows
William Moore, Esq;	Peter Marsh, Esq;
Redmond Morres, Gent.	Lieut. Arthur Molef-
James Miller, Attorney	worth
Mr. Lewis Moore	Henry Magennis, Esq;
Charles Meares, Esq;	John M'Carthy, Esq;
George Meares, Esq;	Mr. Robert Mitchell
Arthur M'Cally, Esq;	Rev. William Mockler,
Richard Malone, Esq;	A. M.
John M'Neale, Esq;	W. Mowa, Attorney
John M'Gill, Esq;	Richard Mellefont, Esq;
Mr. Dennis M'Owen	Richard Meade, Esq;
John M'Castrand, Esq;	Lawford Miles, Gent.
Robert M'Clintock, Esq;	Edw. Mandevile, Esq;
Mr. Joseph Medlicott	Morgan O'Meara, Esq;
Alexander Mountgome-	Thomas Matthew, Esq;
ry, Esq;	Mr. John M'Cheane
Samuel M'Geough, Esq;	Edmond Mandevile,
Henry Marmion, Esq;	Esq;
— M'Manus, Gent.	Richard Malone, Attor-
Roger M'Neill, Esq;	ney
James Maxwell, Gent.	Mr. — M'Actor
Arch. M'Allister, Attor-	Anthony Marlay, Esq;
ney	Rev. James Maguire,
Mr. John M'Naghten	T. C. D.
John Magill, Esq;	

Mr.

Subscribers Names.

Mr. Cha. Molloy, Merchant

John Medcalf, Attorney

Israel Mitchell, Esq;

William Maffy, Esq;

William M^cNamara, Esq;

Pat. Mahony, Gent.

M^cNamara Morgan, Esq;

James Molony, Esq;

Croasdail Molony, Esq;

Michael M^cNamara,
Gent.

Tho. M^cMahon, Esq;

Edmond Morony, Esq;

N.

Robert Nugent, Esq;

John Nugent, Esq;

Thomas Nugent, Esq;

Andrew Nugent, Esq;

Christopher Nicholson,
Esq;

Col. Count Nugent

Charles O'Neill, Esq;

Thomas Nesbitt, Esq;

James Nesbitt, Esq;

Geo. Nangle, Gent.

Henry Nesbitt, Esq;

Lieut. Jerome Noble

Anthony Nolan, Esq;

Christoph. Nugent, Esq;

Mr. Philip Newman, jun^r
nior

Pierce Nagle, Esq;

Tho. Newenham, Esq;

Joshua Nunn, Esq;

Geo. Nixon, Esq;

Richard Nun, Esq;

William Nayler, Attorney

Charles O'Neill, Esq;

James Nugent, Esq;

O.

Mr. John Orr, Mercht.

Richard Owen, M. D.

Mr. Tho. Osborne

Philip Oliver, Esq;

John Qwens, Gent.

P.

Dr. Pocock, Lord Bishop
of Ossory

Richard Power, M. D.

Capt. William Parsons

Samuel Powell, junior

Henry Purdon, Esq;

John Plummer, Esq;

Richard Phepoe, Esq;

John Preston, Esq;

Capt. Peter Pigou

Edmond Power, Esq;

Miss Ann Patterson

Peter Proley, Gent.

John Peyton, Esq;

Mr. John Pettigrew

Alexander Percy, Esq;

Samuel Potts, Esq;

Thomas Pjgott, Esq;

John Parr, Gent.

Lieut. Toby Purcell

John Plaince, Gent.

Tho. Prendergast, Esq;

Henry Prittie, Esq;

Cornet William Penne-
father.

Andrew

Subscribers Names.

Andrew Price, Esq;
Joseph Pocock, Esq;
Capt. Percivall
Mr. Tho. Pearce, Mer-
chant
Col. Pool
Richard Plummer, Esq;
Richard Powell, Esq;

R.

Miss Read
Thomas Rogerfon, Esq;
Dennis Ryan, Esq;
John Reilly, Esq; 10
Books
Ph Reilly, Esq;
Thomas Reed, Esq;
Mr. Charles Rivers
Mr. Myles Reiley
James Ramage, Esq;
Lewis Roberts, Esq;
Robert Roberts, Esq;
Mr. Cæsar Reilly, Merch.
Mr. Joseph Rossmore
John Rowan, Esq;
Mr. Tho. Roch, Mer-
chant
William Richards, Esq;
Edmond Reynell, Esq;
Francis Ramsay, Attor-
ney
Edward Richardson, Esq;
Richard Robbins, Esq;
Mr. Peter Rorke, Mer-
cornet Rankin
Robert Rogers, Esq;
John Rye, Esq;
Mr. John Rogers

Mr. Andrew Roe
Richard Reilly, junior,
Esq;
John Roe, Esq;
John Ryder, Esq;
Solomon Richards, Esq;
Thomas Roche, Mer-
chant
Richard Rose, Attorney
Mr. John Rowleman
Mr. Michael Roche

S.

The Earl of Shannon
The Hon. Hungerford
Skeffington, Esq;
Hugh Swaine, Esq;
Dom. Sarsfield, M. D.
Mr. William Snowe
Ald. Mathias Smith
John Smith, Esq;
Ralph Smith, Esq;
Amb. Sharman, Gent.
John Stratford, Esq;
Marlborough Sterling,
Esq;
Robert Spence, Esq;
Thomas Sterling, Gent.
Lieut. William Shaan
John Galt Smith
James Stewart, Esq;
John Seeds, Sheriff of
Carrickfergus
Arthur Stanhope, Attor-
ney
James Shannon, Attor-
ney
Thomas Stamen, Gent.
Charles

Subscribers Names.

Charles Savage, Esq;
Andrew Thomas Stewart, Esq;

William Stewart, Esq;

John Smyth, M. A.

Mr. Alexander Scott,
Merchant

Mr. James Stephenson

Lieut. Richard St.
George

Mr. William Shiell

Lieut. Hen. Shaw

Capt. Thomas Aug.
Spann

Patrick Sherlock, Mer-
chant

William Southwell, Esq;

Jonas Stawell, Esq;

Anthony Slaughton, Esq;

Thomas Spaight, junior,
Esq;

William Sullivan, Esq;

Charles Sadleir, Esq;

Jos. Smith, Gent.

Robert Snow, Esq;

John Smith, Esq;

Shapland Swiney, Esq;

2 Books

Charles Shudall, Esq;

Col. Stopford

Moiley Pendred Saun-
ders, Esq;

William Shiell, Esq;

Ben. Stratford, Esq;

William Swift, Esq;

John Scott, Esq;

Richard Symes, Esq;

Geo. Stephens, Attorney

Tho. Studdest, Esq;

Mr. John Scott

T.

The Hon. Lord Beresford

Veir Trench, Esq;

Eph. Thwaites, Att.

Mr. Hugh Trevor

Charles Tisdall, Esq;

Reily Towers, Esq;

William Taylor, Gent.

Pat. Tool, Gent. 10 Books

Mr. Thomas Tisdall

Thomas Tracy, Gent.

John Taaffe, Esq;

James Thomas, Esq;

James Tisdall, Esq;

Mr. John Thewles

Mr. Thomas Tranty

Mr. Boyle Travers, Mer.

Tho. Travers, Esq;

Rev. Holt Truell

Lawrence Toole, Esq;

Ensign Geo. Tomkins

U.

Rev. Mr. William Vowel

Mr. Thomas Verner

Thomas Vesey, Esq;

Thomas Vandeleur, Esq;

W.

Charles Willington, Esq;

Tho. Willington, Esq;

Mr. James White

Henry Wrigon, Esq;

John Wilson, Esq;

Henry Williams, Gent.

Geo.

Subscribers Names.

Geo. Woods, Attorney
 Edw. Williams, Gent.
 Mr. Robert White
 Edmond Walpole, Esq;
 Patrick White, Gent.
 Meredyth Workman,
 Esq;
 Joseph Wallace, Esq;
 Mich. Ward, Esq;
 Mr. Matthew Wilder
 Vans Wetherelt
 Mr. Tho. Wilkinfon
 Mr. Robert Ward
 James Wall, Esq;
 Major Hunt Walsh
 Samuel Wilkinfon, Esq;
 Henry Westenra, Esq;

Sir John Whitefoord
 Thomas Weston, Attor-
 ney
 Art. Worthvale, Esq;
 John White, Esq;
 James White, Esq;
 Ben. Wilson, Gent.
 William White, Esq;
 William Whittingham,
 Esq;
 Richard Waller, junior
 John Walcott, Esq;
 Ambrose Wilson, Esq;
 Tho. Walcott, Esq;
 Matt. Williamson, Gent.
 Y.
 Jones Young, Esq;

William Sullivan, Esq;
 Charles Saller, Esq;
 Jol Smith, Gent.
 Robert Snow, Esq;
 John Smith, Esq;
 Shapland Swiney, Esq;
 a Books

Charles Shudall, Esq;
 Molloy Pendered Shun-
 dels, Esq;
 William Shiell, Esq;
 Ben. Stratford, Esq;
 William Swift, Esq;
 John Scott, Esq;
 Richard Symes, Esq;
 Geo. Stephens, Attorney

B R A D -



BRADSTREET's

LIVES, &c.



THE kind Reception my First Work received from the Publick, encourages me now to go on with a Second, in which I will have no Recourse to Invention, but give my Readers real and well known Examples of virtuous and vicious Lives, and their Consequences; and without farther Ceremony will proceed with the Life of EMILIA FINCH.

She was born in *Wood-street, London*, her Father was a Change-Broker, and retired from that City, and settled with his Wife and three Children on a small Farm near *Gravesend*, on the Banks of the *Thames*, with Twenty Thousand Pounds in the Stocks. *Emilia* had an elder Sister called *Catharine*,

B

(whose

(whose History immediately follows) and a Brother named *Richard*. Mrs. *Finch*, Mother to those Children, governed Husband and Family Affairs, and was remarkably vain, and fond of Wit and Repartee; in which Qualities her Daughter *Catharine* shined, so as often to confound her very Mother and Friends by her Answers. Those supposed Excellencies *Emilia* wanted, and consequently her Mother's Favour, tho' her Person was most amiable, her Education good, her Endeavours constant to please both Father and Mother, and her Words few, but conveyed weighty Sense. The Father, Mr. *Finch*, loved his Son almost to Dotage, at this Time Fourteen Years of Age.

This was the State of the Family for some Time, till they received their first Shock, which was Master *Richard's* bathing in the *Thames*, and being unfortunately drowned, while the Servant who attended him was getting drunk with Gin. The first News of this Disaster Miss *Emilia* heard, who was then making Shirts for him, and retired from the rest of the Family, at this time engaged in Company. She requested of all the Servants to conceal his Death, till her Mamma prepared her Father as well as possible to resist the first Shock the News would give him. She went to her Mamma, and told her she had something to say to her in private; her Mamma replied, she was sorry she had not more Discretion than to call her out of Company. Miss begged Pardon with the greatest Submission and Duty, but still intreated her to withdraw with her. I find I must hear this mighty Business of yours, getting up and retiring with *Emilia*. Dear Mamma, I have the most melancholy News you ever heard! What is it, *Emilia*? make Haste, let me hear it! Miss replied, Madam, my Brother was drowned this Afternoon.

Drowned!

Drowned ! says her Mamma, are you sure of it ? I am too sure, says *Emilia*, and fear it will be the Death of my Dada when he knows it, therefore request you may by your Example, and with the Force of your Reason and Wisdom assist him. This is dreadful News indeed ! says her Mamma, and cannot be concealed many Minutes from him. He has been very uneasy about his stay these two Hours past, and what to do with him about my dear Child I know not, for I am now confounded and distracted, wringing her Hands. Dear Madam, says *Emilia*, I have always heard the worthy Masters and Mistresses you appointed for my Education say, that praying to God is the only Comfort in Distress, and indeed I have experienced it ; while I was learning to work, whenever I happened to spoil any thing that used to provoke you, then would I earnestly apply by Prayer to God to reconcile you to me, and I think I never was disappointed. Child, says her Mamma, you never did any thing wilfully to disoblige me, though I confess I have been a little too severe upon you ; forgive me, *Emilia* ; my only Son's unhappy Fate renders me now an Object. I have no Remembrance of any Unkindness of yours, says *Emilia*, and now wish I could bear all your Sorrows, tho' I have as much for the Companion of my Infancy and Youth, as a Sister for an only Brother can bear.

During this Conversation, Miss *Catharine* came to them, and soon heard the unfortunate End of her Brother, and immediately runs to her Father and tells him. You may easier imagine than have it expressed by Words, the Shock it gave a Father to hear his only Son and darling Child was drowned ; he was disarmed more than many others to resist it, being for a long Course of Years before accustomed only to Prosperity, and his greatest De-

light was in his darling Son, viewing his Form and hearing his Prattle, turning Child again with him, being always one of his Party at his Infant Plays, such as building Card Houses, making Hobby-horses, and many others, as he advanced in Years: When thus engaged he was quite inattentive to the Cares, Anxieties, and Business of those who addressed him, especially of those who had a Dependence upon him, unless they first insinuated themselves by the Praises of Master *Dicky's* Words and his Beauty; then indeed they might have a favourable Hearing. None can conceive, but Parents circumstanced like him, the first Transports of his unbounded Sorrow; in short, he raved, he stormed, prophaned, frothed, and shewed all the Symptoms of Distraction, violently saying, Give me my Son, or you undo me for ever!

In vain were the Endeavours of his Family and Company in the House to moderate his Grief; he desired to see the Servant that attended him, and was answered he was run away, but left a Declaration behind him, that he was sorry for what had happened; he then insisted upon seeing his Son dead or alive; they all thought proper to indulge him in this, and went with him to a Parlour where he was by this time laid out. It was a Scene of real Sorrow to those who beheld and heard the unhappy Mr. *Finch*, viewing and distractedly speaking to his Son's Corpse; he throws himself violently upon it, and continually calls to him *Richard!* my Delight arise, come and play, *Emilia* and I are ready; arise, my Comfort, or your Dada's unhappy for ever! When his Friends thought his Spirits sufficiently exhausted they forced him away.

No Time nor Consolation could allay his Grief; the fourth Day after *Richard* was buried it appeared Mr. *Finch* had a settled Melancholy upon him, lost his Memory and Reason, and gave no Indication

BRADSTREET's LIVES.

3

tion of either, except frequently searching every Room and Corner of the House, and saying he thought he heard his Son's Voice in them: Thus he continued while he lived, and was dutifully and faithfully attended upon by his Daughter *Emilia*, tho' neglected by the rest of his Family.

This is one Example, out of thousands that may be given, how dangerous a Folly it is for a Parent to place his sole Love and Affection upon any Child, that is so subject to Death and Accidents; and supposing he lives, may make an undutiful and ungrateful Return, so as to hurry his Parents with Sorrow to the Grave. I would advise all Parents to do what they can for their Children, with Justice to the World and themselves, but to have Fortitude enough to resist the Case of Mr. *Finch*, upon either Death or Disobedience.

In a Month after Master *Richard's* Death, Mrs. *Finch* sent for a Lawyer to draw Mr. *Finch's* Will; when the Lawyer came Mrs. *Finch* called her Husband and told him the Business; he very much approved of it. The Lawyer was told Mr. *Finch* had twenty thousand Pounds in the Stocks, and they wanted to know how he would have it disposed of after his Death; he replied, ten thousand Pounds to my Son, and the rest to my Wife and Daughters; he was told his Son was dead; he said he would not believe it, nor would he make any other Will. The Lawyer addressed Mrs. *Finch*, and said, the Gentleman is *Non compos mentis*. *Non compos mentis!* what do you mean by that, Sir? replied Mrs. *Finch*. His Head is disordered, he is mad, and no Will of his can be valid in Law, and therefore I cannot proceed.

In five Months after Letters of Guardianship were applied for, and given to Mr. *Thomas Finch*, his Brother, to regulate the Fortune of the Family: He was a Merchant of extensive Credit, and

reputed worth one hundred thousand Pounds, the Bulk of whose Fortune was expected to fall to *Catharine* and *Emilia Finch*, as they were his nearest and most beloved Relations, except a Brother, of whom he made little better than a Pack-horse in his way of Business.

Affairs being settled, and six thousand Pounds Fortune for each of the young Ladies in the rich Uncle's Hands, there were several Proposals of Marriage made to Mrs. *Finch* for Miss *Catharine*, Miss *Emilia* being carefully kept out of Sight, as she not only eclipsed her Sister, but all that were in that Neighbourhood, for Person, Beauty, Endowments of Mind, and a good Education, she being wholly employed in comforting and amusing her Father, whose Company was troublesome to all others.

Among many Suitors at this time who addressed Miss *Catharine*, one Mr. *Rich*, a young Merchant, was chose for a Husband for her, and soon after married. The new-married Bridegroom remained with the Family for a Week, and then took his Wife and Mother-in-Law home with him in his Coach, and *Emilia* was appointed to take Care of the Family in the mean time. In this Employment was she engaged eight Months, her Mother making only a few Visits home, when (shocking Affair to this Family!) about this time, to the Surprise of every body, Mr. *Thomas Finch*, the supposed rich Uncle, was declared a Bankrupt, and not able to pay Sixpence in the Pound, and unhappily had, at the Time of his failing, fourteen thousand Pounds of Mrs. *Finch's* and Miss *Emilia's* in his Hands, which great Misfortune soon changed the Respect and Esteem their supposed Friends and Acquaintances had for them, into the coldest Indifference.

Upon

Upon the first News of this dreadful Stroke Mrs. *Finch* came home, and packing up all her Plate sent it to *London*. Their manner of living being, from the first of Mr. *Finch*'s Disorder to Miss *Catherine*'s Marriage, exceedingly expensive, and not being discharged, it appeared, by a Variety of Bills, there were above six hundred Pounds due, for which the several Creditors got such Powers as the Law appoints to seize their Effects, and each contended who should be foremost. Mrs. *Finch* could not stand it, but in great Confusion went off to her Daughter *Rich*, ordering *Emilia* to do the best she could, who was at this time but sixteen Years old, as innocent as when born, and as lovely as an Angel. How affecting to a generous Soul must it be, to see a young Lady surrounded with Creditors and Bailiffs, seizing and entering on Papers and every thing in the House, and she regarding nothing but her aged and infirm Father, often beseeching them not to disturb him, which was little minded by those Ruffians. In this exceeding Distress, Miss wrote to several Neighbours, who professed a Friendship to her Family before, to come to her Assistance in this Exigency, but received Answers they were all sick or abroad.

This was the first severe Experience she had of the World, and her last Resort in her present Condition. She heard the Bailiffs tell her Father he must quit the Apartment he was in, that they must lock it up: He understood nothing they were about; she embracing him said, My dear Dada, what Crime have you or I committed, that the Laws should impower these Fellows not to leave us a Bed to lye upon, nor a House to cover us; we are abandoned by the faithless World, let us apply to God, I am sure he will protect the Innocent, and extricate us out of our Woes and Miseries. He made no other Reply, but asked if his

Son *Richard* was come home. The Bailiffs resented being called Fellows by Miss, and one of them answered her, saying, Your Crime is running in Debt with every one that would trust you, and not paying any, nor intending it, but we will oblige you, as far as the Goods here are worth, and we insist upon you and your crazy Father's turning out of this House instantly, or we will drag both of you out, for we are accountable for all that is set down in the Inventory, therefore be gone, that we may lock up the Doors. Miss could make no Reply, but by her Tears and Lamentations; alas! she had no friendly Ears or Eyes to apply to, but, like the famed *Aeneas*, who saved his aged Father *Anchises* out of the Flames of *Troy*, handed her Father from the Tyranny of those inhospitable Wretches, who were newly become Governors of his House, where he had spent so many happy Years, and so wofully concluded, to a friendly Cottage, where his and her own Wearing Apparel was secured, and wrote to her Sister as follows:

Dear Sister,

MY poor Dada and I are turned out of our House, and every thing taken from us, except our Clothes and my Watch, by a Parcel of Ruffians. We are now at Mrs. *Jervis's*, where I fear my Dada will get Cold: He is happy that he is not sensible of any thing that passed this Day, if he was, I am sure it would break his Heart. I send by this Bearer some of our Dada's Things and mine, we will be both with you To-morrow; have a warm Room provided for him. My Duty to Mamma. I am, dear Sister, yours and Brother *Rich's*

Most affectionate Sister,

Emilia Finckh

P. S.

P. S. I have a great many Particulars to tell Mamma and you, of the Miseries I suffered this Day.

She dispatched this Letter with a Bundle of Things to her Sister, and made the best Disposition she could in this little humble House, with the Assistance of Mr. and Mrs. *Jervis*, for the Reception of her Father that Night, which was passed with as much Tranquillity as could be expected after such Hardships.

Next Day the Messenger arrived, and gave her a Letter, she looked at it and said, this is the Letter I gave you; the Messenger called her aside, and told her, he delivered it as she desired, that her Sister read it and returned it to him, with this Message that she would never receive another, nor speak to her; that she was young and able to work for her Bread; that all the Request she had to make to her was, never more to hear from her; as to her Father, he paid Scot and Lot many Years, in one of the best Parishes in *London*, and was consequently entitled to the Poor-house of it, which was much fitter for him than to make her House an Hospital or Bedlam; I have no more to add but this, if ever she sends another Messenger I will affront him, so be gone. At these last Words poor *Emilia* fainted, her Words in falling were, Oh my Father, what will he do? Mrs. *Jervis* saw her fall, and ran to her Assistance; she soon recovered, and *Emilia* told her, What I suffered Yesterday was nothing to what I endure this Minute. My dear, says Mrs. *Jervis*, if it be not a Secret let me know what it is? I know no Secrets, answers Miss; this Messenger I sent to my Sister, will inform you of the Cause of my new Affliction; he accordingly told her every Circumstance and Word that Mrs. *Rich* said to him.

Is

Is this all that troubles you, says Mrs. *Jervis*? It is, replies Miss. It seems, my Dear, you know little of the World, says Mrs. *Jervis*, if you did, you would find it the constant Practice of the Rich and Fortunate, to disown and abhor their nearest Kindred, if poor or distressed; tho' their Reputations may be without Spot or Blemish, but that of Poverty is most scandalous and avoidable in their Sight: When you live as many Years as I have done, and have any Commerce with the World, you may perhaps learn a thousand Examples of Ill-nature and Ingratitude equal to your Case; your Sister is carried in her Coach, you are to walk, and happy if you can keep good Shoes; she will live high and delicate, while you earn every Morsel you get; your present Station appears in this Light to me: Now I will advise you not to envy your Sister, we know how she is now, but cannot say how she may be hereafter, therefore leave her to Fortune and Providence; look upon yourself, my Dear, as one abandoned by Fortune, and consequently Friends: Consider yourself as a poor honest Girl only, and be reconciled to Poverty and humble Life; when you have Courage enough to do this, you remove the severest Sting of it; act and work with Faith and Integrity for those who give you Bread and Wages, by which Conduct you will certainly gain their Esteem; if Victuals are given you coarse and homely, such as you have not been accustomed to, lay them by, and pass a Meal or two, and you will then find them very delicate; study the Tempers of those who employ you, and please them virtuously; of Beauty you have a great Share, but remember, for one it has served it has ruined hundreds of your Sex; be always suspicious of those who offer you too much Kindness, for our Nature is such, we seldom confer Benefits but with a View to Interest

al or

or Design; Virtue is rarely put to a severe Trial in a Father or Mother's House; in your Condition you can expect no such friendly Aids, to defend you from Insults and Attempts; be therefore wary and your own Guardian, and crush the vicious Hopes of any designing Person upon you in its Infancy; continue your Application to God, as I heard you last Night; let your Heart and Conduct go Hand in Hand with your Promises to him; he never will leave you till you abandon him, but will give you Courage and Strength to resist the Wicked; the Pious and Just have always an inward Happiness that no Pitch of human Greatness can attain to, which is the real and indissoluble Wealth; one great Advantage you had, of never being petted by Father or Mother, if you had, the Frowns of others would be intolerable to you, and your happy Temper ruined by it; I don't say this to lessen your Esteem or Duty for your poor helpless Father, nourish and comfort him as much as you can, for I never knew Duty and Affection to Parents pass unrewarded, nor Disobedience in Children, without the severest Afflictions attending them to their Deaths; if you repine or murmur at Fortune, you then mistrust the Friendship of Almighty God, which I hope you will have more Gratitude than to do; fear not the World, my Dear, Virtue will combat all Distresses; I knew you from your Infancy, and loved you; your Father was a Friend to my good Man and me, therefore all the Succour and Comfort that can be had under this Roof, take as your own; you know we are not rich, but none more happy: This Invitation my Husband ordered me to give you, and I heartily join him in it; the first Request I make you is to be chearful, and accustom yourself to our living, till we consider of some other Course for you to take.

Emilia

Emilia heard her out with all the Attention her Heart could give, and told Mrs. *Jervis*, it was impossible to conceive the Joy and Comfort her Advice gave her, that she never would forget it, nor depart from it; that she dreaded not the World, but the Distress of her Father; thanked her for her Invitation, but requested she would give her such Work as she would to a Daughter, or the Servant, if she had one, and so instruct and prepare her to serve others. Mrs. *Jervis* answered, My Dear, I don't mean to keep you idle, I will find enough for you to do in this House, and our Oeconomy you may be as well acquainted with in one Day as in seven Years, and therefore proceed accordingly to take as much Care of your Father as the Place will admit, until we see you can do better; don't expect Compliments from my Husband or me, we use few courtly Words, but you will find us honest and sincere.

This Conversation being over, *Emilia* became sprightly and chearful, and gave her Hands and Heart to all the Drudgery and Work of the House. The first Sunday Morning of her being there, Mrs. *Jervis* desired her to prepare for Church; *Emilia* told her, it would be some Shock to her to be seen there by all those Neighbours, in her present Condition, who visited her Father's House. Mrs. *Jervis* answered with some Warmth, saying, What! are you ashamed of independent and honest Poverty? Was it any Vice of yours brought it upon you? If not, go then to the House of God, whose Doors only are open to receive the Unfortunate and Distressed; accept his Welcome, and when there, regard nothing you hear or see but what relates to him; all those you expect to see abandoned you when you had need of them; take Care of the Almighty's Friendship, who never will abandon in Adversity.

With

With great Concern the lovely *Emilia* told her, she never more would offend her, but always do as she would have her; and continued, saying, Madam, I have always led my Father, since his Disorder, to that Church, it is near our House, and he behaves well in it, I wish you would approve of my doing so To-day. By all Means, my Dear, replies Mrs. *Jervis*, and I am sure the Virtuous who behold you with him, will esteem you more by this glorious Example of filial Duty, than if you were possessed of a vast Fortune without this Merit; let your Dada and you sit with me, change your Seat with your Fortune; have no Trouble upon you when you pass by the Door of your former House; leave Things here in the best Order you can with Mr. *Jervis*, that he may receive us happily when we come home; get your Dada and yourself ready; to prevent your being stared at, let us go and come early, for the better Sort, as the World calls them, come late, and stay late in Church; dress in the plainest Things you have.

This Party soon set off, attended by Mr. *Jervis* a little way, to see them safe over a Stile, who told them at parting, with a hospitable Countenance, he hoped to acquit himself so well of his Cooking, as to merit their Thanks when they returned.

To a Person of Speculation to behold these three, and the Unkindness of Fortune to them, would be Matter of Subject for him to consider upon; Mr. *Finch*, once a rich, careful, and cautious Man, before fifty to become a Child in Understanding, and beggar'd; *Emilia Finch*, after her Brother's being unhappily drowned, every one judging her Fortune considerably increased, to prove the Cause of its Ruin; and Mrs. *Jervis*, who had more Disappointments than either: Persons thus circumstanced, by the common Voice are pronounced

ced unhappy, though they have guiltless Minds and healthy Bodies, which are certainly the most valuable Riches of this Life : As to Mr. *Finch* he was all calm, subject neither to Pleasure nor Pain, the other two filled with Content, which is real Happiness. These Things shew with what Uncertainty we can judge of others ; we know none but ourselves, and even that is doubtful ; if the Tranquillity of your Mind be disturbed by Anger, Revenge, Jealousy, Envy, Avarice, Ambition, and many other Passions that prey upon human Kind, or a diseased and infirm Body, few feel the Misery they occasion, even in the midst of Affluence, but yourself. That some of those Evils fall to the Share of most of us is certain, and consequently renders us more contemptible Objects than any of our small Party now going to Church, cheerfully, with Minds soaring above such Plagues of Life, under such mighty and solid Protection, as to bid Defiance to the World and all the Anxieties of it.

Reader, if you have been exempt from the aforementioned Afflictions, the Perusal of this will be dull and insipid to you, till you receive your Portion of Sorrow or Pain, which is certainly paid to Mankind in one Species or other ; then when your Mind, Body, or Fortune is wounded, think of this unnoticed Company, and let all your Passions and unjust Desires avaunt, which if they had been gratified, would be as fleeting as the Sports of Children, and leave a racked Conscience behind, and think like them of Friendship that has neither Fraud, Insincerity, nor no End of it, and will certainly comfort you in the most bitter Anguish.

To proceed : They got to the Church-yard before any others ; Mrs. *Jervis* led *Emilia* among the Graves, and gave her a short History of many
Persons

Persons Activity to acquire Wealth at any rate, whose Bodies lay quiet there. When the Parishioners began to flock, they took their Seats, and kept up to their good Intention during the Time of divine Service; when it was over, *Emilia* was delayed by the Care she took of her Father, which gave her Acquaintances an Opportunity to compliment her with Assurances that they wished her well: some were kind enough to invite her to stay a few Days with them, and so pressing as to ask Mrs. *Jervis*'s Interest to prevail upon her to go, which Mrs. *Jervis* positively refused; they asked her Reasons, to which she replied to a Number of Gentlemen and Ladies, (taking *Emilia* by the Arm and turning her about) Did ever any of you see, from Head to Foot, a more lovely Form, you all know her to be innocent and virtuously bred, and likewise knew her Distresses last Week, when not a Soul of you had the Humanity nor Charity to come to her Aid; her Beauty, Virtue, and Tears you all deserted, when she had not a House to shade her; she has been with me these six Days, and is grown rich in that Time, by learning to despise Fortune; if she goes to any of your Houses she may recover her Taste for good Living, which she was accustomed to, and has almost by this time happily forgot it; but if you have a mind to serve her, send her your Linen to make, she works well, and pay her for it as you would another; she is no more to be called Miss, but *Emilia Finch*, who works for Bread for herself and Father. One of the Gentlemen answered Mrs. *Jervis*, We are convinced Miss is all you say of her; I concluded she would go to her Brother-in-Law's, and I believe so did all this Company here: Then he addresses *Emilia*, and says, Will you be content to work for Hire? She answered she would, that she always loved it better than Play, but that she was
now

now obliged to work to take Care of him (pointing to her Father). I hope you are not very uneasy at the sudden Alteration of your Condition. Indeed, Sir, I am not, I have wholly resigned myself to the Will of Providence, and the Government of Mrs. *Jervis*. Where is your Mother, Child? says the Gentleman. I believe she is with my Sister, very happy. I hope you speak *French*, Miss. I do, Sir, replied she. The Gentleman then addresses Mrs. *Jervis*, and says, Let *Emilia* come to me, and take Care of my two Daughters, I will give her ten Pounds a Year, and pay you four Shillings a Week for her Father, while she stays with me; to this Mrs. *Jervis* says, you will hear from me To-morrow for your Answer.

On this Proposal they parted, and each took their different Ways home. Mr. *Jervis* saw them from a little Eminence near his House upon which he stood, from whence he hastily came to meet and welcome them, and enquir'd what News: Mrs. *Jervis* told him the Offers made by Mr. *Wells* for *Emilia*, and that when they were rested, they would first debate and consider what she was to do. At home they found every thing prepared for their Reception. Mrs. *Jervis* desired them to seat themselves, and first asked *Emilia*'s Opinion, what she determined to do as to Mr. *Wells*; I am impatient to know your Mind, because young People upon the Approach of every Change of their Lives, are greatly agitated by Hopes and Fears. You judge well, says *Emilia*, for what he said has had them Effects upon me; I am of Opinion I ought to accept of his Offers, it must be so at last, and may be not on such good Conditions, and farther from you; but in this and all other Affairs I entirely rely upon your Judgment. Mrs. *Jervis* replied, I agree with you, my Dear, to go into Mr. *Wells*'s Service, he is reputed a rich and ho-

honest Man ; as to his Wife and Family, I don't know much of them ; this Service may be the first Trial of your Grace ; I believe I told you before, that Servant Maids must have uncommon Virtue to defend them, and more especially so if tempting. Mr. *Jervis*, as one of the Council, spoke as follows ; My Dear, don't discourage *Emilia*, a Woman may be safe in a Camp, or any Place, except Violence be used ; I never knew a Girl ruin'd that did not contribute to it herself, and favour her Deceiver in his Attempts of base stolen Pleasures, and preferred them to the Loss of Fame, Honour, Virtue, Esteem, and every Good of Life ; it is a dreadful Exchange, but some will make it, and the old practised Arts are still the same ; as we flatter Children out of their most valuable Toys, so we address a Girl for Sacrifice by extravagant Praises of her Beauty, Person, Sense, Voice, and many other Excellencies, with a few other poisoned Insinuations, and then truly, if she has the least Gratitude to make us a Return, for the pretty Things were said and promised, we insist she will make herself a Victim for ever to us ; this is often the Case. On the other Hand, when we apply our well-timed Flattery, which few, as well as Women, can resist, and in the Beginning exceed plain and honest Dealing, we then are discouraged by the Object we address, and stedfastly continues to be so, we soon desist our infamous Designs, and often resolve upon Terms consistent with Honour, Virtue, and Interest.

Emilia addressed them both, saying, From my Infancy to this Time I have been bred to the Love of Virtue, and Hatred of Vice, and think I am confirmed in the former, but I must submit to the Judgment of the World my future Behaviour. I certainly set out with great Advantage, which is, I am sure of God's Protection and Kindness,

ness, for I have thrown myself entirely on his Care. Mrs. *Jervis* interrupted her, and said, This important Affair being settled, we'll dine and enjoy the Remainder of the Day.

After Dinner, this worthy Couple observ'd *Emilia* very melancholy and pensive, which made Mrs. *Jervis* ask what was the Matter with her; she instantly gushed into a Flood of Tears, and in broken Words told them, she was abandoned by her Mamma and Sister, but had the Pleasure of her Dada's Presence, which indeed greatly comforted her concerning their Ill-nature, the dressing and keeping him clean, and being any way about him, gives me Delight and Pleasure, which makes our Separation To-morrow the greatest Affliction I ever experienced; then she want I shall have of your Company, is the next heavy Addition to my Grief. Mrs. *Jervis* answered, As sure as Persons come together they must part, and I wish you may not for many Years have more Trouble than this ought to give you: By going to Mr. *Wells*, you provide for your Father and yourself, and while you stay there you can see him and us sometimes: Consider your Prospect now, and the Day you were turned out of House and Home, and heartily thank God for the happy Change; let no Sunshine of Fortune ever make you forget the Miseries of that Day, which will make you enjoy the better all the Blessings before you, and make new Misfortunes more sufferable to you; therefore go cheerfully and with Courage to your Appointment, use no longer the childish Words of Dada and Mamma, they may be musical and soft to them, but perhaps not so to Strangers from a Servant; I wish I had Fortune enough to keep you from Service, for nothing can afflict me more than parting with you, I really love you as I would my Child; your Father shall affectionately be taken

the

the same Care of by me as I saw you take of him ; weep no more, or you may soften me to Tender-ness that may be bad for us both ; here is a Being for you in all Distresses, provided you bring your Virtue with you. *Emilia* asked her would she go often to see her. *Mrs. Jervis* said she would not, that it was mean and indiscreet to visit Servants ; that Followers are justly looked upon by Masters and Mistresses with an evil Eye ; that as the Place was not above a Mile off, she might often get Leave to come to her.

Emilia by Degrees compos'd herself, and was pretty chearful that Night. Next Day about ten o'Clock *Miss Betty* and *Lydia Wells*, with their Mamma's Maid, came to *Mrs. Jervis's* in their Coach, and told *Emilia* they came for her, if she approved of their Dada's Proposal. She answer'd she did, and would wait upon them immediately, (for she had pack'd up her Things to be ready) so went to her Father and embrac'd him, and begged his Blessing upon her Knees, and did the same by *Mrs. Jervis*, who took her Turn of weeping.

Emilia having taken her Leave of all, set off with them in the Coach : They soon after arriv'd, and she was favourably introduced by *Mr. Wells* to his Spouse, who ask'd her what she could do. *Emilia* answer'd, Madam, I can do fine or coarse Needle-work, I can speak, write, and read *French*, and will endeavour to do every thing in my Power to please you. *Mrs. Wells* says, Upon my Word you promise very well, young Woman ; *Abby* (calling to her Maid) bring me one of your Master's Shirts, and the Piece of new Linen I gave you to put up. She brought them. What is your Name ? *Emilia*. That is too long, I'll shorten it and call you *Milly* ; Come here, *Milly*, see this is a Pattern Shirt for you, cut off that Piece as much as will make another ; before you proceed farther,

let me see a Specimen of your Work. *Milly* says, Madam, please to order somebody to shew me where I am to work. Mrs. *Wells* answers, in the young Ladies Chamber, where you are to lodge; you need not hurry yourself To-day about Work: *Abby* shew her the House, and let her know the Servants. *Abby* took her to all the Apartments of the House, and introduced her to the Butler, she also shewed her the other Servants in the Kitchen, and then *Milly* desired to go to her Work. *Abby* advised her, as a Friend, not to do too much, nor give her Lady a bad Habit in the Beginning, for that she would certainly keep her up to it; that she knew her very well, and would have the same Thanks in the End from her for doing little as a great deal; notwithstanding, *Milly* went to work. All the Servants who had seen her admired her Beauty. *Milly* sat close to work till called to dine with the Butler and Mrs. *Abby*. The Butler after Dinner opens a Bottle of Wine to compliment Mrs. *Milly*, and told her he had it on purpose to welcome her. *Milly* thanked him for his Kindness, but assured him she could drink none of it. He and Mrs. *Abby* were surprized at her want of Taste, but however drank her Health very often. She retired to her Work, and kept close at it till nine; then the young Ladies came to her and chatted awhile with her, one of them was at this time seventeen, the other eighteen Years old. *Milly*, by Innocence and Sweetness of her Disposition, was gaining fast upon their Affections, and they did her the Honour to sup with her this Night in their own Apartment.

As soon as Day-light appeared, the charming *Milly* arose, and after her hearty and fervent Prayers to God while all the Family slept, she went to work, and that Day finished the Shift perfectly well; she requested one of the young Ladies

dies to take it to her Mamma, and if she liked it to give her more to do. When Mrs. *Wells* got it she was surprized at the Dispatch, and said, without viewing it, one Hand could not finish it well in the Time; her Surprize was much greater when she inspected the Work, and found it exceed any thing of the Kind she ever got done; she sent for her, and asked her if any one had helped her; I had not, Madam, says *Milly*. You certainly work exceeding well, and surprisngly fast, says Mrs. *Wells*, to make it in the Time you have done, and bid her go on with the rest. *Milly* withdrew, but left a good Impression behind upon some Gentlemen and Ladies that were present, to whom Mrs. *Wells* shewed her Work; they all admired it, and requested she would employ her about something in the Parlour with them; she sent Miss *Betty* for her, to desire her to bring the Work and cut it out before her. *Milly* came as soon as sent for, and entered the Room with such a Lustre of Beauty as struck the Beholders. I will give a short Description of her Person: She exceeded the middle Size as to Stature, her Person formed well, beyond Conception, her Features exact and irresistably captivating, her Hair jet black, her Complexion fair, and beautiful as the fairest of her Sex. Mrs. *Wells* says to her, You must have some Secret in making Shirts so quickly and well, therefore I want to see you work here. The Company was sat round where *Milly* stood; she says, where shall I stand to cut them out, Madam? At this Table you may sit or stand, as you like. Mr. *Wells* told her there was a Gentleman in Company who could speak *French*, and would discourse her in it if she had a mind. As the Gentleman and you pleases, Sir, replied *Milly*. He then desired Mr. *Veneer* to speak *French* to her; they discoursed a good while in it, till she was

observed to courtly to him, and then Mrs. *Wells* and all the Company insisted to know the Conversation from *Milly*. Madam, says she, he asked me how old I was; I told him sixteen; he asked how long I had been a Servant; I told him, since Yesterday; he asked me how I liked my Place; I told him very well for the Time, but that it was too short to form a Judgment; he asked me, by what Means I learned to speak *French* so well; I told him, I was sent to board with a *Frenchman*, who had a Wife and Daughter, at the Age of seven Years, and continued till I was ten, conversing with few others except my Writing-master; the *Frenchman* taught me also Dancing, being a Master of it by Profession, and his Wife and Daughter instructed me in Needle-work; he asked me what Fortune I had; I told him, good Health, good Clothes, a Gold Watch, one Guinea, and ten Shillings; he asked, was there any Favour in his Power he could do for me; I told him there was, to request your Leave for me every *Sunday* to wait upon my Father to Church, and dine with him; he told me he would, for which I courtly'd to him. Mr. *Veneer* declared, she spoke as good *French* as if she had been born and bred at *Versailles*. The young Ladies had a little Smattering of *French*, and Mrs. *Wells* bid *Milly* endeavour to improve them in it, preferable to any other Business. Being desired to sit down, she did, and was spoke to continually by one or other of the Company, to whom she returned honest and satisfactory Answers. At last, she begged Leave to retire with her Work, which was granted, and was gaining her Master and Mistress's Esteem very fast, being frequently sent for to sit with her Mistress.

She

She finish'd the other Shirts with equal Dispatch and Goodness of Work as the first, and was always mending or making one Thing or other for the Family. Mrs. *Wells*, who was generally sick and peevish, had got a great Cold, which confined her three Weeks to her Room, and was despaired of: *Abby* attended her five or six Days, but on some Dislike she got *Milly*, whose Good-nature, Tenderness, and Manner of doing Things, with Vigilance by Night and Day to serve and relieve her, so captivated her Mistress, that she could scarcely permit her out of her Presence, and when she was upon the Recovery, *Milly* amused her very agreeably with the History of her own and Family's Misfortunes, her going to Mr. *Fervis's*, and all the good Advice she got there. The Mistress, in her Turn, amused *Milly* with long Narratives of the most material Incidents of her own Life, and particularly Mr. *Wells's* Love and Courtship. *Abby* used very often to pop in upon them, and occasion Silence till her Mistress would send her away on some Pretence or other. This is an Instance how Servants may gain Confidence, and the Good-will of Masters and Mistresses, by behaving with Good-nature and Integrity, which will certainly, early or late, in any Station, be taken Notice of by their Principals, and regarded accordingly; and very little more is requisite to accomplish this than common Sense and Honesty.

Milly about this time wanted to get some unfinished Work out of her Trunk, but could not find the Key, therefore went to enquire for it of the Butler and Mrs. *Abby*. The Butler was always very complaisant to her, drinking her Health in full Bumpers, and declaring he would do it in Water, and saying, though he was a Servant, he thanked God he had no Occasion to be so, that he had six hundred Pounds of his own. Mrs. *Abby*

smartly answered, Who makes any Enquiry about your Fortune, it is a Pity not to leave you both together, and instantly with jealous Fury went away. *Milly* immediately went to her Mistress, greatly confounded at *Abby's* Behaviour, who asked her what was the Matter? she, scorning Lies or Evasions, told her the simple Truth. I declare she is jealous, you must sit no more with them, and if she insults you, she shall stay no longer here: Did the Butler speak of Love to you? No indeed, Madam, I would have told you if he had, but he is very civil, and sends to enquire how my Father is for me. His speaking of his Fortune to you, says Mrs. *Wells*, is to prepare you for his Addresses, which if he should make, what will you do then? I will not receive them, says she, but I hope he has no such Intent. *Milly* found her Key and went to work.

I should before now have taken Notice, that Mrs. *Jervis* came to see *Milly*, but she was so engaged during her Mistress's Illness, that she could not stay ten Minutes with her. Mrs. *Wells* being tolerably recovered, desired *Milly* to bring her Diamond Necklace and Diamond Ring to her, that were in one of the little Boxes that was on the Toilet in the Room where she lay. *Milly* went, and returning, told her Mistress she could not find either. You surprize me, says she, for I am sure I left both there. She went herself, and having fruitlessly searched for them, sent for Mr. *Wells* in a great Hurry; when he came she told him she had been robbed of her Diamond Necklace and Ring. He asked her who she suspected; she told him she did not know, there was none about her but *Milly*, and sometimes *Abby* used to come in. Then no others could rob you, replied he. *Abby* and *Milly* were present, and both declared their Innocence as to this Fact. *Abby*, in
her

her own Justification, said, she had served her several Years, and that she never lost any thing before. Mr. *Wells* desired her to withdraw, and then spoke to *Milly* as follows, The Necklace and Ring cost me three hundred and seventy Pounds, I will not sit down tamely with the Loss; I find none had an Opportunity to do it but you; save your Liberty and Life in time, before I put the Law in Force against you, by a sincere Confession of what you have done with them; if you do, I give you my Word I will do you no other Injury than to pay you and discharge you. She replied, Sir, you may do as you please by me, I am innocent. Do you think, says he, *Abby* could take them unknown to you? I believe, and am almost sure she could not, for I always spoke to her when she came in, and saw what she did. Then it must certainly be yourself. I am innocent indeed, Sir, says she. I am sorry I cannot believe you, Girl, says he, for I wish you very well. He then called *Abby* and desired her Keys, and likewise *Milly's*, and went with Mrs. *Wells* and the two Maids to search their Trunks, and he obliged each of them to search the others in their Presence; in *Abby's* there was nothing but her own Things found; *Milly's* was rummaged, and in a green Silk Purse that had a Guinea and some Silver in it, was found the Diamond Ring, but not the Necklace.

Judge you of the Astonishment of the unhappy *Milly* upon this Conviction of her Guilt. Mr. *Wells* says to her, Are you not a most wicked and hardened Wretch to rob an indulgent Mistress, and after to deny it to me when I charged you with it? what have you now to say for yourself? Where is the Necklace? She answered, I confess there is Proof enough against me, to confirm you and my Mistress that I am guilty; but I am innocent,

cent, and would declare the same if I was to die for the Fact; I ask no Mercy from either of you, as I can make no Defence. O my God (throwing herself upon her Knees with Eyes and Hands up-lifted) look down upon me with Compassion, save me from Disgrace and Shame, and bring this Affair to Light.

She got up with uncommon Courage, and said, Now, Sir, give me up to the Law as soon as you please, I have no Right to murmur at your doing so; it would appear just to me to do so were I in your Case. I will charge you directly with a Constable, says he. Don't To-day, says Mrs. Wells, but if she does not confess the Necklace by To-morrow send her to Gaol. Indeed, Madam, I know nothing of it, says she, and therefore will never charge myself with so base a Thing. The unfortunate *Milly* was led Prisoner to a Room and locked up. Mrs. Wells declared to her Husband, she doubted very much whether the poor Creature was guilty or no; but he was positive, because she was the only one had an Opportunity, and the Ring found in her Trunk. *Abby* was called, and asked whether any Person came to see *Milly*. She answered, no body came but Mrs. *Jervis*, and that she saw them whispering very close. Pray, my Dear, says Mrs. Wells, is not Mrs. *Jervis* said to be a very honest, sensible Woman? I always thought so, replied he. We are all very honest till found out, says *Abby*, but it is my Opinion if you had her taken up you would get your Necklace. I will do it, says he, for I will not lose the Necklace. *Abby* was bid to withdraw, then they both consulted, and agreed to send for Mrs. *Jervis* before she was exposed, then perhaps she might confess; and likewise to tell *Milly* they would take her up, in hopes she might dread her Discovery, and begin herself first. They
went

went directly to her, and saw her getting off her Knees when they came in. Her Mistress spoke to her as follows, *Milly*, we are come once more to exhort you to confess what you have done with the Necklace. I know nothing of it, replies she. We must then take up Mrs. *Jervis*, says her Mistress, to whom you gave it when she came here to see you. Dear Madam, says she, for Heaven's Sake let Mrs. *Jervis* alone, she is an honest, charitable, and good Woman, let all your Vengeance fall upon my Head, I beg for her and not myself, be merciful and content with one Victim for the Injury done you, you shall be sure of me, for I will make no Defence; Oh! Madam, I never had a thorough Sense of Affliction or Pain, till you threatened Mrs. *Jervis*; Ruin and Desolation stalk close behind wherever I am, my Fortune suddenly destroyed at my Father's, Mrs. *Jervis* for succouring my baneful Face, to be imprisoned, and, soon after my coming here, my Master and Mistress robbed of their valuable Gems. Were I again blessed with Liberty, which I neither expect nor desire, I would abide where Ruins and Devastations only appeared in all their woful Scenes of Wretchedness, for I am contagious to the Rich and Happy, and would no more involve them in the Miseries that pursue me; if you take Mrs. *Jervis* up, secure my Father likewise, for he is as guilty; but alas! do I presume to dictate to the Fortunate; leave me to my Sorrows, I beseech you, or send me immediately to Gaol, or punish me here with Death! none will ever question you for the unhappy *Emilia Finch*, it is sinful or I would do it myself; my Lord my God does it for some Purpose unaccountable to us. Let us withdraw, says Mr. *Wells*, her Guilt has disordered her. I think not, says Mrs. *Wells*, and though I cannot give a good Reason for it, believe she is not

not guilty. Madam, says he, you never thought much of the Loss of my Substance, I therefore will think of it myself, and as sure as I live she and *Jervis* shall be secured in Gaol To-morrow. You may do as you please, but consider the Assizes begin the Day after To-morrow, and the poor Creature will make no Defence; if afterwards we should discover her innocent, what Sorrow will it give us all our Days. Come, Madam, replies he, none of your Reasoning will do with me, till I get the Necklace or three hundred Pounds for it, which I never expect. He ordered the Windows to be nailed down where *Milly* was confined, and two Fellows with Arms to watch the Outside, where she remained till Morning, and then, to her unspeakable Sorrow, had her Door opened and Mrs. *Jervis* handed in to her, who also passed a strict Examination, and secured to be sent to Gaol along with her.

Words are too feeble to represent the Transports of Grief upon this woful Meeting of these two, who loved each other as Parent and Child; they eagerly embraced one another; My dear Companion of my Sorrow, says Mrs. *Jervis*, bear your Wrongs, for I am sure they are such, with Courage and Fortitude; we are now hastening to the End of all our Trials and Miseries; I am now no great Sacrifice to Injustice, my Glass being almost run out; had this been my Fate forty Years ago, I would have escaped a great deal of Pain, Misery and Affliction; this Advantage, *Emilia*, you have; fear not all their Menaces; you often told me you loved me, if so, take Example by me in this great Extremity, and I will shew you how to despise Death, or even Wretchedness and Miseries; let the Guilty dread, and the Innocent have Comfort and Joy at the Approach of Death. *Emi-*

lia

lia replies, I have been the unhappy Cause of bringing you to all this; my own Sufferings I could endure, but to behold yours I cannot bear; and then distractedly calls out aloud, saying and clasping her Hands, My God, my God, relieve Mrs. *Jervis* this Instant, my Faith is in you; try me some other Way, I am racked by her Afflictions! God that instant favourably heard her; their Door was opened, and both led to the Parlour, where there was a Justice of the Peace, who came on Purpose to examine and commit them to Gaol. A common Smith, who was often troublesome to Mr. *Wells* by desiring to speak to him about frivolous Things, sent two Messages to desire to speak to him, but was refused, because Mr. *Wells* was busy. The Parlour was crouded upon this Occasion, which encouraged the Smith to brush in with all his Dirt and Blackness; as soon as he appeared, there was a private Order from Mr. *Wells* to turn him out, being sure he was drunk; he was collared, and stood a hardy Tussel with two or three, which interrupted the Magistrate, who was then writing their Committals; he insisted outrageously upon being heard, which for Peace sake was granted, and was desired to proceed: He told them, that about eight or ten Days before, Mrs. *Abby* told him she unfortunately lost one of her Mistress's Keys, but had another of equal Size and Wards, that she took the Dimensions of it on this Piece of Wax [shewing it] and desired me to make one as like it as I could, to prevent her getting Anger, which I did, and she paid me a Shilling for it. I heard of the Robbery committed upon you, and came to tell you this, knowing that little Things may bring great Matters to light.

Mr. *Wells* and all present seemed struck with Surprise; he asked Mrs. *Wells* did she lose any Key;

Key; she said she did not, that *Abby* had none of them. He desired the Key of *Milly's* Trunk, which was produced, and sunk in the Impression on the Wax exactly, which had been carefully preserved by the Smith in a Box. They all began to relent, and none among them so unmoved as Mrs. *Fervis* and *Milly*. The Butler soon after appeared, and begged Pardon for his Misconduct, and then produced the Necklace, telling them, he discovered it by Accident, that he was writing a Letter, and that *Abby* stole behind him and snatched the Letter from him, and put it into her Pocket, that he seized her, and forced it and the Necklace, to his great Surprise, out of her Pocket; that he asked her how she came by it, she told him, it was to bring *Milly* into Disgrace only, as she ingrossed all her Mistress's Favour, he told her she wanted to hang her, and insisted she should replace it and the Ring, for she had told him the Affair of the Ring; she said she could not get an Opportunity, and begged of me to speak to *Milly*, to tell what a Trick she had play'd her by putting the Ring in her Purse; she also gave me the Necklace to give *Milly*, but being sent by you to *London*, could not return till this Day; when I came home I was met by *Abby*, who told me all that passed here, and farther said, if I appeared against her she would be sent to Gaol and ruined for ever; I assured her I would, and that instantly, and clear the Innocent as far as in me lay.

They were all astonished at this Discovery. Mr. *Wells* desired to have *Abby* brought forth, but she was not to be found; he then told the Butler he ought to have behaved better in the Affair, and to discover it earlier, which would have prevented the Treatment he gave *Milly* and Mrs. *Fervis*, to whom he would make some Amends, but

but was determined to give them and himself the Satisfaction to prosecute the vile Jade to the utmost Rigour of the Law. To this Part *Milly*, replied, Sir, I have heard you and my Mistress say, you had some Esteem for me, now, if there be any Remembrance of it, I beseech you both to forgive her, we all are in need of Mercy; her Guilt is fallen upon her own Head, her Conscience will be her Punishment while she lives, and leave her to it, for which I will be your dutiful and faithful Servant while you please; you mentioned some Amends to me, I beg no other but the granting this Request, and being reinstated in both your Opinions as I was before this Affair happened. These Words she expressed with Sincerity, and with all the Force of Beauty's affecting Power upon her charmed Hearers. Mr. *Wells* said, Would you have me take her again into my Service? By no means, replies *Milly*, others may do what she has done, judging she may be charged with it; nor could she ever enjoy Tranquillity here, which was the Scene of her Wickedness; let her go where she pleases with what belongs to her. I will consider of it, says Mr. *Wells*, and then addresses himself to Mrs. *Fervis*, I have wronged you, for which I heartily beg your Pardon; there are twenty Acres of my Estate lies near your Husband's House, that I give to Mr. *Finch*, the Father of *Milly*, while he lives, and to your Husband and you after his Death, while you both live, at half Rent, as two indifferent Persons will appraise it, or ten Acres of it clear from any Rent, chuse which you like best, this I will fulfil when you please, upon the Word of a Gentleman. Mrs. *Fervis* replied, I will accept of your extraordinary Bounty for many Reasons; it is humanely and charitably given; you can, I thank God, afford it, and I am sure it was the Almighty's invisi-

sible

sible Hand has brought it to pass, and made you the Instrument of his Goodness, by directing the Steps of this Girl with her Father, in their Distress, to my Cottage, and the Notice you took of her at Church, and the Invitation you kindly gave her to your Service, where she was no sooner seemingly fixed, but she was secured for robbing you, and I accused and taken up as concerned with her, and having it all so wonderfully unravelled, and the Guilt pointed out where it should be, has not only saved us from eternal Shame, Ruin, and Disgrace, but moved your Bounty to such a Degree, as to succour three of us for Life, one of whom is distempered in Mind, and my Husband and I in low Circumstances, which proceeds from no Vice of ours, but by a natural Decay of Vigour and Strength, by many Years severe wearing, which makes our Industry not so fruitful as it used to be. Mrs. Wells says, I will insist, Mrs. Fervis, upon a Visit of yours every Week. Madam, I will always obey you. Milly says to her Mistress, Madam, be pleased to give me something to do, I long to go to work. My poor Milly, I will think of something for you to do presently; I never thought you guilty, Child.

The young Ladies who were taken abroad the Morning before by an Aunt, returned, and were greatly surprized at all that passed in the Family in their Absence, but rejoiced greatly at their Favourite Milly's Deliverance, and declared, if they had been at home when she was deprived of Liberty, they would have prevented it or be confined with her; and privately reproached their Dada's Cruelty to her, but applauded his Goodness to her Father, which she gratefully told them, and reported it every where. Mrs. Fervis went home

fully

fully satisfied with the good Fortune she had that Day.

Milly was more beloved and admired than ever by all the Family, especially her Mistress, on account of her Resignation as to herself, Gratitude to Mrs. *Jervis* when in Trouble, and the Beauty of her heavenly Disposition when cleared, becoming a powerful Advocate for *Abby*, who intended no less than her entire Destruction; in short, tho' a Servant, she became the Idol of all in the House in the course of a few Months; every matter of Consequence, where Integrity or Judgment was requisite, must pass through her Hands and Inspection; such was the Faith her Master and Mistress had of her good Sense at seventeen Years of Age, that they put an entire Confidence in her, and such was the Force and Charms of her Virtues to captivate every one without Distinction, who had the least Dealing or Conversation with her.

She was hitherto indulged every *Sunday* to wait upon her Father, but found the more she was beloved the more uneasy her Mistress was at her going. At last she told *Milly*, it was cruel to leave her, when she knew she was not well a Minute without her, declared she dreaded *Sunday* on account of her Absence, and hoped she would have more Mercy for the future than to be extorting Leave from her; adding, the Dominion you have got over me I believe is without Precedent, you have certainly bewitched me; for the future, when you go to see your Father, take me in the Coach with you. Madam, replies *Milly*, I hope I have too just a Sense of my Duty to abuse any Esteem the Person has who keeps my Father and me, by taking the least Liberty that would give you a Moment's Uneasiness; believe me, Madam, the Gratitude of my Soul is such for you, that I will never wilfully disoblige you: To see my Father is

of no Service to him, I know he is well taken Care of; it is a Pleasure to me to see him, but every Pleasure of mine shall ever be subject to yours. We'll both go very often, replies Mrs. *Wells*, and I must get a Girl for the young Ladies, for I cannot leave you with them. And notwithstanding all this Influence and Affection, she continued as humble as the first Day.

The Butler was at this time resolved to address *Milly*, and accordingly was frequently praising her Eyes, Face, Complexion, Shape, Sense, &c. and giving her Hints of his Services, particularly in appearing against *Abby* to acquit her, which he would not do for any other Person in the World, and at last humbly offered himself for a Husband. As to what you have said of my Person, replies *Milly*, I believe it is true; as to my Sense, that has not had time, as yet, to be judged of; the Service you did me was acting like an honest Man, your Declaration that you would not do so for another shews you to be a Villain, and what you did proceeded from your Partiality in favour of my Person, and not from a Principle of Morality or Conscience; as to your Proposal, I quite dislike it: The Care of my Master's Business often obliges me to converse you, which makes me now warn you never more to speak to me of Love: if you do, I will apply to him and my Mistress against you: Now, Sir, said she, let us proceed to Business; here is an Account of Wine I am order'd to settle with you. The Butler begged ten thousand Pardons, and promised never more to offend her.

Part of this Discourse was heard by Miss *Betty*, who acquainted her Mamma. When *Milly* had settled the Account, at which she was very excellent, she made a Report of it to her Master in the Presence of her Mistress, who asked her what the Butler

Butler said to her, that provoked her to call him Villain. She was then obliged to tell them all that passed between the Butler and her, which made them laugh very heartily, however they seriously assured her, if he ever was troublesome to her again he should be discharged on her acquainting them.

In this sort of happy Tranquillity did this worthy Family proceed, till clouded and interrupted by a Letter they received relating to their Darling and only Son, then a Student at *Oxford*, and is as follows:

To Mr. Wells.

S I R,

YOUR Son, whom you ordered under my Care, and paid me for having my Eyes upon his Conduct in this Town, was blameless till within this Month past, in which time he has unhappily been paying his Addresses to a Girl not worth Sixpence. At first I made light of it, but am now thoroughly convinced it is a serious Affair, and worthy of all your Care to prevent his being married to her. I am now his Confident and Agent in it, and by one Stratagem or other have prevented their being married. Haste and save him, or he is undone. Join your Authority to my Schemes; take him away, and conceal your Intelligence when you come to *Oxford*, for I will not see you, which will incline him to continue me in his Confidence, and enable me to serve you by marring his unhappy Purposes. Set up at the *Lyon Inn*, which is kept by her Father, and your Servants may know all there from the Wench of the House.

Sir, Yours, &c.

Thomas Wilders.

You may well imagine the dreadful Alarm this Letter must give, to Parents whose greatest Ambition was to place their Son in a high and respectable Station. Mr. *Wells* had upwards of three thousand Pounds a Year to settle upon him, clear of all Incumbrances, and ready Money enough to portion his Daughters. This was the first severe Wound their Happiness ever received. As they never concealed any thing from *Milly*, they both judged her Council and Confidence would be requisite in this Affair, which would not admit of the least Delay. In the greatest Hurry and Agitation of Spirits they called her, and gave her the Letter, when she had read it, her Mistress said to her, My dear *Milly*, if we don't prevent this, we never more can expect an Hour's Comfort; advise us in this extraordinary Affair. To this she replied, Madam, it grieves my very Soul to see you afflicted, and would chearfully sacrifice my Life to serve you, but in this Case I will not presume to advise you; I am a Novice in Love, but what I have for my Friends and Relations: Were I to offer my Opinion, it is to pursue the Advice given in the Letter, and take him from thence as soon as possible. Which of us would you advise to go for him? says her Mistress. Which of you does he love best? replied she. He loved me best of all the World till I got this new Rival, says her Mistress. I think you ought to go for him then, replies she. You are right, says Mr. *Wells*, and I insist upon your going off in less than an Hour. *Milly* get yourself ready, dress well, you must go with me, says her Mistress; bid the Coachman, Postillion, and other Servants get ready immediately. She did as she was ordered, and retired to dress, but soon returned, and was indeed a dangerous Object to behold. Dress, which often eclipses the Beauty of other Ladies, and makes them

them appear with a poorer Share than they really have, heightened and made hers more glorious and awful; but not in the least forgetting her Duty, she brought in one lovely Hand a warm Cap, and in the other a Pair of Hare Skin Stockings, and said to her Master, Sir, I will place these on the Table in your Chamber, to be ready for you when you please. He thanked her for her Care of his Health, but said he did not regard it if he lost his Son.

In vain did she endeavour to comfort this disconsolate Pair, by telling them that she hoped an End would be put to their Trouble when he was brought home; that Sorrow was always too early, and not to anticipate it; that we should bear all our Afflictions with Courage, which would shew a Greatness of Soul, and a divine Resignation to the Will of God, who orders all things for the best, according to his own wise Purposes; and that a thorough Confidence and Faith in him are infallible Defences against our severest Trials.

Reader, if you have a Parent, rest here a little, and imagine you see the Father and Mother's Anxiety about their Son, whose Conduct tended to disappoint all their Hopes, who had been amassing up Wealth only for him, and would think Kingdoms too little, if they had them; he, regardless of the Stabs and Torments he gives to their Repose, wantonly pursues his own ruinous Passions, which hurry him on from one Species of Disobedience to another; thoughtless, thus for a while he pursues his Folly, till stopped in his Course by some dreadful Blow to awaken him, such as long and painful Sickness, Disobedience of his own Children, the Treachery of his nearest and dearest Friends, or other shocking Afflictions, which daily Experience proves to be the Portion of disobedient Children. On the other hand, few

can give a single Instance of a dutiful Child being unhappy. If the former be your Case, endeavour earnestly to have your Parents reconciled to you; if they are dead, and that you pierced their Hearts by the unkind Returns you made for their Care and Tenderness, and with Sorrow hastened them to the Grave, look up for Mercy, your Case is a Species of Murder; if your Judgment inclines you to Duty and Love to your Parents, stedfastly pursue it, and if you live seventy Years after their Disappearance, the unspeakable Comfort of doing so will abide in your Heart.

The Coach being ready Mrs. *Wells* and *Milly* took their Seats and drove off. In travelling, they determined when they came to *Oxford* to keep the Girl the young Gentleman loved as much with them as possible, to prevent any bad Consequence happening the Night they intended to stay, and to make a Pretence of taking him away for fear he should take the Fever which raged there at that time, and that his Father insisted upon his going home till it was abated.

They lay together one Night on the Road, and when they came to *Oxford* set up as directed. The Servants were ordered not to say who they belonged to till they heard farther. Mrs. *Wells* went to her Room, and having ordered Supper, told the Landlord she would be obliged to him to let his Wife sit with them, that as they were but two they would be dull. The Landlord replied, Madam, my Wife has a great deal of Business to take care of, but I have a Daughter that frequently attends the Company of the Gentlemen and Ladies who do me the Honour to make this their House, she can tell you the News of this Town and Country better than her Mother; if you please she shall wait upon you. Sir, I will be obliged to you, says Mrs. *Wells*. Immediately after the Daughter

Daughter appeared full dressed, as if to receive Company : Her Person was very well, but her Manners seemed to have too much Assurance, to those with whom she now was, who minded every Word she said, as being the Cause of their coming that Journey.

She amused them with all the News and Scandal of the Place ; Descriptions of the recruiting and other Officers of the Army, and their Intrigues, were her beloved Subjects ; such as, Captain such a one is a charming Fellow, he challenged Mr. D---- to fight him for ordering in this House a Fowl for himself, which was bespoke by the Captain. Ensign such a one, to see him dressed in his Regimentals would do your Heart good, he is so young and handsome, I am sure whoever gets him will be very happy. I'll shew you, added she, these two Officers out of the Window, they are commonly walking the Streets unless engaged with the Ladies. Mrs. Wells desired her to call her Father, as soon as she went, she says to Milly, the Lord deliver my Child from her, but I must dissemble. When the Landlord came, she acknowledged herself greatly obliged to him for his Daughter's Company, and requested he would permit her to lie in the same Room with them that Night. The Landlord replied, she shall wait upon you this Month, if you stay so long. She thanked him, and desired him to hasten Supper and bid her Coachman come to her. When the Coachman came, she asked him did they know her Name there yet. I believe not, Madam, says he, for I have been with all the Servants since we came, and heard no Enquiry made. Let none of them conceal my Name if they are asked : You know where to find your young Master, go for him, tell him I am here, and bid the young Gentlewoman come up to us again. The Coachman

sent Miss up to his Mistress, who expressed a good deal of Uneasiness at her long stay, and told her the Promise her Father made them, to let her lie that Night in their Apartment, assuring her, she was so entertaining they would think themselves unhappy without her. This Compliment pleased her greatly; she apologized for her Delay, saying, the Ensign seized her by the Hand, and would not let her go till she drank a Glass or two of Wine with him. That we may not be incommoded after Supper, says Mrs. *Wells*, let every Thing be got in readiness for your Lodging as soon as possible. She immediately got a moveable Bed with its Appurtenances and fixed them in the Room.

The Coachman returned, and informed his Mistress that the young Gentleman was gone out with Mr. *Wilders*, but that he left word to send him when he came home. He was ordered to go back and wait at his Chambers till he came. Mrs. *Wells* said, she did not like her Son's keeping Company with *Wilders*. Is your Son in this Town? says Miss of the Inn. Being informed that he was; I know a great many of the Scholars, says she, and perhaps he may be one of them. Then telling her his Name was *John Wells*, she said she knew him very well. All her Art could not conceal her Surprise to find herself in Company with his Mother, and, as she thought, so greatly esteemed by her.

Mr. *Wells* came shortly after, a handsome Youth about nineteen Years old. His Mamma and he tenderly embracing each other, she told him he was very unkind not to desire to go home for so many Months past, but on the contrary to request his Father by Letters to let him stay and mind his Studies, who, upon hearing of the dangerous Fever of which so many die here, is quite uneasy

uneasy to see you ; I therefore desire you to prepare yourself, my Dear, and come home with me for a Week or ten Days : She then said, I must introduce you to this young Gentlewoman whom we have taken into our Family, and have the greatest Esteem for, meaning *Milly*. He was confounded how to behave, but says to her, Madam, it will be the greatest Disadvantage to me to go home at this time, as I am reading so hard for a Scholarship. You may read while you stay at home, and take your Tutor or any other Company with you that you please. He replied, if you give me Liberty to invite Ensign *Williams*, in whose Company I have great Pleasure, and my Tutor, I will go ; to which she consenting, he desired Leave to let them know of it, that they might be prepared, and to introduce them to Supper. By all means, says his Mamma. He withdrew to give them Notice. This was the Ensign the pretty Miss of the Inn spoke so affectionately of. He soon returned with his favourite Companions, and presented them to the Ladies. This was somewhat artful of him, being jealous of the Ensign and Miss of the Inn, which was the Reason he invited him, as will more fully appear hereafter.

Mrs. *Wells* asked her Son if he had made any great Progress in his *French*, if he had, that the young Gentlewoman, meaning *Milly*, could discourse very well in it. To which he replied, he had but a very imperfect Knowledge of it, but would, while he stay'd in the Country, endeavour to improve himself by her. *Milly* courteously replied, if he wanted Instruction she would give him all in her Power.

Miss of the Inn was the only Person not cheerful of this Company. Mrs. *Wells* and *Milly*, who had their Eyes upon her, observed that she often
went

went out, and would be surely followed by both her Lovers, either to speak to her or watch one another; since she came to maturity she never had less Opportunity for Privacy than this Night, nor never seemed to want it more, as her most favourite Admirers were present, and likewise to set out in the Morning for the Country, to make some stay.

About twelve they all retired except the Ladies, who continued in their Apartment. After their Departure, a Word could scarce be got from Miss of the Inn.

Next Day the Company set out, and the second Evening arrived safe, to the great Joy of Mr. *Wells*, who most affectionately embraced his Son, and received his Friends with the greatest Hospitality. In a few Days they received the Compliments of the Neighbourhood, who made them continual Visits, or received theirs. All the Mirth, Pleasure, or Amusement that occurred, could not divert the Anxiety of Master *Wells*, who was melancholy and languid, which gave his Parents great Uneasiness. It was concerted between them and *Milly*, not to let him even suspect they knew the Cause of his Disquietude, till it came to the last Extremity, as it would make him the less cautious of them in his Correspondence. He took an Opportunity of telling his Father, that the constant round of Company they were always engaged in, prevented his Study, and begged Leave to return to *Oxford*. His Father replied, *Jack*, I have had very little of your Company these two Years, which was a long and painful Absence, for I love you dearly, and can give you many Demonstrations of it; all the Return in your Power to make is Duty; as I do not assume Authority, be not ungrateful, but stay here till I think proper to send you back; suppose you don't read books
for

for two or three Months, read Men in that time, which you will find as necessary, and do not let me extort a Compliance, but do it voluntary. To this *Jack* made no Answer, but seemed dejected. They received a Letter from Mr. *Widders*, which run as follows :

S I R,

YOUR Son was told his Mother came to this Town by one of the Students, who knew her; he instantly after sent for me, and said with great Concern his Mother was come to Town, and was sure it was for him she came, but determined not to go and leave his Angel, as he called her, exposed to the teasing of Mr. *Williams*. I then expostulated with him, how dangerous it was to provoke you, who had acquired most of your fortune yourself, and could leave it to whom you pleased: I then advised him to proceed with all the Caution he could to keep it secret from you. He then positively told me, notwithstanding any Consequence, if Ensign *Williams* did not go with him he would not stir from hence. When he left his Mother at the Inn, and came to invite Mr. *Williams*, I saw him greatly pleased with the Liberty she gave him, to invite any Company he liked home with him; I am sure I would be one of his Guests, had I not the Charge of his Love Affair upon me, to manage intirely in his Absence; he has given me Directions to tell her, he will meet her at any Time and Place she appoints and marry her. Nothing prevents it so much as her having a greater Inclination for the Ensign than for him, who seems to have no thought of marrying her, which she suspects, and I fear will make her consent to marry your Son. Keep the Ensign as long as you can, if you intend to keep your Son at home; when
he

he leaves you, your Son for fear of him will run away from you to this Town. He has told me, the young Lady who came with his Mother was one of the most beautiful Girls he ever saw. Your Son is certainly amorous, and may give you something to take care of at home, while your humble Servant is busy for you here. I am,

Sc.

This Letter gave them prodigious Uneasiness; they called *Milly* and gave it to her to read, saying, there was a Compliment in it for her. When she perused it, she remarked there was the greatest Danger of their Son, without the most extraordinary Care. *Milly*, says Mrs. *Wells*, did he say any kind Thing to you? He did not, I assure you, if he does I will immediately let you know it: He indeed speaks a good deal of *French* to me, and compliments me by saying I am Mistress of it. He asked me if I ever was in Love; I assured him I was not; he replied, I was happy to be a Stranger to the Uneasiness it occasioned. I was afraid he had a mind to make me a Confidant in his Love Affair at *Oxford*, for he told me he had a Secret of the greatest Importance to communicate to me, that his Peace and Quiet of Mind depended upon it; that he knew the Influence I had on you both. I interrupted him for fear he should proceed, by saying, it was a Shame for one so young as he, in the midst of Affluence, to be acquainted with Troubles of the Mind; that if he had any, he ought to impart them to you, as none would be so sincere, if for his Welfare, to ease him; if, on the other hand, they were against his Interest, as sure as he told me I would inform you; that if I had an Interest with either of you, I got it by faithfully doing my Duty as your

Servant,

Servant, which Course I was resolved to pursue while I had the Pleasure of living with you.

At the End of this Discourse I was called to read this Letter, which alarms me greatly. Dear *Milly*, says Mrs. *Wells*, if you don't help us in this Affair he will be undone. Rely upon me that every thing in my Power, consistent with Virtue, shall be done to serve you. What shall we do with him? says Mrs. *Wells*. *Milly* replies, watch and amuse him, till something offers to break it off, and keep a Correspondence with Mr. *Wilders*. This Advice gave but little Hopes to the disconsolate Parents. The young People of the Family diverted themselves in their usual manner, except Master *Jack*, whose Melancholy seem'd to increase, and chose to speak to *Milly* rather than to any other. In a few Days Mr. *Wells* receives a Letter from Mr. *Wilders*, the Contents of it are as follow;

S I R,

Oxford.

I WAS sent for last Night by Miss *Judger* (the Girl's Name your Son loves) to shew me a Letter wrote to her by Master *Jack*, which runs thus;

“ My adorable *Ally*,

“ The passionate Lover only can judge of my
 “ Distress, who is detained by the Tyranny of a
 “ Father's Love, from the only Object in the
 “ World delightful to him; such is my Case, but
 “ I will bear it no longer than till I have your In-
 “ vitation to wait upon you, then will I offer you
 “ my Person and Service for ever. I must inform
 “ you something new about Mr. *Williams*, he is
 “ addressing my Sister *Lydia*, and if he can be
 “ believed is most passionately in Love with her,
 “ which is not disagreeable to her. If you delay
 “ answering

“ answering this by the Return of the Post, it will
 “ be the greatest Torture to your impatient Wor-
 “ shipper and sincere Lover,

John Wells.

“ P. S. Shew this to Mr. *Wilders*, and I re-
 “ quest he may write for me to go to *Oxford*, that
 “ I can be dispensed with no longer to stay at
 “ home.”

This Letter confounded them, to find their Son intended to go, by some means or other, when sent for, to his Destruction; and their Daughter, for whom they intended ten thousand pounds, to be courted by Ensign *Williams*, was a Consequence of their Son's bad Conduct, which brought him to their House.

When this Letter came, the young Gentlemen were all abroad at a Hunting Match. *Milly* was consulted, and advised them to secure him, if any such Letter was sent to him; to intercept all his Letters, otherwise he would find some Opportunity to elope; that if his Sister was courted by Mr. *Williams*, he ought to be carefully watched, but proceed to no Extremities till they heard more; that she would make it her Business to observe Mr. *Williams* and Miss *Lydia*, and upon her Report of them to proceed accordingly; and if any new Discovery was made of his bad Conduct in this Affair, to keep it no longer a Secret, but let all the Servants in the House know it, and make them his Guards.

Mr. *Wells* seemed, upon this new Scheme, to be a little more composed, and resolved rigidly to use the Authority of a Father upon the first Occasion. While *Milly* was consulting upon this Affair, she

saw

saw from a Window four Servants hastily running with an armed chair; she was surprized at the Meaning of it, and ran to know the Cause; when she was informed, she returned, and says, don't be surprized nor afraid at what I have to say to you, Master *Jack*, by a Fall from his Horse, is hurted, but not dangerously. The Father replied, I would rather his Neck was broke than he should proceed as he intended. The tender Heart of his Mother was dreadfully alarmed, and more so, when immediately after she beheld a vast Concourse of People bringing him home in the Chair. She made the House ring with her Cries, and ran distractedly to meet him. They soon entered the House and laid him in Bed. The most famed Surgeons were sent for; before they saw him, *Milly* spoke to Mr. and Mrs. *Wells*, saying, engage the Surgeons, whatever Opinion they may have of him, to report his Wounds are mortal, to all but you, it may occasion some favourable Change in his Love Affairs, and will be a good Pretence to confine him as long as there will be Occasion; I believe he is in no sort of Danger from the Accident that happened him To-day; let the Doctors know all your Reasons, and they will be the more hearty to serve you.

When his Father and Mother saw him, and thought he was in no Danger, both approved of her Scheme, and determined to execute it, and accordingly secured the Interest of two Surgeons who came to attend him, to declare publicly their Opinion, that the Hurt would be mortal to him, but in private made his Parents easy; he really had a Rib broke, and was excessively bruised and very sore. To help the Scheme, it was directed by the Surgeons that no body should speak to him but those who attended him, and they as little as possible; they likewise promised Mr. *Wells* they would

would emaciate him, but with great Safety and Good to his Constitution, by a low and sparing Diet, that he should not think much of Love for some Months.

This Night *Milly*, by Mr. *Wells's* Orders, wrote to *Oxford*, to his Friends there, a piteous Account of poor Master *Jack's* Accident, and the Sentence pronounced upon it by the Surgeons, requiring his Accounts that they might be paid, and Care taken of what Things he left there. Mr. *Williams* wrote to several of his Acquaintance, that he believed he would not live to see another Day. Master *Jack's* Nurses were Mrs. *Wells* and *Milly*, no others would be permitted to approach him. His Tutor went off the next Day, and was told the Instant he was taking Horse he was dead, which he confirmed to all his Acquaintance, when he got to *Oxford*. Mr. *Williams* did not hear what was said to the Tutor, as to Master *Jack's* Death, but made a Pretence of staying to see what would become of him. This was, with the Family, another Proof he had some Design on Miss *Lydia*, but it was soon confirmed to them by the following Conversation he had with *Milly* that Morning in private, which he requested. He addresses her thus, Miss *Milly*, I am the eldest Son of a Gentleman, worth by real Estate above two thousand Pounds a Year; my Father allows me at present four hundred Pounds a Year, I am not prodigal, I make it do, and do not owe a Shilling; I came here by the Invitation of the Lady of this House and poor *Jack*; the kind and extraordinary good Usage I received from this worthy Family, prepared my Heart in favour of them, and the Love Impressions which Miss *Lydia* has deeply made in me; my only Advocate, her Brother, is now lost to me; I am sensible I infringe upon the Rules of Hospitality, that is, instead of a Visit,

it looks as if I intended to live here entirely; Love has not always Discretion. I have heard the History of your early Misfortunes, and they affected me. Let me have your Interest with Miss *Lydia*, and find some plausible Pretence for me to stay longer, and I will give you my Bond for five hundred Pounds; in the mean time accept of this Purse of an hundred Guineas, as an Earnest of my future good Intentions. *Lydia* has told me, she would hear no more of Love till I applied to her Papa and Mamma.

Milly with a Frown refused the Purse, and said, Sir, if you be the eldest Son of such a Man, you committed a greater Breach of Hospitality than you mentioned by your Disguise, and secretly addressing, like a Fortune-hunter, a young Lady under the Protection of a Father and Mother, in whose House at the same time you are entertained with unbounded Kindness; Ingratitude of this sort has been, in good measure, the Destruction of Hospitality: If you be what you say, why do you hesitate, but apply yourself to her Parents? I must now, Sir, ask you one Question, Pray what have you seen in my Conduct, to imagine I would receive a Bribe to betray the worthy Family in which I am placed? Don't, Sir, expect me to be your Advocate with her, except it be approved of by her Parents, who, I can assure, have already a bad Impression of you, on account of an Intrigue you are at this time carrying on with an Innkeeper's Daughter at *Oxford*.

I beg your Pardon, *Milly*, says Mr. *Williams*, for the Offers I made you, but I will satisfy Mr. *Wells* I am what I represented myself to be: As to my Amour at *Oxford* I am sorry he has heard, but I will end it for ever by Letters this Night: I request you will not speak to any body for a few Days of what I have been saying to you. *Milly*

E

replied,

replied, I assure you I will never keep a Secret of the like kind from her Parents a Minute, let them act according to their Judgment afterwards, and immediately went and told them every Word. They were greatly pleased to hear that Miss *Lydia* refused to receive his Addresses any more till he applied to them; they dreaded the Consequence of *Milly's* telling Mr. *Williams* of his Affair with Miss *Judger*, and desired to know her Reason; she replied, I expect when she finds herself deserted by Mr. *Williams*, she will, as she is very forward, dispose of herself to the first who asks her; there can be no bad Consequence to us, as we have Master *Jack* secured as a Patient, and will keep him so by the Doctors Prescriptions, while there is Danger of his Mind or Body. This made them laugh, for they were pleased with every thing she said and did.

Mrs. *Wells* asked her, what they should do as to Mr. *Williams*; she advised to send for Miss *Lydia*, and notify their Approbation of her Conduct as to Mr. *Williams*, and learn from her the Particulars of what he proposed; then, after her Examination, if they could think seriously of the Affair, Mr. *Williams* ought to withdraw, and Miss *Lydia* to go to her Aunt, till they were confirmed in the Certainty of all he said of himself; and during this short Separation to have no sort of Correspondence with each other. This Method they approved of, and asked her who they should send with her; *Milly* replied, her Sister and Mrs. *Jervis*, a Woman of good Example and incorruptible Virtue; if you send her, I would let Mr. *Williams* know she should stay no longer there than his Affairs were doubtful. To help your Enquiry, I would send Mr. *Jervis* to see where this Fortune lay, and in whose Possession it is, and to know the Heir to it; in the mean time, I request one of your
Maids

Maids should take care of their House and my Father.

They extravagantly applauded *Milly's* Conduct and Council, and declared she gave them more Comfort than all the World besides. *Milly* replied, to be approved of by you, fills my grateful Heart with Joy ; I think it time now to go see my Patient, and went away. She was met by Mr. *Williams*, who asked her, did she tell Mr. *Wells* what he said to her ; she answered, she did every Word. What would you have me do now, *Milly* ? She replied, if you are a Man of Honour and Truth, go to him directly and open your Mind to him sincerely ; if, on the other hand, you are an Impostor, take your Horse and ride off immediately. I will speak to Mr. *Wells* To-day, says he.

Milly went to her Patient, who began to be tired of his Confinement, and would not believe he was so ill as the Surgeons represented. She kept him to such a Regimen as was ordered for him, and insisted on his keeping up to Rule, or she would attend him no longer. This Menace had some Effect upon him, and he said, my dear *Milly*, I am not pleased to see any body about me but you, and if you desert me I shall surely die before I leave this Room. I will not, says *Milly*, if you submit to the Physicians Orders. I will, says he, but there is one Thing you must do for me, that is, get my Letters from the Post Office, which I ordered to be kept there till this Seal be shewn as a Token from me. The Doctors, says *Milly*, have particularly forbid your looking at Paper or reading, and I will not assist in what may tend to your Detriment, so put them out of your Head till you are quite recovered. Don't speak of them, says he, to my Papa, or Mamma. I will not, said she,

if you don't leave your Room till you are perfectly recovered, which he solemnly promised.

Mr. *Williams* took an Opportunity of speaking to Mr. and Mrs. *Wells*, by declaring the Esteem and Love he had for Miss *Lydia*, and repeated all he said before to *Milly*; and in the Conclusion hoped his addressing her would not be disagreeable to them. Mr. *Wells* answered, as to his Person and Education, he thought them very well, as to any thing else he was not sure of, but believed as he was a Gentleman he told Truth and meant honourably; that he would immediately enquire as to his Fortune, and until that was cleared up, to suspend any farther Courtship, but that, in the mean time, he was welcome to his House; as for his Daughter, he would send her to his Sister's for a few Days. No more remains now, Sir, said he, than your giving me a particular Account where to send to. Mr. *Williams* told him in *Somersetshire*, where his Father lived and Estate lay.

Mr. *Wells* ordered *Milly* to send a Messenger to Mr. *Jervis's*, and request him and his Wife to come directly to him, to instruct them what they were to do. Every Requisite was performed according to his Will; Mr. and Mrs. *Jervis* soon appeared to him, and were let into a Knowledge of what they were so hastily sent for; Mr. *Jervis* was well mounted, and prepared with Letters to several People in *Somersetshire*; Mrs. *Jervis* took the Charge of the young Ladies upon her, and all went to their appointed Places. Mr. *Williams* amused himself during the Absence of the Ladies, which to him was a grievous Recess from Love, as well as he could.

Among many who resorted Mr. *Wells's* House, the Justice of Peace who examin'd *Milly* about the Necklace used frequently to dine there, and was exceeding courteous to her, who always sat at Table

ble let what Company would dine at it. For some time past her Sense and Conduct had been the Life and Spirit of this Family; the beauteous Charms of her Person, admired and celebrated by all who beheld her, but none so unhappily captivated as the Justice, who was a married Man. He took an Opportunity to slip a Piece of Paper into her Hand, wrote upon as follows,

Charming *Emilia*,

MY Life or Death depends upon your Reception of this: Were I not unhappily married, I could take the common Course of those who approach the Objects they adore, by giving you Worlds, if I had them to receive myself; but alas I want that Blessing and Freedom of Will, and cursed I fear to a Degree beyond Conception, by loving you. My Hand trembles at this Part, but my Heart forces it on to offer you, *Emilia Finch*, five hundred Pounds a Year for Life and deign to love me, or say you do. If this appears criminal in your sight resent it not, being worked up by your own irresistible Form; if you see it in this Light, you will pity a Crime occasioned by your self, which I endeavoured with all the Strength of Mind and Heart I have to resist; but how weak and feeble are they, when compared to the Force of your heavenly Image, always in my sight. Thou Likeness of something divine, have Mercy upon

Your Captive and Slave,

Thomas Leeds.

P. S. Give me a Minute's Opportunity to speak to you,

She retired to read the Contents of it. He came to the Hall where she was, appeared as her Suppliant, and asked her had she perused it; she said she had, and waited there to give him an Answer, which was, that no rich Villain should ever corrupt her.

This seemed to confound him greatly; she immediately left him, not waiting for his Reply, and joined the Company quite composed. Mr. *Leeds* soon followed; his Confusion was observed by all present. When Mrs. *Wells* retired *Milly* accompanied her, and shewed Mr. *Leeds's* Letter. She was greatly surprized, but very much approved of her Answer, affirming, she would forbid him her House, which however he prevented, by going off when the Ladies withdrew. Mrs. *Wells* shewed his Letter to every Soul in her Family, and the Attempt seemed to be resented by all.

In a few Days Mr. *Jervis* returned, and by Letters of unquestionable Credit, and his own Enquiry, confirmed every Thing Mr. *Williams* told him. The Ladies were sent for home, and after a short Correspondence between the Fathers, an Appointment was made to meet in *London* in ten Days to settle the Articles of the Marriage. After five Weeks Confinement to Mr. *Jack*, they received a Letter from Mr. *Wilders*, the Contents of which are as follow,

S I R,

YOUR Son's unhappy Fate, and Mr. *Williams's* Love for your Daughter, to whom (he writes to me) he is soon to be married, and to let Miss *Judger* know it, and that he would receive no more Letters from her, nor have any farther Connexion or Acquaintance with her, have had a good Effect. Eight Days ago I shewed her his first Letter to me upon that Subject, and in it was a Letter of hers to him,

him, which he returned unopened as he knew her Hand. Losing unfortunately by Accident one, and deserted by the other Lover, made her kindly admit the Addressee of a Recruiting Serjeant; she was married to him publickly last Sunday. It surprizes me that Mr. *Williams* pitched upon me to pay his last Compliments to Miss, but I have done it effectually, and would do any thing in my Power to serve you or him, and am,

S I R,

Yours, &c.

Mr. and Mrs. *Wells* sent for *Milly*; when she came she found them in Excess of Joy; they both heartily embraced her, and then gave her the Letter to read that occasioned so much Transport. She had an equal Share in their Joy, and they attributed all to her, under God, blessing the first Hour she came to them. She said, I think it now high time to suffer my poor Patient to eat as he pleases, but would recommend to you, Sir, to write this Night to Mr. *Wilders* that your Son is recovering fast, and that he should write to him of Miss *Judger's* Marriage. He said he would. Mr. *Williams* was informed Master *Jack* was much better. He desired Leave to see him. *Milly* shewed him the Way, and they were very glad to see each other. Finding *Jack* so well recovered, he gave him three Letters he received from *Oxford* the last Post to read, saying, the Contents of them would surprize him greatly.

Milly retired and went to Mrs. *Wells*, and told her she was sure Master *Jack* would find by the Letters Mr. *Williams* gave him that Miss *Judger* was married, that she feared the News would affect him. *Milly* staid till Mr. *Williams* left him,

and then went and asked him if he wanted any thing; he said he did, both his Liberty and Strength, and that he was murdered by the Surgeons keeping him so long under Cure. They shall have no more to say to you, I will take your Recovery upon myself, and give you what you please to eat. I thank you, dear *Milly*, says he, I should have perished here before now had it not been for your Care of me. She gave him the most nourishing Things after this that could be procured, and he recovered apace. In sixteen Days all the Preliminaries were settled as to Miss *Lydia* and Mr. *Williams*, and they were married immediately. They chose to settle for a time at Mr. *Wells's*, who pressed them to it.

Master *Jack* became quite sprightly and gay; and here was at present a happy and sudden Alteration in this Family. *Milly*, in Fact, governed the whole Oeconomy of it, each Individual surrendering their Power to her wise and prudent Management.

Mr. *Wells*, from a Principle of Gratitude, gave *Milly* the twenty Acres before mentioned for Life, subject to no Rent, and a Present of an hundred Guineas. The Pursuit of her History obliges me to call upon her Sister *Catharine* more than I intended, till I related her own Life.

She chang'd her Mother from Chamber to Chamber till she fixed her in the Garret, and from thence turned her out of Doors, and she is now come to Mr. *Jervis's* in the greatest Distress, in want of every kind of Relief. Upon the first Intelligence from Mrs. *Jervis* to *Milly*, she said, I will first return God Thanks that it is in my Power to relieve her more than I expected: Will you retire with me and join in Prayer and Thanksgiving, that I am enabled to give her Food and Raiment. I will with all my Heart, my Dear, replies Mrs. *Jervis*. They

They remained retired till *Milly* was called by *Mrs. Wells*, who told her in private, how unconscionable *Mr. Williams* and his Wife were, after giving them to the Value of four hundred Pounds more than their Portion, they asked me to let you live with them; that they intended soon to keep House for themselves; that *Mr. Wells* was present, and positively refused their Request, saying, it was a Shame for them to desire it; that they knew you took all Care and Trouble off our Hands, which you faithfully discharged; that we owed you Obligations of such a Kind, that we would never part you till you were provided for; they were dissatisfied however at our Refusal. Now, I want to know if you gave either of them any Hint, that you were disposed to leave us and live with them.

Milly replied, God forbid I should be guilty of such sinful Ingratitude. I know, without Vanity, my Usefulness here, and the Habit of Ease I have given you by fulfilling your Orders, so as to gain your Esteem: Whatever Merits I had, your Rewards exceeded them. To model a new Servant (as you have done me) who seem by Nature fitted for you, would perhaps be troublesome to you, and base to the last Degree in me to put you to that Necessity, by deserting you while it is your Inclination to keep me; believe me, your Service is preferable to me to any other in the World. *Mrs. Wells* said, I am surprized why they should make the Request. *Milly* replied, Servants I believe, Madam, are bandied about from Hand to Hand like any other Goods; but to prevent what farther Importunity may do, I beseech you not to part with me, if you do, it is forcing my Inclinations, who serves you from a Principle of Love more than Interest. My dear *Milly*, says *Mrs. Wells*, I would as soon part with one of my Hands: Is not *Mrs.*
Jervis

Jervis in the House? She is, replies *Milly*, and came with News to me, that my Mother was at her House in the greatest Distress. Poor Mrs. *Finch*! I knew her when she was otherwise, says Mrs. *Wells*: Did she send for you? *Milly* answers, she sent me word she was there, which makes me request two or three Days Leave to stay with her. That is too long, but you must come home every Evening, says Mrs. *Wells*. I will, replied she. Tell Mr. *Jervis* she is unkind not to see me oftener than she does; go and come every Day in the Chair.

Mrs. *Jervis* and *Milly* soon set off as desired, with such a Bundle of Things as Mrs. *Finch* wanted. When *Milly* saw her Mother, and received her Blessing, she sincerely and tenderly welcomed her to all the Comfort she could give her. Mrs. *Finch* was so altered that Mrs. *Jervis* did not know her when she saw her first, though absent but fifteen Months, and her Appearance was a Proof sufficient of the unnatural Treatment she had received from her Daughter *Catharine*. Mrs. *Finch* had had no Sickness in that time but that of the Mind, which we shall give an Account of in its proper Place.

Milly with her own Hands dressed her Mother from Head to Foot, prepared the best Entertainment the House afforded, and sent Mrs. *Jervis* to Market for more. Joy and Gladness fully appeared in her Countenance as well as Actions; then would she solace herself a while, by affectionately viewing Father and Mother, in Raptures saying, my God, your Goodness is unbounded to me, my Happiness now is compleat. Mrs. *Finch*, unaccustomed of late to such Duty and Affection, was likewise transported with Joy at the happy Change, yet wept at some Intervals, complaining of her Daughter *Catharine*'s Usage to her, which *Milly* always

always beseeched her to forbear, as it shocked her, and brought her Troubles afresh again upon her; she requested her to forgive her Sister, and pray for her Repentance; that as she never tasted Sorrow yet, she could not have a perfect Sense or Feeling of it in others; but Woe be to her for want of Experience, when her Turn of Affliction comes. As to your Part, Madam, continued she, if you can make yourself content now, I hope your Sorrows are at an End; you shall have all the solid Good of Life here, unenvied by the World, clean and neat in this humble Cottage, with its virtuous Owners; you may enjoy such Happiness as you never tasted before: But, in order to prepare you for the Blessings of Content, repine not when you behold your former House possessed by another; nor at Church be not dismay'd to see those who formerly paid you Homage, look from you as if their Eyes had erred; regard not the base Insincerity of the World, it is at best but Vanity; a divine Resignation and Contempt of all earthly Splendor, will raise you to such a pitch of Tranquillity, as will abundantly exceed in real Value all the Wealth you were ever possessed of. Pardon me, Madam, for presuming to advise you.

Mrs. *Finch* replied, I thank you, my dear Child, for what you have said, as much as for any thing else you have done for me. I have been in the World these fifty Years, and knew very little of it till I left my own House, since when my Eyes have been opened to the Fallacies of it, and I am now resolved to be concerned as little as possible with its Follies, and to think seriously of God, whom I have neglected during the Course of my Sunshine.

In Discourses of this kind they spent the best Part of the Day; Mrs. *Jervis* was of the same Turn of Mind with them, and when together

* *

they

they were always happy. Near the Close of the Evening *Milly* left them, and was going home in an open Chair by herself, when she was met and accosted by Justice *Leeds* in the following Manner: Hussy, how dare you expose my Letter? *Milly* replied, I would have posted it on the Church Door, but to avoid the Imputation of Vanity. For so doing, take this for your Trouble, you B——h, says he, giving her some Lashes of a Whip; this done, the Brute sheered off, and she drove home. She told it, and shewed the Marks of the Treatment she met with from Mr. *Leeds* on the high Road, which inexpressibly provoked the Family's Indignation against him, who administered her all the Consolation in their Power.

Next Morning Mr. *Williams* and Master *Jack* went a hunting; Mr. *Leeds* was present, and Mr. *Jack Wells* told the whole Company, in his hearing, how like a Scoundrel and Ruffian he had behaved Yesterday to *Emilia Finch*, told them the whole Story, and concluded with challenging this gallant Justice. I have Arms sufficient for us both, says the Youth, producing a Case of Pistols which he had concealed. You're a Boy, I will not fight you, says *Leeds*. *Williams* then, to whom the Objection of a Boy was not applicable, challenged him to the Combat, which he declined; upon which the young Soldier presented a Pistol to his Breast, saying, *Jack*, horsewhip the dastardly Coward, who could insult and assault a defenceless young Lady, and dares not fight a Man, use him as he deserves; if he stirs, or any one interposes, by G— they shall have what is in these Pistols. *Leeds* threw himself on his Knees and begged Mercy and Pardon; *Wells*, with the Butt End of a heavy Whip, at that Instant, struck him with all the Force he could upon his Nose, and repeated the Strokes upon his Head and Body till he lay stretch'd

and

and motionless on the Ground, in sight of the whole Company, who all approved of what was done. This Monster was worth upwards of two thousand Pounds a Year, and eternally boasting of the Duels he had fought in remote Places; he was not thirty Years old, strong, robust, but cruel in Nature. We shall take our Leave of this Worthy Justice, till we have Occasion to mention him again.

The Fame of Mr. *Williams* and *Jack's* Achievements flew home before them, and was received with Joy by the Family. Most of the Company at the Hunt came with our Heroes, and were hospitably received. Mrs. *Wells* could never hear enough of the Day's Adventure; and notwithstanding *Milly's* forgiving Temper, Repetitions of the Usage Mr. *Leeds* received at the Hunt seemed to be very agreeable to her. Mrs. *Wells* shewed the Letter, had it publicly read, and then open'd more of her Breast than she was willing to shew the Gentlemen, where they saw the Marks of his Whip. The Company seemed with one Voice to say, May the Man be cursed that would injure that chaste and beauteous Breast. They all were exceedingly pleased with Master *Jack* and Mr. *Williams*, except Mr. *Wells*, who seemed to apprehend a Lawsuit, or other Consequences, and said, If his Sons gave themselves a Habit of quarrelling it might prove fatal, or, at best, they could not fail of incurring the Censure and Abhorrence of all good Men.

After this *Milly* had always an armed Servant to attend her to Mr. *Jervis's*, where she settled her Father and Mother.

Near the Beginning of this Work, the Reader may remember, I took Notice of an Uncle she had, who lived as a Clerk with his Brother the Bankrupt, and never shared any of his Prosperity, but

but was involved in his Ruin ; from this her Kind-
man she received the following Letter :

My dear Niece,

Wood-street Compter.

I Engaged myself as Clerk to a Supercargo of an
India Ship, which proceeds on her Voyage in
twelve Days ; I had been unhappily sent by my
Brother, that failed, for Goods to the Amount of
eighty five Pounds, for which I am arrested and
sent to Gaol, which will deprive me of an Oppor-
tunity perhaps of making myself easy while I live ;
my Hopes are in your Good-nature, to come to
Town with what Money you can provide, and en-
deavour to compound this Debt. I applied to
your Sister, her Answer was, As well as I got my-
self into Gaol, to get out of it. I am,

Dear *Emilia*,

Your affectionate Uncle,

Samuel Finch.

This Letter affected her deeply. Mrs. *Wells*
was desirous to know the Contents of it, upon
which she gave it to her to read, who after Per-
sal told her, she never would be worth a Groat if
she relieved the Necessities of every one who would
apply to her. This is my Uncle, and I know
him to be a very poor and honest Man, Madam,
and for me to keep a Parcel of Guineas locked up
I got by your Bounty, which would recover his
Liberty, I think would be sinful and unnatural.
With your Permission I will relieve him. Mrs.
Wells replied, if you could afford it, I would be as
willing as you. She answered, indeed, Madam,
I am one of the richest Persons I know, I have
more

more Money than I can tell what to do with, my Parents and my own Bread is secured for Life by my Master's and your Goodness. Mrs. *Wells* replies, take him out, I see you have a mind to reason yourself into it. She then said, please to grant me Permission to go for three Days with Mrs. *Fervis* to *London*, to settle his Affairs, we will go by Water. Mrs. *Wells*, who could refuse her nothing, granted the Request, and Mrs. *Fervis* and she took Boat next Tide at *Gravesend*, and in a few Hours got safe to *London*. They went directly to her Uncle, who was confined in the same Street in which she was born; he was called, and her Presence proved a most agreeable Sight to behold, who thought the whole World had abandoned him.

They sat awhile together, and received Directions from him to whom the Money was to be paid; she then departed, took up her Lodging with a Friend and Acquaintance of Mrs. *Fervis*'s, and in the Morning went to the Uncle's Creditor. The Salutation being at an End, he desired to know their Business; *Emilia* informed him, she came to pay him a Debt for which her Uncle, *Samuel Finch*, was confined at his Suit. Step to the Compting-house, says he. When they came there, he looks in his Book and told her the Debt was eighty five Pounds. There is the Money, Sir, says *Emilia*; my Uncle declares, it was on the Credit of his Brother you gave him the Goods, but he wants his Liberty, and has no Stomach for Law, therefore you must be sole Judge yourself; if you are wrong, at your own Peril in the Sight of God be it. He eyed her very earnestly, and asked, who pays this Money for him? I do, replied she. You are a Lady of Fortune I suppose, says he. I am no more than a Servant, replied she. The Money was told down, and he returned her twenty Guineas,

Guineas, as a Present for her Uncle; upon which she got him discharged out of Gaol, and furnished him with the twenty Guineas his Creditor gave her for his Use. They took an affectionate Leave of each other, and *Emilia* and Mrs. *Jervis* returned home that Day.

They were told on their Arrival, by Mrs. *Finch*, that young Mr. *Wells* had been two or three times to enquire for them, so she staid but a short time at Mrs. *Jervis*'s, and went immediately home. Mrs. *Wells* called her aside, and asked her if she settled her Uncle's Affairs; to which she answered in the Affirmative. I hope, says Mrs. *Wells*, you will be rewarded for your Goodness. I am already, says *Milly*, by the Joy of Heart I feel for the Service I did my Uncle.

Says Mrs. *Wells*, we have a mind to send *Jack* to *Oxford* again, but he has no Inclination to leave us, how shall we manage him? Your Wills, replied she, ought to be Laws with him; I think you must insist upon his going, I hope he will be safe there now. Mrs. *Wells* answered, I fear he will be safe nowhere; but what makes you think he will be safe there now? *Milly* replied, the Cause of his Danger there is removed, and it is in vain to make yourselves perpetually uneasy about him; if he has a mind to throw himself away, it will not be always in your Power to prevent it. Thus they chatted till interrupted by Company.

Milly fancied that after her last Conversation with Mrs. *Wells*, she and her Master appeared cooler in their Love and Confidence than usual, and could not think of any Reason for it, which made her excessively uneasy, as she loved them sincerely. In this doubtful State she continued two Months, when walking in the Garden she was surprized by having both her Arms secured behind and instantly hearing Master *Jack* say to her,

is I, my dear *Milly*, I will hold you fast this way till you hear what I have to say. I love you more than Life or Fortune; I have no Design upon you but what is honourable, and that I will pursue till I get you, or perish in the Attempt. Let me go, Sir, says she, you may speak and let me have my Liberty; it is the oddest way I ever heard of to address; upon which he unhanded her. Do you know, Sir, I am upon Honour to your Mamma, if ever you spoke of Love to me to tell her of it? Do as you please, I will publickly avow it, says he, and more, that I will not live out of your Sight; I was distracted even at your late Absence. *Milly* said, You are cruel to banish me, God knows where, from the House and Family in the World I love most; all you have said to me I will tell your Mamma; what Measures she may take I cannot say, but certainly I will obey in whatever she may enjoin; I intended to be a Comfort to her, and not a Torment. He replied, it is in vain to speak of Father or Mother in this Case, if they have any hand in hindering our being joined they shall have no Son; they want to send me to *Oxford*, I will not obey, but resolve to remain with you. Master *Jack*, says *Milly*, I abhor Disobedience, and would sooner beg my Bread than have any thing to say to an undutiful Child. I will be an Example of Duty to other Sons, if they indulge me in this, says he. They love you too well to indulge you in this, which is the most material Transaction of your Life.

Having thus said she left him, went to Mrs. *Wells*, and addressed her in the following manner: Madam, I have often promised never to keep a Secret from you, and to fulfil my Word, I must now tell something that shocks my very Heart, as I believe it will and ought to part us for ever; about twenty Minutes since Master *Jack* seized my Arms behind in the Garden, and made a full Declaration of Love

to me; and told her every Word had passed, as well as her own Answers. Mrs. *Wells* asked if he did not declare himself before that Day; *Milly* replied, never indeed, Madam. I was displeased with you, says she, since you went to *London*, for I was told he spoke to you before, and I thought you insincere not to tell me; I never knew Wretch so uneasy as he was while you were abroad, every one of the Family noticed him; what must we do now? *Milly* replies, I cannot tell, I am willing to go where you please, so as never to be heard of; depend upon it I will never deceive you, I would sooner die than you should have a low or base Opinion of me; if he loves me it is no Fault of mine, I never encouraged him to it, not all that Wealth could bestow shall ever tempt me to any thing unworthy the Opinion you entertain of me. Mrs. *Wells* replied, I have a very high Opinion of your Integrity, and believe you detest every Thing base and dishonourable; but we have an only Son at stake, and a Fortune by which we may expect a considerable Alliance; he was as hopeful a Youth as ever Parent was blessed with, till his good Inclination was withdrawn by his unfortunate Love for Women: You, indeed, hindered his Ruin in one Instance, and I shall ever acknowledge the Obligation, but if it ever appears that you have any farther Connexion, or encourage his Addresses, it must be said, even by those who admire the Goodness of your Mind, that you saved him but for yourself, with perhaps the Imputation of the most criminal Ingratitude, from all who are made acquainted with the Story: Now are you furnished with an Opportunity of affording a most shining Example of Virtue, of shewing the Uprightness of your Heart, by the Steps which you may at this critical Juncture pursue; this may be done with Fame and Glory to yourself, by refusing him and his Fortune, rather than

than shamefully and ungratefully wresting him out of the Hands of his afflicted Parents. *Milly*, my dear, continued she, send us not to our Grave before the time ; you always professed an uncommon Regard, and now has this unhappy Accident placed it in your Power to prove its Reality.

Milly, with some Degree of Warmth, replied, that not only her Son, but indeed every Blessing which Fortune could confer, she should consider as Trifles light as Air, where Virtue and Honour were in the opposite Scale ; that what were thought the good Things of Life, were by no means tempting Objects to her ; I have not the least Wish or Anxiety about them, said she, nor does this Contempt of the World's Idol proceed from Pride, or Affectation of Contempt for what I cannot possess, but Reflection and Experience have well instructed me. You, Madam, are sensible that I have known the luscious Sweets of Plenty, and consequently am the more capable of knowing that Happiness is not the Result of Riches. I already enjoy, by your Generosity, more than my Wishes crave, but you may rest assured that were it otherwise, no earthly Advantage shall seduce me to violate the Duty I owe so indulgent a Benefactress. My dear *Milly*, said the Mistress, what Methods would you advise ? Remove the Cause, answered she ; Absence has, at times, wrought Wonders in the Cure of such Madness ; send me hence, there is no other Course I know of to be taken ; by this I sacrifice myself ; for out of your Family I know not how to live ; think kindly of me when I am gone, and remember you were more necessary to his unhappy Passion than I was ; for when you took me to *Oxford*, you bid me appear to as much Advantage as I could, and I appeared in a manner little suitable to my Station ; I knew your Reason was in order to divert him from the then destructive Object of his Wishes ; this,

and afterwards continually attending him by your Orders, during his Illness, has kindled a Passion in him, perhaps nothing but Separation can happily destroy; I would advise you to be as speedy as possible, Delay in this Case is highly dangerous; I shall say no more, but conclude with a hearty Prayer for the Welfare of yourself and Family, and a Hope that you will always believe me rather unfortunate than guilty.

Mrs. *Wells* said, with a Sigh, few Things could give me more trouble than parting with you, but to save my Son admits of no Competition: Whether will you go? To my Father and Mother, replied *Milly*. Mrs. *Wells* objected to that, as being so near; he will, said she, be perpetually visiting you. She replied, I shall give him not the least Encouragement, and permit me but to stay with them till you find the least Cause of Uneasiness, and I will quickly betake myself to a greater Distance. Mrs. *Wells* then presented her with an hundred Guineas, at the same time making the warmest Tenders of Friendship, saying, apply to me and I will serve you if I can; but poor *Milly*, however, could not contain herself from weeping.

Mr. *Wells* knew all that passed between her and his Wife, who were the only two in this Family not surprized at seeing her in the greatest Disorder, packing and preparing to go away; but none so terribly alarmed as young Mr. *Wells*. His Father was determined to watch him, and use his Authority, in case he gave any Occasion, upon her Departure. When a large Trunk of hers was lugging out between two Fellows, who regarded not the several Anxieties and Troubles of this House, but with a happy Stupidity were bearing their Burthen away, Master *Jack* asked who order'd them to take it out; one of them answered, Mrs. *Milly*, who is going

going away, for Service is no Inheritance, Master, that is all we have to say to it. Lay it down, you insensible Brutes, said Master *Wells*. They obeyed. His Father, who was within hearing, came forward, and says, What, Sir, do you take upon you to countermand my Orders? I say, she and her Trunk too shall go; take it away this instant. The Porters took it up, muttering, Call us Brutes! we are, I hope, like other Christians. His Father bade him, with some Severity, look at it, and asked him what he thought of it; he replied, as a Wretch going to Execution who beholds his Coffin; he then threw himself upon his Knees to his Father, saying, I cannot recollect that I ever disobeyed you, but when an irresistible Passion forced me; I had, before this, one for another whose Conduct was not good, Providence kindly transferred it from her to this Angel whom you are banishing for ever. You are conscious too she is virtuous, her Conduct unexceptionable, and her Person lovely; these are Excellencies rarely to be met with in the same Person; she wants but in Fortune, and we have enough, let us covet no more. Don't deprive me of a greater Comfort than the *Indies* can atone for; confound not the Innocent with the Guilty; she has done nothing to offend, it is I who have offended; keep her here, send me where you please; I will not speak of Love to her for Years, I will be dutiful as ever Child was to Parent, indulge me but in this single Request.

Mr. *Wells* replied, Sirrah, I knew by the Romances you took to reading of late your Head was turned; but, to answer all your Flights at once, I regard them no more than if you bid me take a Pistol and shoot you. Now, Sir, hear me in my Turn, I charge you at your Peril not to stir from this House without my Permission. He had the Servants called, and told them not to go of any

Message for his Son, nor let him to the Stables, or out of Doors without his Knowledge; and you *Tom* and *James* stick by him as his Guards, like his Shadow, till you receive contrary Directions from me; I expect you will punctually obey my Orders.

The Servants promised Obedience, and he then left him and went to Mrs. *Wells*, whom he found weeping, and addressed her in the following manner: My Dear be comforted, these or some other Trials as bad, we must meet with in this State of Probation; we little thought of these Anxieties when we used to be delighted with his little Sports and Plays, and comforting ourselves with the Hopes of his future Fortune. She replied, Yes, I remember when at your Return from an Assizes, that he must be a Judge, and nothing else, for a Week after; thus we used to argue about these Castles in the Air with some Warmth: How is he now? Said Mr. *Wells*, raving mad as any Man in Bedlam. Heavens! what will become of him and us! I cannot tell, says he, but I am resolved to cool his Love or break his Heart. Remember, your own Father could not cool yours for me, and took more Pains to do so than ever I hope he will put you to: Have a Feeling, and don't kill our Child; give him good Advice, and don't proceed to Extremities; have Mercy on those in your Power, you cannot have it on others. He is mine, said Mr. *Wells*, and I will do as I please with him; I have him now a Prisoner in the House, and closely guarded. Good God, observed she, we shall be the Subject of the publick Talk if you persist. Mr. *Wells* replied, better be so than see him marry a Beggar; all reasonable Folks will highly approve of my Conduct, and a Fig for the rest of the World; I may thank you for his Disobedience, you have indulged him so that he is become at present incor-

rigible;

gible; 'tis to the Folly of Mothers that many Boys
suffer their Destruction.

We shall leave this Pair in alternate Sorrow,
Quarrels, Distractions, and Reconciliations about
their darling Son, and pursue poor *Emilia* Step by
Step, sorrowfully going where she always before
went rejoicing.

Her Courage forsook her upon this Occasion,
and she came to her Mamma and Mrs. *Jervis* all
in Tears. They were not a little surprized at the
Event, but *Emilia* eased them by relating every
Circumstance of the whole Affair; to which Mrs.
Jervis replied, thank God it is no worse; remem-
ber your Condition when you went there, and
compare it with your present, and you will find you
have Reason to rejoice. How mistaken am I in
you; I thought, after the great Deliverances from
Distresses you have met, you would have had Cou-
rage enough to despise a Trifle like this. The Love
bear Mrs. *Wells*, replied *Emilia*, makes it quite
afflicting to me; I am conscious of my Weakness,
but I cannot help it. Says Mrs. *Finch*, the Favour
of our Superiors is very uncertain. But, Mamma,
replied *Emilia*, I cannot say so of Mrs. *Wells*, I am
sure I still remain in her good Graces, and nothing
but a Child's being in the Case could have divided
us; I speak of her as my Equal, for she made me
so. I think, says Mrs. *Finch*, she made a Tool of
you in the Beginning, to get her Son away from
Oxford. Mrs. *Jervis* replied, it is customary with
those in high Life to make Tools of their nearest
Friends, when the Necessity of Affairs requires it,
and the universal Practice of it reconciles us to its
Baseness; but the worst is, when a Person is made
a Tool and does not know it. That was not my
Case, says *Milly*; I judged the Purpose for which
I was taken there. Mrs. *Jervis* says, you might

then have conjectured, methinks, what would be the Consequence.

Nine Days elapsed before they heard any thing material from Mr. *Wells's* Family, except Master *Jack's* being confined by his Father. In the Evening Mr. *Fervis* informed *Emilia*, that Mrs. *Wells* was at a little Distance in her Coach, and desired to speak to her. She attended immediately, and on seeing *Milly* the old Gentlewoman burst into Tears, saying, *Milly*, my Dear, poor *Jack* is dying, his Father confined him, and he has taken to his Bed, receives little or no Nourishment, and looks like a Skeleton; if any approach him he begs them to withdraw; he has not eat an Ounce these four Days, but enquires hourly after you; Things being in this Situation, Mr. *Wells* and I request you to come home, and to forgive the Frowardness of his Temper, which had been at that time not a little ruffled. Madam, replies *Milly*, I grieve at the Occasion of my Return, I shall wait of you instantly.

They set forward, and on their Arrival Mr. *Wells* with open Arms received *Milly*, beseeching her to love them, if she could, with the same Cordiality she used to do; and *Milly*, on her Part, assured him, that to please them both was the greatest Pleasure of her Life. Mrs. *Wells* taking her to Master *Jack*, said, See, my Dear, I have brought *Milly* to take Care of you. Mamma, I fear it is too late, he replied; then turning to *Milly*, said, were I just departing, to see you would give me Comfort unspeakable: Where is your Trunk? At Mr. *Fervis's*, says she. I wish it was in this Room, it gave me my first and deepest Wound of Sorrow, when I saw it carried hence; pray send for it. I will this Minute, my Dear, says his poor Mamma, and accordingly did. *Milly* prepared something for him, but he could not eat.

In this melancholy State he continued eight Days longer, *Milly* and his Mamma continually attending him, his Papa coming or sending perpetually to know how he was, and speaking to him with all the Tenderness he could wish for. These Comforts to his Spirits, from a Father he feared and from *Milly* he loved, prepared by slow Degrees his Body to receive Nutriment, and he began to recover apace. *Emilia* was now more caressed than ever, if possible, and was every Hour obliged to hear the artless Tongue of Master *Jack* in her Praise.

As he recovered the Father retracted somewhat of his Promises to him, but when he was perfectly well they both came to an Agreement, that Master *Jack* should pursue his Studies at *Oxford* for three Years, or make the Tour of *Europe* in that time, which he liked best, *Milly* to remain as she was; if they liked at the End of that time to join Hands, Father and Mother solemnly promised their Consent; in the mean time they were permitted to correspond as they pleased, but were upon Honour to shew Mrs. *Wells* all the Letters; however he might return home sometimes.

As to all this Agreement *Milly* did not declare herself, nor was she asked. Master *Jack* was obliged, by Promise, to behave with great Strictness and Decorum to her, but would however sometimes break out, and force a Kiss of her ruby Lips. His Father insisted on his preparing himself in three Days for *Oxford*, and he declared himself ready and willing to obey his Commands; and at the Time appointed, after a tender Farewel to his Dearest, and Blessing from his Parents, he went chearfully to his Studies.

Thus was the Peace of this worthy Family restored again, which Tranquillity lasted till interrupted by Justice *Leeds*, who had indicted Master *Wells* and Mr. *Williams*. On this Account the young Gentleman

tleman was sent for three Months sooner than he expected, and had by that means the Pleasure of enjoying the Conversation of his only Beloved. Mr. *Wells* was advised by a Lawyer to get *Milly* to lodge Examinations against *Leeds*, and he took her and his Spouse to a neighbouring Justice, before whom she swore the Assault against him. Mrs. *Wells* was desirous to hear the Trial of her Sons, and accordingly went. Upon this Occasion she ordered *Milly* to dress as fine as she could, and to ornament herself with some valuable Jewels of hers; she also got above fifty Copies of Mr. *Leeds's* Letter, and sent them to all the neighbouring Gentlemen.

This Man was so unfortunate as to be hated by every one who knew him, which made the exposing him more acceptable to all.

The bills against all the parties were found, and to be tried next Morning. Mr. *Leeds's* was first to come on, and the incomparable *Emilia* was to prosecute; Mrs. *Wells* came with her into Court. Had your Eyes been fixed on her when she entered the Court, you would be surprized to see the sudden Effects her uncommon Beauty had upon this Assembly, while she was passing thro' the Croud, who made a Passage for her and Mrs. *Wells*; and when the Judge beheld her, he ordered room to be made for her and the other Lady. At this time she was not in the least dismayed. Mr. *Leeds's* Trial came on; she was sworn; the Judge order'd her to proceed as to the Assault. She asked what Address she should use; my Lord, she was told, to the Judge. She went on, My Lord, that Gentleman there, pointing to Mr. *Leeds*—What is his Name? says the Judge. *John Leeds*. Very well, go on, Madam. He gave me a Letter, [Here she was violently interrupted by a Lawyer, who said, the Letter was not to the Purpose, and the Court would not hear it] This disconcerted *Emilia* not a little, but

but her Lawyers recover'd her, by arguing that the Letter ought to be heard. The Judge interposed, and said, Madam, tell us where he met you, and what he did, as to the Letter, I believe it has been sufficiently heard of; proceed, you shall be heard. She said, I was by myself in ——— [Here she was interrupted again by the same Lawyer, who said, Speak out, that the Court may hear you] She then piteously looks at her Lawyers for Protection, and they bid her proceed. My Lord, she said, this Man here (pointing to the Lawyer) will not suffer me to go on; upon which the Judge interposed his Authority, and she proceeded. My Lord, I was stopped on the Road by Mr. Leeds, who asked me how I dare to expose a Letter of his, [Here the Lawyer again interrupted her, insisting that the Court would not hear a Word of the Letter.] The Judge ordered him to sit down; she then spoke with more Courage; he demanded of me how I dare to expose his Letter; I answered him, I had a mind to publish it; he then, my Lord, insulted me, and afterwards struck me several times with a Horse-whip in a most severe manner. What did you do at that time? says the Judge. I cried, my Lord, and when he had glutted his Vengeance he rode off precipitately. Have you any more to say? says the Judge. No, my Lord. The Judge asks the Lawyers against her, Have you any more Questions? Yes, my Lord, and hope to satisfy your Lordship and the Gentlemen of the Jury, that she, the Prosecutress, violently, unmercifully, and with Malice aforethought, intended to destroy the Traveller, Mr. Leeds, by driving with all the Force, Speed, and Fury she could her Chaise, against said Leeds, who miraculously escaped with Life and Limbs; her cruel and wicked Intentions—*Emilia* could not refrain answering this barbarous Charge, by saying, My Lord, he does not speak one Word
of

of Truth. Have Patience, Madam, says the Judge. Have you any Questions to ask her? if you have, proceed. I have, my Lord, very material ones; he then asked her whether she drove with one or a Pair of Cattle. She replied, Sir, I am not willing to speak a Word to you. He warmly said, Mistress, I insist upon your answering my Questions. The Judge told her she must answer him; she did, and said, she drove with one. The Lawyer said, what Colour was he? Black, answered she. Was it a Whip or Cane Mr. *Leeds* had in his Hand? A Whip, said she. How do you know? says he. I saw and felt it, replied she. Where did he hurt you? On my Arms and Breast, says she. Shew the Hurts, consider you are upon your Oath, says he. It was some Months ago, and I am recovered now, says she. What sort of Horse did Mr. *Leeds* ride? says he. I don't know, I took no Notice of him, but I am sure he rode, said she. My Lord, says the Lawyer to the Judge, it is in vain to question her, she answers so evasively. The Judge replied, I think she has answered very pertinently; have you any more to put to her? No, my Lord, said he.

The Trial ended here, and she sat down by Mrs. *Wells*. The Judge gave a severe Charge to the Jury against Mr. *Leeds*, aggravated by his being a Magistrate, breaking the Peace upon the King's Highway, by assaulting barbarously a defenceless young Gentlewoman, whose very Sex and Person would have been a Protection, had not the Prisoner been a Barbarian.

Immediately after came on the Trials of Mr. *Williams* and young Mr. *Wells*; after which the Jury retired, and in a few Minutes declared Mr. *Leeds* guilty, and a like Verdict was given against the young Gentlemen; their being pronounced guilty so affected the tender Heart of poor *Emilia* that

that she wept. *Leeds* was fined one thousand Pounds, and the Judge informed him, that Applications would be fruitless unless the Prosecutress appeared on his behalf, and ordered the Sheriff to take care of the Prisoner. The young Gentlemen were fined fifty Marks each. Mr. *Wells* was greatly pleased to have his Sons get off so well, and Mr. *Leeds* so heavily fined. He invited his Friends to Supper, and while they were assembled many Applications were made to him by *Leeds*, who proposed to give *Emilia* five hundred Pounds if she would certify her Willingness to forgive the Offence. The Proposal was accepted, the Money paid, and the Justice released.

Next Day they returned home, and *Milly* lodged the Money in Mr. *Wells*'s Hands. The first Opportunity, Master *Wells* flew to *Milly*, and with a little Force embraced her, saying, my dear *Milly*, I give you Joy of your Victory over that Scoundrel, I wish you had fifty times as much of the Wretch's Money; but there was one circumstance pleased me infinitely above all the rest, as it flatter'd my Hopes. What was that? demanded she. When I was found guilty I perceived you to weep. I must be very ungrateful, said she, not to be affected when I heard Mr. *Williams* and you pronounced guilty in a Court of Justice, and that on my account; besides, I did not know what they would do with you after the Verdict was given; I believe the spiteful Lawyer who was against us, that said all the Falshoods he could think of, would destroy us if he could. He said, I did not fear all they could do, provided you loved and pitied me: Suppose, *Milly*, I was confined in Gaol there, would you stay with me? She answered, if your Mamma ordered me I would bring you all proper Necessaries every Day. Suppose my Mamma was dead, would you desert me? I would not in that Case, but get you as well taken
Care

Care of as I could. But why all these Questions? To find, he says, by your Answers, whether you love me or not; if you do, I would press you to marry me privately, because I am certain my Papa has some Mischief in his Head, which I fear will fall upon you or me. She says, what do you apprehend? He answered, I overheard my Papa speaking to one Mr. Jones, who saw you in Court, a young Merchant, that he himself would give you fifteen hundred Pounds, the Day you were married to any Man you pleased; more was said, but they walked out of my hearing. Does not that shew his Kindness for me, observed Emilia. He said, it is not from that motive he does it, but to prevent you and me from marrying; and if you don't consent to do it privately, in a Night or two, I fear it will never be done. Milly replied, I assure you I will not hear a Word more about it till the Time is expired, then indeed we may consider of it. Milly, said he, remember I tell you he will keep no Faith with us, he will always find one Pretence or other to delay it. I cannot help that, said she, it is your Duty to obey him, and it's all intended for your Good. Will you then promise you will marry no other but me? She replied, I will make no Promises, but be assured I will marry nobody till that Time is out, and what I may then do I am not a Judge of now. He said, dear Milly, I don't know how soon I may be ordered to Oxford, give me some Reason to think you love me before I go, I will live upon the Comfort of it till I see you again. I can give you none greater of my Regard than my unwearied Diligence about you when sick, and all the little Offices of Service in my Power when well, I don't understand what more you would have me do. He said, you would do those Things for any body my Mamma desired you: Can't you say something to me like Love, you never did; or give me
your

your Comb, Ribband, or Garter you have used, for I will take no other, as a Remembrance of you; I will leave you the Seal of my Watch, or any thing else I have that you chuse. I will give you, says she, some of my Ribbands, if you want them. Says he, give me this one on your Head, laying his Hand upon it. I find I must, for Peace sake, says she, so took it off and gave it to him. They often chatted this way till his Father ordered him to Oxford.

Mr. and Mrs. *Wells*, in *Milly's* Hearing, often spoke very favourably of one Mr. *Jones*, a Merchant, what a rising young Man he was, how careful and industrious as to his Business, and that he would certainly make a Figure in Trade if he lived but a few Years, and Mr. *Wells* added, that he had invited him to spend a Week with him.

In ten Days after Master *Wells's* Departure Mr. *Jones* arrived, and was received with great Friendship and Respect by all the Family. *Milly*, from what she had been told, suspected the Design, but to be clear in it, heard with Patience Mr. *Jones* compliment her extravagantly, but as yet he declared no Love, for they advised him to conduct himself with great Caution. He certainly admired her from the first time he saw her. He endeavoured, as much as possible, to make himself agreeable. Mr. and Mrs. *Wells* told her, for the great Services she had done them, they would give her a Fortune of fifteen hundred Pounds, provided she disposed of herself agreeable to their Inclinations. She returned them Thanks, but declared, that Matrimony, at present, was the least of her Thoughts; which Reply seemed not to please them.

Mr. *Jones* spoke to her upon the same Head, and was laying open his Circumstances; which she prevented, by saying, Sir, it is in vain telling me what does not nor ever shall concern me; you are too polite,

polite, I hope, to ask me for a Reason, if you do, I shall give you no other than that of my positive Will, and then left him.

Mr. *Wells* then came to her, in favour of Mr. *Jones*, saying, *Milly*, I am surprized you should refuse so good a Match, together with my Offer, which I will punctually fulfil, provided you consent to make this Gentleman happy. Mrs. *Wells* desired her to remember she had promised to take her Advice; adding, dear *Milly*, I know you abhor Falshood and Deceit, and now confirm me in that invariable Opinion I have ever had, of your Inclinations to follow my Directions, which are, to marry Mr. *Jones*, who is worth upwards of eight thousand Pounds, and like to have much more. *Milly* replied, Madam, my Promise was to obey you with Duty and Love, and never to dispose of myself without your Consent, which I will inviolably keep; but I beseech you not to press me upon such a Subject, for, as I observed before, I have no Thought of it, imagining my own Condition preferable to any. I thank you for your kind Intentions to provide for me, but think I have a Sufficiency to make my Life comfortable; I confess it gives me vast Trouble to find you are so ready to part with me, and upon the severest Conditions in the World to force my Inclinations. Madam, I will complain of you only to yourself, and can assure you, I would not give you a Moment's Pain, to get by it even a greater Fortune than you are possessed of. Dear Madam, dispose of me as you please, so it is not in the Bonds of Wedlock. Mrs. *Wells* replied, I desire however you would behave civil to Mr. *Jones*. I shall never do otherwise to your Friends, I can assure you, replies *Milly*.

Mr. *Jones* continued in the House, except short Absences to *London*; and a few Weeks after this Conversation, Mr. *Wells* received a Letter from

Mr.

Mr. *Wilders* of *Oxford*, who was still to watch his Son's Conduct, wrote in the following Terms,

S I R,

IN some of my former Letters, I gave it as my Opinion that your Son was of an amorous Disposition; he now confirms it, for he revels on from the Love Affair to another. The present Object of his Desires is both a very fine, and worthy young Lady, Daughter to Mr. *Acreman*, who has twenty thousand Pounds ready for her; perhaps he may not again chuse so prudently, therefore would have you encourage him in this. They dance together at the Assembly frequently, and the common Report is, 'twill be a Match as soon as you and her Father meet. There seems to be a reciprocal Affection betwixt them. Your Advice upon this will oblige,

S I R,

Yours, &c.

Mr. *Wells*, taking the Letter in his Hand, goes to Mr. *Milly*, Remember, says he, I always told you that Puppy, my Son, was not to be depended upon. I don't recollect it, Sir, replied she. I assure you I did, therefore pray read this, where you will find the Character of a faithless Rogue. She read the Letter with great Composure, and gave it to him back. What think you now of him? says he. Extremely well, replied *Milly*; I hope the Lady and Fortune will both be agreeable to you. I think, says he, it's best to secure him so, and get rid of the Trouble of keeping him. This has, said she, a great Appearance of Happiness, and I think you ought to pursue the Advice Mr. *Wilders* gives you.

After seeing this Letter, she was teased more than ever by the fulsome Complaisance of *Mr. Jones*, which was unavoidable by the Countenance he received from *Mr. and Mrs. Wells*, who had industriously reported that *Milly* and he would soon be married. When this Report was propagated among the Servants, the Butler was sent to *Oxford* to *Master Jack* and *Mr. Wilders*, to settle his Accounts there, and to furnish him properly for his Courtship.

Mrs. Wells then spoke to *Milly* again concerning *Mr. Jones*, giving her many Reasons with respect to her Interest; but she was inflexible, telling her she still continued firm to her old Principles. As Letters to her from *Master Jack* were received and read by *Mr. Wells*, which Scheme, though badly adapted, and worse executed, to one of *Milly's* Capacity, he brought his Wife into, and in four Days time *Milly* had a Letter delivered to her to the following Purport.

My dear *Milly*,

Gravesend, Man of War

I HAVE for Weeks past been greatly alarmed with the Letters shewed me by *Mr. Wilders* from unknown Hands, intimating your intended Marriage with one *Jones*. I have received no Answer to my Letters from you, which gives me great Uneasiness; however, I was dubious of their Contents till our Butler came, who assured me you were to be married To-morrow Night; I took the Butler's Horse and distractedly rode here. My Impatience is inexpressible to be with you, but am fearful of coming home. If you have Charity, instantly come and clear the Doubts of my tormented Soul, or let me know where I may see you this Night; the Rashness it may cause me to commit is inconceivable, if my dear *Milly* does not re-

lieve

lieve the Heart of the most sincere and faithful Lover, Woman ever had,

John Wells.

This Letter greatly surprized her, she immediately determined to shew it to his Mamma, and know from her what measures she would have her take. Mrs. *Wells* when she read it seemed astonished, saying, his Father would certainly be the Death of him, if he knew it; but if you don't see him the Consequences may be fatal, therefore let me persuade you to it. I hope, Madam, replies *Milly*, you don't mean at an Alehouse in *Gravesend*. Where then can you see him? says she; I protest he has almost deprived me of my Senses. Oh! *Milly*, you must see him somewhere. Suppose, Madam, says she, you order one of the Servants to fetch him To-night privately, he may be here this Month and Mr. *Wells* know nothing of it, if he does not hear of his Absence from *Oxford*; if you approve of this, please to enjoin the Servant to Secresy that you send. I think what you propose, replies Mrs. *Wells*, is the safest Course, and shall, therefore order a Pallate in my Closet for him to lie on: You must stay with me To-night, and I'll tell Mr. *Wells* I am indisposed, as I really am. Now, *Milly*, resumes she, I beg Pardon for being concerned in a Scheme with my Husband against you to marry Mr. *Jones*, this unhappy Boy being the Cause of all; but must do you the Justice to say, your Behaviour has been with the strictest Honour in regard to him, and am sure an End might soon be put to the Affair, if you thought proper to consult your own Welfare. I often tell Mr. *Wells*, your Word and Honour is the best Reliance we have, but you know he is doubtful of the World; we shall be all undone if he discovers where my

Son is, for he is very proud of his Project, and is sure it will do. *Milly* replied, you need form no Designs to make me do as you please, exclusive of Matrimony; but once more I assure you, while you live I will not marry any one without your approbation. I am greatly obliged to you, my Dear, returned Mrs. *Wells*, but notwithstanding, I really have been a little jealous of you for concealing your Mind too much from me. In what Respect, Madam? replied she. In loving my *Jack*, and never letting me know of it; but I discovered it in Court when he was on his Trial, and found guilty: Your Concern for him then exceeded mine, which was taken Notice of by his Father, and most of the Gentlemen in Court. Oh! *Milly*, your Good-nature exceeds the Bounds of Gratitude; this it was you kept secret from me, which occasioned the Diffidence I have had since in you. Tell me sincerely now, upon your Honour, do you love him or no? *Milly* replied, Upon my Word, Madam, I don't know; I am sometimes a little doubtful of myself, I confess; but when I think of the frightful Consequences that will ensue if such Thoughts are indulged, by the fierce and continual Anger of my Master, and my Breach of Faith to you, it in some measure suppresses the dangerous Passion when it attempts to seize me; I am strangely circumstanced, thus to fix my Inclinations upon the only Person in the World I ought to think least of; but while I am in your House I shall acquaint you in general of my Thoughts and Actions. Your Passion, my Dear, says she, seems to be in its Infancy, take Care of its growing Strength, or perhaps you may find Honour, Faith, and Justice all too feeble to resist it: You have told me, you don't know whether you love him or no; what makes you suspect yourself? Indeed, Madam, replies *Milly*, many Things; my Head wanders much upon Riches,

Riches, wishing I had now more than ever, to make me acceptable to Mr. *Wells* and you ; when he is here, I am not so apt to go to Mr. *Jervis's* as when he is at *Oxford* ; I have more Pleasure in taking Care of his Things than any other, and when I hear him mentioned 'tis more than ordinary Satisfaction to me, often wishing him as poor as myself, or I as rich as him. To defend me hitherto from these Inclinations, God has been my Aid, and I hope will continue so, that I may keep my Faith and Integrity unspotted to you. Dear Madam, I am ashamed of this Confession, but should be more so if I had concealed it from you ; if this be Love it was involuntary, and no Fault of mine. Upon my Word, says Mrs. *Wells*, it looks very like it, and I think I am as oddly embarrassed as yourself, I can hear and bear it with Coolness, but Mr. *Wells* cannot, and I am sure if you marry him his Father would not, if he was starving, give him a Shilling while he lived ; my Advice to you is to temporize the Affair, Time makes strange and various Changes ; you are both very young ; if it be for your Good, God will bring it about by such Ways, if he has any Hand in it, as will secure your Honour ; wait for his Call, and don't by your Impatience break the Father's Heart of the Man you love. Have you Mercy upon him, if his Son has none. I will be passive in the whole Affair, but will not release you from your Promises to me. Madam, replied she, all the Thoughts and Recourses of my Heart and Mind shall be faithfully laid open to you. I believe, says Mrs. *Wells*, 'tis time now to send for him. She replied, I will call *Tom* to you, and please to give him your Orders. Do so, says her Mistress.

She went for him, and when *Tom* came, Mrs. *Wells* told him *Jack* was at the *Man of War* in *Gravesend*, that he was afraid of his Dada, for lea-

ving *Oxford* without his Consent; that she wanted to see him, and desired him to bring him privately to her Room that Night; and to manage his Commission with Secresy and Caution, as he regarded her Good-will, which he promised to do, and went off highly honoured, as he thought, with his Mistress's Confidence.

This Fellow courted Miss *Betty's* Maid, and bragg'd to her, by way of Secret, of the Trust his Mistress had in him, preferable to any other Servant. The Maid, not willing to keep such a Piece of News from her young Lady, immediately told her that a Plan was formed for bringing her Brother in at one of the Back Windows that Evening; either by her or Miss, the whole was betrayed to Mr. *Wells*. He could scarcely believe them, being almost confident that his Son was in the Country, but was determined to watch the Event.

When *Milly* came to him from Mrs. *Wells*, to acquaint him of her Indisposition, that she must be obliged to confine herself to her own Chamber that Night, he answered sternly, She may do as she pleases. When she returned, Mrs. *Wells* asked her what he said. I assure you, Madam, said she, he says you may do as you please, and in my Opinion seemed extremely angry. The Lord help us, says Mrs. *Wells*, if he knew what we were about.

The Hour of Adventure approached, and Mr. *Wells* took his Stand, judging well of the Window they designed to come in at. He scarcely had waited half an Hour when he heard the Sash lifting up, and saw *Tom* go in, and after him his hopeful Son, upon whom he rushed like a Lion, seized him and got him down, then swore if *Tom* stirred he would shoot him dead. The repeated Cries of Thieves, Robbers, Murderers, instantly alarmed and assembled the whole Family with Lights, where they be-
held

old *Tom* and Master *Jack* in as bad a Condition as
 er the renowned *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* were.

The Reader may better judge than I can de-
 scribe the Astonishment and Confusion of Mrs.
Wells and the unhappy *Milly*; when they beheld
 is Scene, which would form an excellent Design
 r the famous *Hogarth*, to exhibit to Drollery the
 fferent Passions, Cares, and Anxieties that exist-
 in one Family: Here was the Father exulting
 er his disappointed Captives; the Mother bewail-
 g both her own and her Son's Fate; *Milly* weep-
 g for her suffering Lover; *Tom*, the Agent, sor-
 wfully wishing he had had better Conduct; the
 appointed Youth seeing and adoring the Cause of
 Disaster; and the amazed Mr. *Jones* convinced
 Addresses were fruitless. Those who delighted
 Mischief inwardly rejoiced at this Medley of
 onfusion, yet externally professed Pity and Friend-
 p for each Party.

To proceed: Mr. *Wells* insisted strenuously to
 ve Ropes brought him; the Servants were obli-
 d to comply, and took them out of the Bed-
 ads; when he got them, with Pistol in Hand he
 dered *Tom* to be pinioned, which no one seemed
 ry for but the Girl that betrayed him, who was
 w conscious of her Error: the unfortunate Ma-
 r *Jack*'s Turn came next, which the inexorable
 ther rigidly insisted upon, and Mrs. *Wells* as vio-
 ntly opposed, saying, You Monster, do you mean
 murder my Child? You Villains, says she to
 e Servants, if you touch my Son I will have you
 destroyed To-morrow. You fret a little now,
 adam, says he, but that Fellow (pointing to de-
 ted *Tom*) would be as ready to usher a Man to
 ur Bed, as he was to bring this Reprobate to your
 om, where he acted as Pimp, and you as Baud
 your Son.

After this Scurrillity, he positively declared instant Death against *James*, one of the Servants, if he did not bind him, presenting his Pistol to him, upon which *Milly* ran out, and instantly returned with a drawn Sword, and immediately put the Point of it to his Breast, saying, Let him go, you Ruffian, or this Instant you shall die; let your Master execute his Vengeance upon me, if he thinks proper; pierce this Breast of mine, Sir, for 'tis Death to me to see him thus used, and instantly snatched the Ropes from his Arms. I will take Care of you, young Woman, To-morrow, returns Mr. *Wells*. You ought, Sir, said she, and very good Care too, for I could have been married to your Son before you knew any thing of it, if the Sense of Gratitude I owe this worthy Lady (pointing to her Mistress who was weeping) had not prevented me. Your Son left *Oxford* without your Leave, and came to *Gravesend*; he wrote to me, begging I would see him, which I could by no means comply with out of the Presence of his Mamma, who sent for him in this private Manner, to prevent the ill Consequences that might have ensued to himself, as also your Displeasure; nor would you have known any thing of the Matter but for that Booby of a Butler that was sent to *Oxford*. If your Son was seven Years in a House with me I would not have him, because I am certain the Effects would be extreme Poverty to him, as you would not in any case assist him. Doubt me not while I live in one House with you, which I always will, if you permit me with Peace and Quietness, and propose no more Matches to me.

Mr. *Wells* became surprisingly calmed, saying, *Milly*, if you did not love or had not some Design upon my Son, why would you interpose as to my Correction? Sir, I must tell you, and all present, I do love him, and it rends my Heart when I see

him

him distressed; notwithstanding, for his own Good, the Repose and Tranquillity of you and your Family, I will retire where you please to appoint. Mr. *Wells* was now quite pacified, begging his Lady's Pardon, adding to *Milly*, with some Complaisance, if it obliges you *Tom* shall be untied. It does not I assure you, Sir, said she; for my own Part, I did not care if he was hanged; 'twas I recommended him to your Spouse, as a Man that could perform a secret Expedition, and it has been intirely owing to his Blab that this Affair has been so noisy; however let him loose, I don't care what becomes of him; upon which *Tom* was set at Liberty, and walking off made a most graceless Figure.

Concord was once more restored, and Master *Jack* admitted to lodge as first intended. By this Instance we see how darling Children and Pets get the better of their fond Parents in the most unreasonable Affairs.

Master *Jack* now triumphed in his Turn, while the despairing Mr. *Jones* languished out the Night with shocking Reflections upon what he had heard and seen. At first his View was to make it a prudential Match, but was unhappily so captivated, that what he only play'd with, now discomposed his Peace and Quiet of Mind, and determined him to go off next Morning.

Generally what makes one miserable makes another happy; it was so in this Case; while the unfortunate Mr. *Jones* tortured his Heart with melancholy Thoughts, happy Master *Jack* was with his beloved Mamma and heroic Fair one, from whose Softness and feminine Charms none could expect she would draw a Sword, even in Defence of the Man she loved, and expose her precious Body to the Fire and Thunder of a Pistol, prepared in such Hands as wished her annihilated. But who, upon
great

great Occasions, have equal Courage to the Virtuous and Innocent?

Mrs. *Wells* desired her Son to relate to her what happened from his being at *Gravesend* till he fell into the Hands of his Father, with which he readily complied, saying, I waited at *Gravesend* with great Impatience to hear from my beloved *Milly*; sometimes I thought she did not get my Letters, or if she did that she did not regard them, which determined me to come myself; just as I left the House I was met by *Tom*, who told me it was too early, and desired me to return. His Mamma here interrupted him, saying, 'twas always unlucky to turn back; and then desired him to proceed. *Tom*, continued he, advised me to take a Sup of Brandy, as he called it, but I declined, saying, if I drank any thing it should be Port, but he might get Brandy, or what he liked, which he did to that Excess as quite intoxicated him; he then insisted I should hear him sing *Happy, happy Groves*, which when performed he told me I was crossed in Love, and that was also his Misfortune, but that there were in the House those whose Love was much more crossed than either; I desired to know his Meaning, but he refused, saying, he would never tell a Secret; I then gave him the other half Pint of Brandy, which produc'd its Effect; he then told me it was Mr. *Jones*; I desired him to explain himself, and if *Milly* was inclined to marry that Gentleman he would now inform me of it; he said, Women were sometimes for one, and sometimes for another, that they hardly knew their own Minds, but were all resolved to get Husbands, God help himself, there were many a Design plotted against him. Says his Mamma, pray let us have no more of his Stuff, but inform me how you came home. Why, replies *Jack*, being teased with the Fellow's Nonsense all the Way, which I could

could not put up on any other account. When we came near the House, we saw no Light but in your Room and my Sister *Betty's*; he then lifted up the Sash and went in, I followed him, and was seized by the Throat by my Father; it so confounded me I knew nothing of what passed till I saw you all about me. You see, Child, says she, what Distractions you occasion. It is no Fault of mine, I assure you, said he, for was I permitted, I could go backwards and forwards quiet enough. 'Tis now very late, says his Mother, and high Time we should all go to our Repose. Permit me only, says *Jack*, to render Thanks to *Milly* for my Deliverance this Night. There is none due to me, says she, for I would do the same for any Person your Mamma loves as she does you. Dear *Milly*, says he, I cannot bear your putting it upon that footing, it is ungenerous in you, who knows my Sufferings, to speak to me with the Coolness which you always do, but yet your Actions seem to have the Signs of Love. I assure you *Jack*, replies his Mother, Signs are better than Words. Apply to your Mamma, returns *Milly*, for my Love, and, take my Word, all my Concessions to you must proceed from her Pleasure; but not a Word more To-night, but withdraw. I insist upon a Kiss, says he, from you both, to welcome me home; which being complied with he retired to Bed.

Mrs. *Wells* then addressed *Milly* thus, I thought you were a better Judge of our Servants than to send that drunken Wretch for *Jack*; how was it discovered? *Milly* replied, I assure you, Madam, I cannot imagine how Mr. *Wells* happened to hear of it; and as to *Tom*, I always thought him a sober Fellow. Did you make any Remarks upon his Drunken Discourse with Master *Jack*? No, replies Mrs. *Wells*; what could be inferred from the Nonsense of the Wretch when drunk? When they were speaking

speaking of Love, says *Milly*, *Tom* told him there was a crosser Love than either of theirs in the House, but he did not care to speak of it; I would have you consider who it can be. Were I to think eternally, replies *Mrs. Wells*, I could make nothing of it; we have none to think of but *Betty*, and you know she does not stir out but when either you or I go with her. I have not the least Uneasiness upon me as to Miss *Betty's* Conduct, says *Milly*, and notwithstanding, my Suspicions are raised so as to think there is something wrong, and how to unravel it I cannot tell, yet I believe the Brute is not inventive. I hope your Suspicions are groundless, says she, but they begin to alarm me: Who have you any doubt of? If any thing be working up against you, answers *Milly*, I believe *Hester*, Miss *Betty's* Maid, may have a Hand in it, though I never saw any thing amiss by her, but she goes and comes to and from *Gravesend* every Day; what her Business is I cannot tell. Call her to me in the Morning, says *Mrs. Wells*, and I will examine her. That's not quite so prudent, replies *Milly*, she may conceal from you any Affair she is about; but I would advise you, when she is going to *Gravesend* to have her brought to you, and search her, or order me to do it, on some Pretence or other. I will, says she, but I shall be at a Loss for a Pretence. You may easily think of something; question her close, says *Milly*, about Master *Jack*, whether she knows he was there; seem to suspect it is some under-hand Practices of his she is carrying on, and have her searched upon her denying it. You must watch her, says *Mrs. Wells*, and when you see her ready to go, tell her I want her, and bring her here.

This Matter being settled, they went to Rest. Next Day *Milly* took care to manage as agreed on the Night before, and when she saw *Hester* come from

from Miss *Betty*, she told her Mrs. *Wells* had some Business with her; who replied, she would wait upon her presently, but must first speak to her young Mistress. *Milly* insisted on her first going in to Mrs. *Wells*. *Hester* as positively refused, and was going to Miss *Betty*'s Apartment, when she laid hold of her, and a Scuffle had ensued if Master *Jack*, who was always as near *Milly* as possible, had not interposed, and would have used *Hester* with Severity, if *Milly* had not prevented it. Miss *Betty*, alarmed with the Noise, being near her Apartment, came to them. When she heard *Milly* insist that her Maid *Hester* should instantly go to her Mamma, she on her Knees implored her not to force her to go, saying, if she did it would ruin her for ever. You know, says she, I always loved you, therefore let her go, or I am undone. Miss, replied she, I always loved you, and to prove my Sincerity I must bring this Creature to your Mamma, who will have no hand in your Ruin, but will save you from it, if possible. Master *Jack*, being affected with his Sister's Intreaty, begged to let *Hester* go where she pleased. She replied, Sir, if you don't help me this Minute to take her to your Mamma, never more speak a Word to me. This Order he dare not disobey, and immediately helped to tug her along. When *Hester* found 'twas in vain resisting, she went quietly, upon being promised she should be as little exposed as possible, upon any Discovery she should make.

When they came to the Door of Mrs. *Wells*'s Apartment, *Milly* says to Master *Jack*, I now desire you will return to your Sister *Betty*, till you hear or see from me, and don't let her out of your Sight. He thought himself honoured by her Commands, and punctually obeyed them. *Hester* and she then went into the Room, and found Mr. and Mrs. *Wells* together, who seemed surprized at the
Hurry

Hurry they were in; but Mrs. *Wells* had informed her Husband of *Milly's* Suspicions of *Hester*, a little before. Now *Milly* told them all that passed since she first desired *Hester* to come to her, and her Promise of Favour if she discovered the Truth; then turning to *Hester*, Must I search you, says she, or will you make a voluntary Discovery of all you know? Do the latter if you expect Favour. *Hester* then replied in the Affirmative; and taking a Letter out of her Pocket gave it to Mrs. *Wells*, saying, When you read that it will explain what I have to discover. They then looked at the Superscription, and knew it to be the unhappy Miss *Betty's* Hand, directed To *James Grose, Esq;* The Contents as follows:

S I R,

AS I am fully convinced by my Maid that you are a Man of Honour and Fortune, and that it would be of infinite Disservice to you to have any Person by at our Marriage, but those you mention and my Maid, I will meet you this Night in our Summer-house, precisely at twelve o'Clock, where the Ceremony may be performed, for I will go no farther till that is done. Keep your Carriage, in which we are to go to *London*, a good way from the House, and we will walk to it. When Matters are settled, I hope to amuse you about some Adventures that happened here last Night, which I, by the Advice of *Hester*, brought about, to involve *Milly*, that she might have enough to do for herself, and not to mind others; for she keeps the Servants and me in as much Awe as if all here was her own. I am, dear Mr. *Grose*,

Yours till Death,

Elizabeth Wells.

This

This Discovery fell like Thunder upon Mr and Mrs. *Wells*, for she was their most beloved Daughter. At this Juncture they appeared real Objects of Compassion, notwithstanding their Wealth. *Milly* gave them strong and nervous Reasons, to convince them it was the Hand of Providence that brought it to light, by Means that could never be expected from any Depth of human Wisdom. Then addressing herself to Mr. *Wells* in particular, said, The Scheme of your Son's pretended Marriage at *Oxford*, your Butler being sent there for him, the Reports of his having run away from thence to *Gravesend*, *Tom's* being sent there, likewise his getting drunk, your Discovery he was to come home, and that made by Miss and her Maid, the long Confusion that ensued, which banished the Thoughts of Sleep from Mrs. *Wells*, and greatly indisposed her, together with some Questions ask'd about his being at *Gravesend*, and telling us *Tom's* Discourse with him, occasioned the first of our Suspicions, and ended as you now see. Consider these Circumstances separately, you may think them of little Signification, yet all have combined to save your Child, I believe, from Ruin, and shews a Confirmation of God's Grace and Care of yourself and Family, for which you have Reason to be thankful, and not to repine. Mrs. *Wells* replied, 'tis very happy we have discovered it; but what shall we do with her? Why, says he, lock her up for half a Year, and let her have nothing but Bread and Water to live on. *Milly* interposed, saying, If you'll give me Leave, I'll take it upon myself to save her and please you both, provided you will comply with a few easy Conditions; to which they consented, and desired her to propose them. My Advice then, said she, is to pity and forgive her; shew her the same Affection as if no such Affair had happened; let her be constantly in her Mamma's

ma's Room by Night, and by Day not suffer her to be a Minute without one or the other of us, and for us both to make this sort of Bondage as easy and as happy as possible to her. As to *Hester*, I would recommend to you, to take no other Notice of her but to pay and discharge her this Minute, and never to make farther Enquiry about the Affair.

They agreed to these Proposals with Pleasure; accordingly *Hester* was discharged, and thought herself happy to get off so well.

They all now went to Miss *Betty*, and found her Brother with her; she was terrified almost to Death at the sight of them, and instantly begged for Mercy. Her Parents not only forgave her, but embraced her, saying, *Milly* had secured her Peace, as also their Love, upon the Conditions before mentioned, to which she with Pleasure complied. In the Confusion, they had forgot to enquire who this *James Grose*, Esq; was; but they were informed by Miss *Betty*, he was the Tutor who came home with her Brother, who had imposed a Belief upon her that he had a great Estate left him. Master *Jack* informed them, he was expelled the College upwards of a Year ago, for scandalous Practices, that he was not worth a single Shilling, but imposed upon all he could fasten an Acquaintance with.

Milly, after this Piece of Service, seemed rather to be adored by Mr. and Mrs. *Wells*, than suspected of her Sincerity. She was loved and feared by the whole Family; her Dominion was absolute, and none more regarded her than Miss *Betty*, who every Day discovered new Beauties in her Mind, which being improved by wise Precepts and Example, charmed her with such virtuous Ideas, that in less than a Year, by her Mamma's Company and hers, she was thought capable of being trusted with

her

her own Conduct. She often in that time spoke of her Danger, and shrunk with Horror at the Thoughts of it, and always embraced and thanked *Milly* for her Deliverance.

Master *Wells*, who was now come to Man's Estate (but we shall still call him Master, to distinguish him from his Father) had a tall, handsome, comely Person, and a very good Face; he urged his Passion frequently, and she would make him no other Return, but that she was ready to obey him when his Father and Mother were willing, and never till then. His Opportunities of speaking to her were as often as he pleased, his Parents having a firm Reliance upon her Honour, which they knew was impregnable.

Master *Jack* was observed for three Weeks to be very pensive and melancholy, and to seek the Advantages of Privacy with his Charmer seldomer than since he commenced her Lover: His Mother and she, who were always very communicative, were surprized at the Cause, and continued so till he spoke to *Milly*, when he met her in the Garden. My Dear, says he, I long have wanted an Opportunity to speak to you. I would have given you one sooner, said she, if I had known it; but you may now declare what you have to say. He replied, I am superstitious as to this Place; here I made my first Declaration to you, and here I fear it will end for ever. Whatever you determine now, says she, may Peace and Tranquillity ever attend you, which are my sincere Wishes. I think, returns he, and every body knows, that you have uncommon Virtue and Greatness of Soul; if so, consequently you must have Generosity and Gratitude for a Wretch you have made miserable, that to your Knowledge loves you more, than all the World besides, and would die ten thousand Deaths to serve you, if possible. Desire any thing in my
H Power,

Power, says she, that I can with Honour grant, and I will instantly with Pleasure perform it; I hope you know and love me too well to hint any thing that is not consistent with the strictest Rules of Virtue, if you keep that in view I will have no Difference with you. I think you are a Man of Honour, or I should not esteem you upon any account; as such, consider my Obligations to your Parents, what a poor distressed young Creature I was when taken into their Family, who have been continually heaping Favours of one kind or other upon me; likewise their Confidence in me, and in particular as to you: Would you have me perfidiously betray their Faith in me? No; I would rather perish than be guilty of a base or ungrateful Action; if I should, you ought never to trust me. Do you believe a little Temptation would make me betray you? I scorn it; but I fear I strain Honour too hard, by amusing you with Hopes hereafter, which in the mean time keeps you on with me, and diverts you from other Objects that would be far more acceptable to your Parents, and suitable to your Fortune: I am sensible I do amiss by it, but have not Power or Force enough to resist so much of my Inclination or Love for you; I don't even apply to my powerful and mighty Aid, which is God, to divert my Affections from you; but he knows they are sincere, and not for your expected Wealth. Have Pity upon me for the future, and ask for no more than I am capable of granting.

You talk greatly, replies he, of your Obligations to my Parents; I believe, had you got into a Family of equal Wealth, your Services would be as well rewarded; they at this time know the Excellencies of your Mind, they know you love me, and likewise my unalterable Affection for you; they have, in Estate and Money, upwards of one hundred thousand Pounds, yet their Avarice is so unbounded,

ded, they reject you for want of ten thousand Pounds, though they are sure I never shall do any Good if I do not obtain you ; they would approve of me if I should betray my Vows to you, and marry any Creature who had such a Fortune ; this Greediness for Wealth, in them who have so much, you will allow is vicious, unless you become an Advocate against Virtue ; they have and do want to force my Inclinations, that is, to forsake you and marry another ; this you know and must allow is cruel, and consequently bad. That your Obligations are greater to me than to them is most certain ; the Fortune they are so anxious about for me, is sacrificing us both ; it is intended as my Property, I give it up, and will take you without it. Look well into the State of Things, and you will find it of my Side the Question, that you owe Gratitude not to them ; I once more assure you, they have not rewarded the Tenth of your Merits ; nor do I say this like a Lover, but eternally to end this Dispute one way or other. As to your imaginary Notions of Honour in this Case, here is ten thousand Pounds as a Fortune for you, say you got it by the Death of some Relation ; suppose it a Cheat, if the Contradiction may be allowed, you must admit it an honest one.

Milly took the Bills, and saw they were on the Bank of *England*, and said to him, No Cheat can be honest or virtuous : How did you get this Wealth ? He replied, I have been busy about it ever since I came of Age, which is three Weeks ; my Aunt knows my Case and pities me ; I prevailed on her to lend me this Sum on my Bond, but if they know it, there will be a Breach between them for ever.

I am surprized, says *Milly*, you should tell me this. Why, replies he, I hope you have more Esteem for me than to divulge it. Your Presumpti-

ons are very rude, says she, especially as you have often heard me protest I would acquaint your Mamma with every thing that passed between us; and can you suppose I shall keep an Affair of this Nature a Secret from her, especially when you are so polite as to invite me to be an Accomplice, not only to impose upon your Father and Mother, but yourself also? You have begun your Maturity like a Soul, to run yourself ten thousand Pounds in Debt in twenty one Days! a fine Beginning truly! and withal to expect I should forge a Lie, that I got it by some Relation, when I have not one that I ever expect a Shilling by the Death of. I find, Sir, you don't know me yet; but be assured I am confirmed in Virtue, and will strictly adhere to its Tenets, according to the best of my Knowledge; my Judgment may be wrong, but my Intentions are good. Look, Sir, for some other Tool, that would betray the World for Interest, I am not of that Stamp. You certainly offer me a Bribe more tempting than Empires. I know the Imposition would take, let the Money come how it would, so I had it. You seem, replies he, to resent my Offers, and what I have said, which can be done with no other View than to make my Life miserable; but to languish any longer in Suspence I will not, and therefore now make one Request to you, which may perhaps agree with your airy Notions of Honour, that is, from henceforth receive not my Addresses; if you have any Mercy, use me with all the Contempt and Ill-nature in your Power; never more say a good Word to me, nor a kind one of me; such Behaviour may be of Service. On the other Hand, I will summon all the Spirit and Manhood I am Master of, to combat my unhappy and ill-placed Passion.

When

What you now say, returns *Milly*, I know ought to be the Course we should both take, but I am unfortunate even in this, not having Power to do it; I must still love you, but it shall be with my Honour and Virtue: If you are determined to rouse your Spirit and crush your Passion, the best Conduct is to have me sent away, Absence, they say, is the most sovereign Remedy, but you have now distracted me; she then gave him his Bills and concluded weeping.

The first Opportunity she told Mrs. *Wells* every Syllable that passed between them, and enjoined her to the strictest Secrecy as to the Bills, desiring her to shew no Resentment to the indulgent Aunt. My dear *Milly*, says Mrs. *Wells*, I can never sufficiently admire your Virtue, and am so far from resenting what my Sister has done, that I declare had I the Money myself I would give it you; I have but twelve hundred Pounds unknown to my Spouse, which is but a Trifle. Are you not surprized at the Contrivance of that Boy thus to cheat us; I declare I am sorry he told you how he got it, and wish sincerely it had been done without either of our Knowledge; doubtless you and he are quite out now. We are, Madam, replied *Milly*, till we meet again, I suppose. That is all to be sure, says she.

Mr. *Wells* just then coming in, with a pleasing Countenance said he had News to tell them, *Jack*, says he, desired my Leave to travel, to which I have consented; he's so anxious for going, that he would fain have set off for *Dover* as this Day, had I not persuaded him to stay till To-morrow. *Milly* assured him his Linen could not be got ready in that time. If he has but the one Shirt to his Back, replies Mr. *Wells*, he is determined to go. 'Tis Prudence, I think, said Mrs. *Wells*, to keep him at home under our own Eyes, or perhaps he may

hrow himself away upon some shewy Beggar or other abroad. That will be more his own Loss than ours, says he, and I know I shall never forgive my Father's not letting me see the World; *Jack* never shall have that Charge against me, and all the Inconvenience it at present suggests to me is, we shall hear from him too often upon the score of Money, as he well knows how to spend it.

This Discourse awakened all the Tenderneſs of poor *Milly's* Soul, which being observed made him ſay (with a ſeeming Intention to comfort her) if he goes my Eſtate will bring him back again, and then he may do for you; though we all know him to be a very inconstant Rogue; I was ſo myſelf when young, and cannot blame him. You ſeem, ſaid *Mrs. Wells*, rather to inſult than comfort us. I confeſs, ſays he, I am pleaſed with his Deſire of travelling, for one particular Reaſon, which is, on his Return he'll often amuſe me a long Winter's Evening with Accounts of *France, Spain, Italy, Germany, Ruſſia, Siberia, Greece, Turkey, Egypt, &c. &c.* You have given him Leave, ſays *Mrs. Wells*, to ſee as many Countries, that to know them as a Traveller ought to do, would take him up all his Life. I wiſh, ſays he, he may ſee them all before he ſees an Acre of my Land. You know, replies *Mrs. Wells*, it will break my Heart if he goes, and I believe it is done with that Deſign. *Mr. Wells* then took his Leave, and left them to diſpoſe of his and his Son's wife Reſolutions as they thought proper.

Upon the humane Diſpoſition of *Mrs. Wells* all *Milly's* languiſhing Hopes now reſted; ſhe threw herſelf proſtrate at her Feet, ſaying, Dear Madam, I beſeech your Patience and Compaſſion for what I am about to declare, it being, you'll think, very extraordinary for your Servant thus humbly to beg your Son in Marriage. The Diſparity of our For-

tunes

tunes and Alliances you know ; I flatter myself I have some Merit, which in time of Distress is allowable to be spoke of ; first, I came young to you, and was formed by yourself to Truth, Integrity, and Honour, which blessed Acquisitions I faithfully employed in your Service ; your Daughters I likewise took such Care of as merited your Approbation ; your Comfort, Content, and Pleasure was my Study and Practice. Your Son early addressed me, and the first Dawn of his Passion I communicated faithfully to you, together with all its Progresses ; when, for the Prevention of this growing Evil, you ordered me away, I without the least Reluctance passively obeyed ; when called upon again by you to attend him in his Sickness, I cheerfully returned, and upon his Recovery he constantly solicited me to marry him, and this Morning he put a Fortune into my Hands to induce me to comply, but I would not agree to the Deception. It's certain you have liberally paid me for all I have done, but I have lost my Serenity and Content of Mind for ever, which was worth more to me than all you have. My Love for your Son stole upon me like a Thief, and has robbed me of all Tranquillity and Happiness. You are now my Judge, and as I know you to be virtuous and good, let me not fall a Sacrifice for my Truth and Probity to you ; raise a desponding Wretch to some Glimmerings of the Hopes you lately gave me, and continue to keep him at home ; dispose of me then as you please.

Rise, my dear *Milly*, says Mrs. *Wells*, and let me embrace you ; he shall be yours, or I will be the Partner of your Sorrows ; I will for ever look upon and love you as my own Child ; all the Interest a fond Mother can have with him shall be used to make him continue at home.

Miss *Betty* coming from her Brother, to acquaint his Mamma he desired to speak with her, interrupted for the present their affectionate Conversation; Mrs. *Wells* ordered him to come to her, saying, there was none but *Milly* with her. He knows that, replied Miss *Betty*, but he wants to see you in private. This was a shocking Damp to *Milly's* Spirits, to be obliged to retire upon his account, and dashed all her Hopes. Tell him, says Mrs. *Wells* to her Daughter, I will go to him immediately. I am greatly surprized at this Alteration, says Mrs. *Wells*; what will you do? I can't tell indeed, Madam, replies *Milly*, but shall rely upon God as the only solid Happiness, who never abandons suffering Virtue. You may depend upon my doing you all the Service I can, says she, and then went to her Son.

We will now leave *Milly* to her Contemplations, and return to the Mother and Son.

I think, Son, says she, you were not very polite to oblige me to come here, when you ought to have waited upon me. Madam, says he, I hope you will excuse me when you hear my Reasons, and assure yourself, I have such a thorough Sense and Remembrance of your Love and Tenderneſs, as will for ever make me dutiful and submissive to your Pleasure. My Follies were all known to you, who was always ready to forgive my unhappy Passions; my first at *Oxford* and last at home were both afflicting to you; how shall I atone for the Anxieties I have given you? By your future Duty, and Prayers to God to pardon you, says his Mother, in which I will earnestly join. This pray do when my Disobedience ceases, says he, and that cannot be while I continue at home. She then desired to know his Reasons. Madam, replies he, you know my Love for *Milly*, I cannot disengage myself from it, nor ever will be able while we are

in

in one Kingdom, which makes me determine to go abroad to banish from my Mind, if possible, all Thoughts of her. She trifles and uses me, I think, extremely ill, for which Reason I desired to speak to you, to request your Blessing and Permission to proceed upon my intended Travels, which my Father has previously granted. Your Passion for the young Woman at *Oxford*, says she, gave me great Concern, and so did the Beginning of your Amour with *Milly*, but I am thoroughly convinced she deserves you; my Obligations on many accounts are very great to her, and in particular for the Confidence she had in me, by not marrying you without my Consent; nor did she hear a Word of Love from you but what she told me. I am satisfied as to her Virtue and Conduct, and am persuaded you will join with me in Opinion. I love her equal to any Child I have, and she has afforded me more Comfort than any of them. For these and many more Reasons I charge you not to abandon her, on pain of my Displeasure. Perhaps you disregard her for the Esteem she has for me; this I must tell you, if you had half the Duty or Love for me you pretend, it ought to engage you the more to her. How barbarous and ungrateful were you to her To-day, so publickly to affront her, by not coming into the Room where she was; which I believe will break her Heart, and no Fortune after will ever recompence your Loss. In short, as much as ever I was against her, I am now more for her, though I dare not let your Father know it. 'Tis my absolute Command, that you this Day make a publick Concession for the Insult you gave her, and entirely lay by your Thoughts of Rambling; but let it not be known that this Advice proceeds from me. I assure you, Madam, says he, my Duty and Love compels me to act as you direct; but you must give me Leave to go abroad,

abroad, if you don't, I shall be laughed at by all who know and hear of the Preparations that are made for my going, and it will provoke my Father beyond measure; I will only stay the Time you permit me, and I can see a good deal of *Paris* in three Months. Before you go any where, says she, make *Milly* easy, and may God's Blessing and mine for ever be upon you both; I shall instantly go to her, and desire you will soon follow me. I am, Madam, says he, all Obedience.

Milly was severely agitated by Hopes and Fears in her Absence, and worked to a greater pitch at her Presence, as being near the Knowledge of her Doom. Mrs. *Wells*, whose Manners were always grave and commanded Respect, told her she had no News, but that he was determin'd to go abroad, and would come to her presently, desiring her to compose herself, and not to appear to him in such Disorder; for Men, says she, where they know they have absolute Power, are often apt to abuse it. Miss *Betty* joined them by one little Chat or other, to which *Milly's* Thoughts were very foreign, and a little recovered her Spirits.

Master *Jack* came to them, and on his Knees, having *Milly's* Hand in his, begged her Pardon, declaring he would not rise till she granted it. I do with all my Heart, says she, and with a Blush desired a Salute, which was the first time she offered him such a Favour: But this little Forgetfulness of hers proceeded from unexpectedly seeing her offended Lover at her Feet, which occasioned such Raptures of Joy as none can conceive but those who are possessed of a virtuous Love. Miss *Betty* was sent away on some Pretence by her Mother, for she was cautious of speaking while she was by.

This was a happy and a sudden Change with *Milly*. We have now got, says Master *Jack*, ad-
dressing

dressing himself to her, over one Difficulty, for I
 have promised never to forsake you, nor will I ever
 marry any other while you live. My Mammina loves
 you for a Child, as well as I do for a Partner for
 Life, and all that is now wanting is my Dada's
 Consent. His Mammina replied, you will find that
 difficult to obtain, but a little Time and proper
 Management will I hope bring him to it; I shall
 be always teasing him to overlook her want of
 Fortune, and use my utmost Endeavours to gain
 his Consent, but am heartily sorry you proposed
 going abroad to him. Madam, says he, I will
 make a very short stay, but I must go to satisfy
 him. Milly replied, with Looks that demanded
 Pity, I find, dear Madam, he is resolved to go.
 I believe he must, says she, now he has put it so
 in his Father's Head; but he shall give you some
 Security for fulfilling his Engagements to you like
 a Man of Honour, and then immediately ordered
 him to give her a Promise from under his Hand,
 that he would consummate her Happiness whenever
 she thought proper; to which he most chearfully
 agreed, and instantly wrote as follows:

I *John Wells* the younger, of the Town of
 and County of do promise in the Pre-
 sence of Almighty God, and of *Sarah Wells*, my
 Mother, to marry *Emilia Finch*, of said Town and
 County, when she the said *Emilia Finch* requires
 me; and by a farther Promise, in the same Pre-
 sence, I oblige myself or my Heirs, in case I dis-
 appoint her, or marry another, to pay her, the said
Emilia Finch, sixty thousand Pounds, as Damage
 and Compensation for such Disappointment. Given
 under my Hand this Day and Year
 in the Presence of *Sarah Wells*.

John Wells.
 This

This when wrote he gave to *Milly*, and Mrs. *Wells* joining their Hands, they solemnly and reciprocally vowed eternal Faith to each other as Man and Wife.

This is an Instance how a Servant may captivate and gain a surprising Ascendency over a Master or Mistress, when their Actions are govern'd by Faith and Integrity; and points out to us, that though our Condition in this Life may be low, yet if our Minds are fortified with Virtue and Sobriety, we generally arrive at the ultimate of our Wishes; tho' our Wants and Distresses may make us repine, yet a steady Adherence to Truth, Honour, and Integrity, will in the End crown our Desires with Success. We may be reflected upon, but the Consequences resulting from those Pursuits are Content and Happiness, Blessings unknown to the Wicked and Vicious: Those immersed in worldly Cares, how unhappy are they, unless awakened in their Career by some Adversity or other, which startles them like sudden Claps of Thunder, then they behold the Cause why Virtue and Tranquillity always go Hand in Hand together, and are convinced, the Miseries and Happiness of human Kind are measured out in due Proportions to our Vice or Virtue.

To return to our Purpose. *Milly's* Happiness, by the Gratitude of Mrs. *Wells*, was now so far advanced, that she seemed to enjoy all this World afforded, especially what she loved most, which was, Master *Jack*, bound in Chains of Obligation as well as Love to depend upon her Will and Prudence. Mrs. *Wells* advised them to be cautious, otherwise the Consequences might be very bad, and that she hoped a little Time would remove all Difficulties; when Mr. *Wells* found his going abroad made no Change in his Affection for her, he might perhaps then despair of it, and come into Measures agree-
able

able, which she hoped to effect. I wish, says *Milly*, some Scheme might be formed to keep him at home without provoking Mr. *Wells*. I fear not, replied she; but if you or he thinks of one pursue it, I assure you it will be a great Pleasure to me. I must certainly go a little while, says Master *Jack*, but you may invite me home by Letter to make me happy, and I will return as soon as sent for. Mrs. *Wells* being of the same Opinion, *Milly*, who always acquiesced against her Inclination, gave it up.

Notwithstanding all that was done to make *Milly*'s Happiness compleat, the Preparations which passed thro' her own Hands for his Departure fulfilled all her Joys, and a constant Melancholy seized her Mind, as if inspired with a Knowledge of the dreadful Calamities that ensued. While Mr. *Wells* rejoiced at his Son's going abroad, it tormented others in his Family.

Next Morning he waited upon his Mamma and dear *Milly*, and gave them both as much Comfort as they could receive. The Fulness of their Grief was such that they could say very little, enjoining him to keep a constant Correspondence with them; that one Letter would do for both, and that they should be inconsolable if he missed a Packet; but desired him not to mention any thing of the Contract, for fear the Letters should fall into the Hands of his Father, which might provoke him out of measure.

This being agreed upon, a Servant came to him from his Father, to inform him he would be late for his Day's Journey. Inconceivable was the shocking Affliction this Summons for his Departure gave them both; you might see Nature, Virtue, Love, Truth, and Sincerity, without Disguise or Delusion (a Sight not very common!) They both looked at their Watches, and said, he had time

to stay an Hour longer. They then endeavoured to perswade him not to go, let the Consequence be what it would, saying, if he went the World thro' he would never get into Company that loved him so well. All their Art and Rhetoric was made use of to dissuade him from his intended Journey, telling him, it was much against both their Consents if he went abroad.

Their Grief affected Master *Jack* so much, that he was very near rebelling against his Father, by inclining to stay at home; but he coming in some Heat, occasioned by his Impatience for his going, just when *Jack's* Resolutions were tottering and dissolving, soon roused him, saying, *Jack*, hear no more of the idle Prate of these Women, you will never come to any Good if you do; go like a Man and see the World and what is doing in it, let me hear of your dancing with some of the Princesses of the Blood at *Versailles*, I will then shew your Letters with Pleasure to my Friends. I wish I had had such a Father as you have; mine would have me stay at home and learn to make Pies and Pasties, to save his Money, but I was never sparing of your Education: Ask your Mother's Blessing, take a farewell Kiss of *Milly*, and come along; I will go nine or ten Miles with you, for travelling late is bad; he then tore him away, and from that time they never all met together.

Love that softens the most martial Spirits, and unbends the greatest Souls, had its usual Effects upon these separating Lovers. *Jack* was a Man of Courage, but became quite dismayed upon this Occasion, and appeared frightened at very remote Dangers, till his Father explained to him the Advantages that occurred to a young Gentleman by seeing Life: You will, says he, engross the whole Attention of whatever Company you go into, by relating the imminent Dangers you have escaped, and

and the wonderful Things you have seen; add to this the Satisfaction it will be to me to hear you give an Account of your Travels. Be sure you must up a good Collection of Rarities; but above all be frugal, and do not waste my Substance.

The Benefits of going abroad being thus explained, *Jack* with a little Compulsion was prevailed on to go off. *Milly*, who in all former Distresses used to implore the Divine Assistance for Succour and Comfort, now rather indulged her Grief; till her Sorrow abated, Love kept her very Thoughts from Heaven. When she applied to the Almighty, her Prayers and Invocations were more for his Preservation than her own. Mrs. *Wells* accompanied her Sadness, till Time and Custom made his Absence easier to them both. In a few Days they received a Letter from him of his safe Arrival in *Paris*, in which appeared his extraordinary Love and Duty for his Mamma, and fresh Assurances of his never-failing Love for *Milly*, and that he would immediately come to them upon the first proper Summons from her.

A Month's Correspondence of this kind entirely restored their Tranquillity, for they were sure a Letter of Invitation would bring him home, and that if he stayed it was their Fault, not his. Mr. *Wells* was never observed to be more chearful nor gay, was excessively complaisant to the Ladies, but always advised *Milly* to put him out of her Head, for he was a graceless Fellow, and that he had Letters of undoubted Credit, that half the Neighbourhood where he lodged in *Paris*, who had handsome Wives, were jealous of him, and produced some to that Purpose, which made them laugh very heartily in private, as they knew them to be contrived; but it gave him vast Pleasure to find *Milly* so indifferent about his supposed Amours.

Six Months being elapsed, they thought it was time for him to return, but knew he would not without a Letter of full Encouragement. His Mamma declared she could bear with his Absence no longer, in which *Milly* coincided, and immediately wrote the following Letter to him by her Mistress's Directions.

Dear Sir,

I AM ordered by your Mamma to inform you that she is very uneasy at your long Absence from home. If you have Duty or Love, convince her of it by the Haste you make to return after the Receipt of this. We are still circumstanced as you left us, but I conjure you, if possible, to get your Father's Permission to come back again. Your Aunt is dangerously ill, and it may be a very great Loss to you not to be near her. Your Mamma desires you to give this as a Reason to your Father who is so watchful of your Interest, to induce him to consent; if this has no Effect upon him, she desires you would find out other Reasons yourself. She has commanded me farther to assure you, I must acquiesce to all your reasonable Requests when we have the Pleasure of seeing you. You have Blessings and Love from your Mamma, and from

Yours for ever,

Emilia Finch

This Letter being sent off, and the Expectation of seeing him in less than a Month after, and never parting again, prepared their Minds for the Reception of more Pleasure and Amusement than they had for a considerable time before. Mr. *Well* did all in his Power to please them; he put six hun-

hundred Pounds *Milly* had into the Stocks, which brought her in near twenty four Pounds a Year, promising to do her whatever other Service lay in his Power. This Harmony continued but a short time; it was like the Sun in its meridian Height, diffusing its genial Warmth over verdant Fields and Meadows, when on a sudden a gloomy Cloud, threatening impending Storms, darkens all his Lustre.

The first observable Alteration was in Mrs. *Wells*, who complained of a great lowness of Spirits, which in a few Days disabled her from standing or walking. From the Beginning of this Disorder she judged herself to be near her End, but bore it with the greatest Resignation and Fortitude, making the best Use that was possible of her Time, praying fervently to God for Mercy upon her, and blessings to her Children.

She sent for Mr. *Wells*, and desired to be retired. When he came to her she said, My dear, I am very near my Journey's End, as to this Life, but must soon set out for one to Eternity. My early Pride, Ambition, and Desire of Wealth must end here, what avails them all now to me, tho' all my Desires were accomplished. I dread my account for the Opportunities I have had of doing Good, and heedlessly neglecting them, my Desires being bounded by Riches, which I must leave behind. The Offals I ordered for Sick and Needy, which were alas too few, gives unto my Soul more Hopes, Strength and Courage than the Possession of the World's Wealth; and dreadful as this Journey is, all must take it, tho' few are prepared for it. If the Sight of me and my Condition can make any Impression upon you, covet no more Wealth, you have enough to make a thousand happy, yet make me you must leave it. Lay some of it out well, and it will last you for ever. 'Tis my ear-

nest Request that you would be an indulgent Father to your Children, and don't oppose your Son's Marriage with *Milly*. You believe me, she is virtuous and chaste, the Certainty of which is the best Fortune he can get. Keep your Daughter *Betty* with her till she is provided for. These are my last Requests. My Advice to you is, to make yourself as easy as you can while you stay behind, which by the Course of Nature cannot be many Years, and employ them so as not to fear Death. Never part *Milly*, if you can, she is true and faithful, and will take the best Care of you; I will leave her some Tokens of my Love, if you will give me Leave.

Mr. *Wells*, greatly affected, promised to comply with her Desires, and bid her give what she pleased away.

Miss *Betty* was called to her, to whom she gave the best Advice she could, assuring her, that the Love of God, Truth, Virtue, and Obedience to her Father, all led to certain Happiness in this Life and that hereafter: but departing from any of them, her Misery for ever would commence from that Minute. She promised religiously to obey her Injunctions.

Milly, says she, you want no Advice from me, but to pursue the same Conduct you have begun, it will bring you to an happy End. Observing her to weep, she told her she must forbear or leave the Room. Bring me, says she to her, the Bag of Money, you know where it is, and order the Servants into the next Room; there being ten in Number, she ordered them ten Guineas apiece; she likewise ordered twenty five Pounds apiece for four Families she knew to be in low Circumstances; she gave Miss *Betty* three hundred Pounds and ordered three hundred Pounds for her Daughter *Williams*, who was then abroad, three hundred Pounds.

Pounds to *Milly*, making her also a Present of the Necklace and Ring she was formerly taken up for, giving that and her faithful Services as a Reason for so doing. She left her Blessing and a valuable Ring to her Son, saying, he had enough. Mr. *Wells* was present all the time, and approved greatly of what she did. She lived two Days after, continually at Prayer, or doing some Good or other. She would suffer none to touch her but *Milly*, and was desirous to speak to her in private till the last Minute. There was no want of the ablest Physicians both for Soul and Body, but she regarded the former most, and expired in *Milly's* Arms, to the inexpressible Grief of her and the whole Family.

Her Death was an irretrievable Loss to *Milly*, whose unaffected Grief shewed the Sincerity of her Heart. Mrs. *Wells* was buried with great Funeral Pomp, and *Milly* performed the Character of a real Mourner. She was exceedingly lamented by the poor of the Country, who lost a great Friend.

Nothing now appeared at home but a sable Sadsness, Mr. *Wells* daily receiving the Condolance of his Friends and Neighbours; and *Milly* informed Master *Jack* of this most severe and cruel Misfortune. Her Thoughts could scarcely be diverted from the dear Remembrance, notwithstanding the care of every thing in this great House was laid upon her.

Mr. *Wells* often repeated his Wife's Advice, never to part with *Milly*, and he soon gave an Indication of his Intent that way, for in six Weeks after her Death, when all the Family were exceedingly uneasy, not hearing a Word from Master *Jack* (and the Servants reporting he would never come or write, but from what Motive they said so could never be learned) Mr. *Jones*, her former Lover, from so many Incidents that happened in the

Family, thought some of them might turn out favourable to him, accordingly he came to Mr. *Wells*, and told him his Intent of renewing his Addresses, who replied, that he did not approve of it, and that he must visit no more there while he had Thoughts of the kind, dismissing him without seeing her.

Mr. *Wells* laid out the three hundred Pounds she got from her Mistress in the Stocks, which made her up nine hundred Pounds; the other Things she gave her were to the Value of four hundred Pounds, which in all amounted to the Sum of one thousand three hundred Pounds in her own Hands.

Their Fear and Impatience increased every Day about Master *Jack*, from whom they had received no Letter nor any sort of Account for nine Weeks, which occasioned some Jealousies among them, such as *Milly's* suspecting Mr. *Wells's* receiving her Letters, and he thinking the like of her; but they spoke of it, and declared to each other that they received none in that time. In this painful Uncertainty they continued two Months longer, till at last it became insufferable to *Milly*, which made Mr. *Wells* write to twelve of his Acquaintances in *Paris*, to make the strictest Enquiry for him. He shewed their Answers to her, which were, that they had made the closest Enquiry possible, and could hear no Account of him. She told Mr. *Wells* she could no longer bear the Tortures of her Mind, nor was she able to take care of his Affairs, for her Health was greatly impaired from the terrible Apprehensions of his Son's being murdered, and that she would retire, if he pleased, to Mr. *Jervis's*, for she was not able to keep out of Bed. Her loved Face proved the Truth of what she asserted, for it was now altered to a Death-like Paleness. He said to her, in Sickneſs or Health I beſeech you do not

leave me; I promised Mrs. *Wells*, on her Death-bed, my Consent to your Marriage with *Jack*, which Promise I will now make good, if ever he be heard of and is willing. While you are ill keep your Room, you shall have the best Attendance my Fortune can procure; act here as if it was your own House; send for whom you please about you, and if you have any Remembrance of Mrs. *Wells*, I believe she desired you not to leave me. She did so, Sir, says *Milly*, but of what Service will my staying be now? I can mind nothing but my Soul, which I have greatly neglected upon your Son's account. I insist upon it, says he, that you stay here, and send for Mrs. *Jervis*, or who else you like, to be with you.

Milly then consented, and desired him to send Miss *Betty* to a very good Boarding School at *Newington-green*, near *London*, till she recovered or died, which he did in a few Days after.

She was now obliged to keep her Room and Bed, and had Mrs. *Jervis* to attend her; she was sometimes visited by her Mother, who persuaded her to have some Advice, but she would admit of no Physician. Mrs. *Jervis* frequently sent for the old Curate of the Parish, who was very remarkable in his Life, for which Reason I hope the Reader will pardon a short Digression.

He was thought to be a Man of great Learning, and acted as a common Hack to the Poor of the Country, in the Capacity of a Physician and Surgeon, with surprising Success, but never took a Fee from them. When sent for by Persons of Fortune, he made a positive Bargain for five or ten Pounds, to be given to the Poor, for his Attendance. He had by his Curacy thirty five Pounds a Year, which was thought to be very sufficient, with a House Rent free from Mr. *Wells*. He had neither Servant nor Family, and his Furniture

was extremely wretched, except his Books. His thirty five Pounds a Year he laid out in cheap Victuals, which he generally kept upon a Shelf, as well for the Benefit of the Poor as himself. He constantly lay upon Straw, and had many Litters of it for the Reception of the Distressed, who wanted Shade or Lodging; and his Doors were open for them both by Night and Day. As to his Dress, he never kept a second Thing of any kind, except Linen. His Charity was so extensive, that he had like to be starved before his Neighbours knew him well; when they discovered his Excellencies, Gentlemen and Farmers would send their Servants every Morning to see how the before-mentioned Shelf was supplied, without saying a Word to him, and, upon their Reports, whatever seemed wanting was abundantly supplied. If any Servant told him that their Master sent this or that Thing to him, he would soon silence them by saying, he who ordered them to bring it, knew it, and that was sufficient. It is surprising, in a Course and Practice of this kind for forty two Years, that he was robbed but once, at which time he lost all his Clothes and thirteen Shillings in Halfpence, which was always his Specie, kept in an Earthen Vessel, upon his Shelf: This Robbery being committed very early on a *Sunday* Morning, left him without any Clothes to put on; his Parishioners by enquiring the Cause of his Delay, were informed of it, and immediately strove who should be foremost to supply him; he had great Variety of Things brought him, but he dressed himself with the first that came to his Hand, and went to Church within an Hour of his time, without the least Concern. In less than a Week after he had seven Suits of Clothes sent to him by unknown Hands, together with all the other Articles of Dress. The *Sunday* following he publicly thanked his Flock, telling them he had

more

more Clothes than he could live to wear out, and with their Leave he would sell six of the Suits and apply the Money to the Sick and Needy; they agreed to his selling four, and depositing two in the Hands of his Clerk, lest he should give them away, if in his own Custody. Never was Man held in greater Veneration, Honour, and Esteem than he, by Rich and Poor, who dreaded the Hour of his Death as a publick Loss. In short, wherever the Business of his Function called him, that Family thought themselves blessed and happy while he remained with them. Such Examples of Virtue will always produce the same Effects.

Milly was one of his greatest Favourites, on account of her parental Care, and he was always sure to mention her as an Example to Children. Notwithstanding his Excellencies, he was the most unfit Man in the World to apply to in Cases of Love, which is our present Business with him; he believed and thought it had no real Existence, but all imaginary, and worked up only by Fancy; he made very little of all the Passions, Troubles, Afflictions, and Disappointments that torment the human Mind, saying, they were all but temporary, and that an infallible and inviting Remedy for them was to love God, and nothing else, for that all those Evils proceeded from some immoderate Desire, or fixing our Hearts and Thoughts upon some darling Passion.

He attended her pretty close, who, as a Friend in Hopes of Comfort, confessed every Particular of her Affairs to him. In a short time he frightened her Love-sickness away, with Threats and Menaces of Hell and Damnation, saying, that she renounced her God for her Lover, that he is a jealous God, and will admit us to love none better than himself; that he hoped she had not the Assurance to apply to the Almighty, till her Heart and

Mind entirely returned to him; that her Misfortunes of late proceeded from want of Faith in him, whose infinite Wisdom disposes of every thing to the best Advantage for us, though we don't know it; Resignation to his holy Will, which the greatest must submit to, prepares us to resist all that the World calls Misfortunes; a thorough and perfect Belief in him is true Philosophy. Consider then, the shortness of your Stay here, improve every Minute of your Time to the best Advantage: You were, before you voluntarily plunged yourself into this Folly, as beautiful as Nature could form you, but in twenty or thirty Years time, if you live so long, your will be a wrinkled old Hag, and will be near half that time annihilated by Sleep, and perhaps when you awake it will be to a feeling of Sorrow and Pain, and not to Comfort and Joy. The Inference I would have you make from this Instance is, all the Beauty that charms yourself and others, is insensibly sliding away as Hours pass; 'tis so with every other Thing we think good in this Life, they all pass from us, or we from them, in a short time. Nothing on this Side the Grave is stable or permanent, but there is a constant Rotation of all earthly Affairs; the Observation of which, to every Being of common Sense, should determine them to fix their Desires upon something more solid and tranquil than the momentary Trifles of this Life. Of all the Choices we can make none is equal to the Love of God, nor easier obtained, it gives us everlasting Happiness in this Life and the next. He abhors Murder, and if you die of this Disorder, it is a Species of it committed upon yourself; therefore awake and rouse yourself, regard no Loss but that of his Grace; if you do this, and entirely rely upon him, take my Word, whatever your just Desires are, he will, if for your Good, accomplish them.

Milly

Milly had so high an Opinion of his Virtues, and dreading the Consequences of her Death from what he said, that by Degrees she took Courage, and resigned all Expectations of her dear *Jack*, applying with more Fervour than ever, if possible, to God, with Promises that her Love for him should never be rivalled again.

She never was disappointed in her Supplications to him, for in three Weeks time her Health and Strength was so restored that she was able to mind the Business of the House as usual, in which many Irregularities had crept, begun first in the Kitchen, and from thence communicated to most Parts of the House, but she soon reformed them.

Mr. *Wells* was inconsolable for his only Son; they gave up all Hopes of him, and *Milly*, with great Strength of Reason, recommended her own Method to his Father, to bear the Loss of him with Patience and Resignation.

Miss *Betty* was brought home. Mrs. *Jervis* staid a few Days after her Recovery, to confirm her in what the Curate recommended to her. In some Discourse they had of him, she expressed more Vanity than was consistent with her Character, saying to Mrs. *Jervis*, Was he not very rude to tell me that I should, in twenty or thirty Years, be a wrinkled old Hag? Mrs. *Jervis* replied, he meant well, and I am afraid if you live so long you will find a good deal of Truth in what he said. I am convinced, said she, of the Truth of his Doctrine, and firmly believe his Intentions were to establish in me the Principles of Virtue and Goodness, and am surprized he has not been promoted in the Church. That is, said Mrs. *Jervis*, because you don't know the World, my Dear; he has nothing to recommend him but his Virtue and Learning, which will not do now-a-days to go to Market with. I wonder, returns *Milly*, some Men of Fortune and Consequence

sequence in his own Parish, who know his Merit, do not provide something better for him than his Curacy. There again, says Mrs. *Jervis*, you shew your want of Experience; they would prevent his Promotion if they could, for fear he should be removed, for they don't expect such another: You are strangely altered of late, I remember the Time when you and I did not think that Happiness consisted in Riches or Greatness, but that those Advantages had the smallest Share in it; you seem now to be of another Opinion, I am still of the same, and declare I would rather be, to make my Happiness compleat, *John Simson*, our Curate, than the Archbishop of *Canterbury*. Tell me the Man who is so beloved by all Degrees of People; tell me the Man the Vicious are so afraid of; his Complaisance is the same to those who beg upon Crutches or ride in Coaches. Is there a publick Place where he is obliged to go to that the People do not seize him, and oblige him to ride even upon their Shoulders; for he has never been able to purchase a Horse? I can tell you, tho' wicked the World is, they revere and honour Virtue, they love and admire it, tho' they cannot bear to practice it themselves. If Happiness is the greatest Wealth, as is commonly thought, he is certainly the richest Man I know in the World. I assure you, says *Milly*, I am still the same, and believe there lives not a better Man than the Curate, and consequently he must be happy. You are certainly in the right, says Mrs. *Jervis*, and I never knew a good Man want the valuable Blessing of a contented Mind. In a few Days after, *Milly* being perfectly recovered, she left her and went home.

There was still a fine Table kept up, and *Milly*, by Mr. *Wells's* positive Orders, did all the Honours as Lady of the House, which was greatly resorted to. One of the Visitors, who was a very polite, hand-

handsome young Gentleman, and worth twelve hundred Pounds a Year in the Neighbourhood, addressed himself to *Milly*; when he spoke of Love to her, she told him her Heart was engaged; he asked her seriously to who; she replied sincerely, to Mr. *John Wells*. I hear he is dead, Madam, says he, or I should not have presumed to make you an Offer of my Heart. I believe he is, said she, but I will keep mine for him till the Resurrection. Your Time or any others, I assure you, Sir, will be lost by speaking to me of Love. Rejecting this Gentleman prevented many others from addressing her.

In less than a Month Mr. *Edwards*, the same Person who paid his Addressee to *Milly*, was married to Miss *Betty* by Consent, and got with her a Fortune of ten thousand Pounds. This gave *Milly* great Pleasure for her Mistress's sake, to see her so well provided for.

Mr. *Wells* now declared to all Company, the Happiness he enjoyed by the prudent Conduct of *Milly*, since his Wife's Death, protesting, if she was to leave him, it would be the greatest Loss he could sustain, for he could not well live without her.

He was naturally very positive, which Disposition increased with his Wealth and Years; he generally meant honestly, but was often mistaken, to the Prejudice of those who had a Dependence upon him. In Cases of this Kind *Milly* used to reason with him, which had often a good Effect, for the Benefit of himself as well as others. He sometimes used to come to *Milly*'s Room while she was dressing, without rhinking it indelicate, which caused an Uneasiness in her Mind, as she did not care to correct his Manners.

One Morning pretty early a Servant Maid of the House came to her Room Door when she was in Bed, about some Business, she got up and let her in, and when she had given the necessary Instructions returned to Bed again. Mr. Wells, seeing the Maid go out, opened the Door, and found her in Bed. I thought you were up, says he, for I saw one of the Maids come out of your Room, and without farther Ceremony seated himself by her, and said, I am glad to find this Opportunity, for I wanted to speak to you about earnest Business. *Milly* replied, Sir, please to withdraw, you can have, when you think proper, as many Opportunities to speak to me as you please, I want to rise. You must hear me where you are, says he, and proceeded thus:

Milly, ever since the Night I saw you with a Sword in your Hand, and all your lovely naked Breasts, I have been languishing for you; it was you that soon disarmed my Rage; I have only two Daughters, and both provided for; my unfortunate Son was murdered, and all your Vows to him are now more to be thought of; myself, my Fortune and Settlement all bow to be your Servants. Why, Sir, do you chuse such an Opportunity as this, says *Milly*, when I can answer you no Question with Ease? I will tell you honestly, says he, my Design is that this Freedom should be taken Notice of by you, in hopes it will incline you to marry me; at the same time he laid his Hand upon her Breast. She started up, saying, Sir, if you touch me again you shall die for it this Minute; go off, or I will alarm all the Servants, and expose you to the World. *Milly*, my Life, says he, I don't mean to give you the least Offence. Nothing can give me more, replied she, for every Minute you stay is Pain to me. I will go, says he, but pray make Haste and come to me.

She

She instantly began to dress herself, and the Maid who had been with her before came to attend her; she asked what delayed her so long; the Maid replied, I saw my Master come into the Room, and thought he had Business with you. On hearing this *Milly* was confounded, as to the Measures she ought to take, whether to expose him or appear guilty; but at length she determined to go away.

The Minute she came to Mr. *Wells*, he said, I hope you have considered of what I spoke to you. I did, Sir, says she, and my Result is, never to be concerned with you: The Proposal you made me is shocking to think of; I am contracted to your Son, and you know our Love for each other, which I will carry to my Grave, as I am sure he has done for me. You are the last of all Mankind should speak of the like to me. I am this Morning determined to leave your House, and think it more advisable for you to have it said we parted by Choice, rather than the real Cause should be known; but in this you must act according to your Discretion. Dear *Milly*, says he, the Minute you go I shall die; I cannot live without you. Marriage is honourable, and you shall be with me as happy as a Queen; do what you please with me and mine; I will obey you in every thing but letting you go, and that I will not permit, let the Consequence be what it will. Do you intend, Sir, says she, to deprive me of my Liberty? It is in vain for you to confine me a Minute, for had you all the Wealth and Estate you could desire, I would have nothing to say to you; therefore don't offer to stop me, if you do the Country shall hear me cry out Violence against you. Are you not ungrateful to the Dead? says he? Did not you promise Mrs. *Wells* to stay and take care of me for Life? She did not foresee, says *Milly*, this Conduct of yours; I intend only going to Mr.

* *

Jervis's

Jervis's, and desire not to be hindered. He then intreated her to take more time to consider of it, but she was deaf to all he said, which made him relinquish all Thoughts of restraining her, accordingly she packed up all her Things, and he had the Mortification to see the same Trunk go off, which he ordered away before, to the inexpressible Grief of his Son, which Sight now tortured his own Breast.

Behold the lovely *Emilia* now going from a Place she had lived four Years in, and experienced many Changes and Reverses of Fortune in that Time. She got to her dear Parents and Mrs. *Jervis*, intending not to part with them, and immediately fell into all the Services of the House, as if she had always been used to them. It would be rare to find a Family so happy as this; they were few and humble, each Individual endeavouring to please the rest. There was nothing to be seen there but Peace, Concord, and Pleasure, till *Emilia's* (I shall call her so now) was interrupted by the fulsome Addresses of Mr. *Wells*. He scarce let her have a Week's happy Retirement, for he used to spend most of his Time there, tho' he never received the least Encouragement from her, Mr. and Mrs. *Jervis* were too much obliged to him to forbid him their House.

In this Manner did he besiege poor *Emilia*, and made her Life uneasy, which determined her to go farther, where he might not hear of her. Accordingly she settled all her Affairs, and took the first Opportunity to go by Water to *London*, with all she had. When arrived there, she repaired to the same House she lodged at when she went to relieve her Uncle, and staid with that Family till she took a Middle Floor in *Long-Acre*, at the yearly Rent of ten Pounds, and decently furnished it.

Her Fortune, as observed before, was nine hundred Pounds in the Stocks, which brought her in about thirty six Pounds a Year, besides about fifty Pounds which was not at Interest. She now resolved to employ herself, the better to add to her Support, and for that Purpose applied to her Landlord and Landlady, who were very honest People, for their Interest to procure her some Needle-work; they used their best Endeavours, and soon provided her a good deal. They were so charmed with her Sobriety and Devotion, she constantly attending Morning Prayers at six o'Clock, that they put their Daughter under her Care to learn to work, and invited her every Day to dine with them, but she seldom consented.

Lady *M*—*d* was a particular Friend to this Family, and gave them a great deal of Work for their Lodger. This Lady was always exceedingly pleased with her Performance, and the Character she had of her, made her desire she should bring home a Lace Head herself, as soon as possible, which was Part of the Work she had sent her. *Emilia* dressed herself and waited upon her with it; her Ladyship looking at it, ordered some little Alteration to be made in it before her. All the time it was altering she looked immoderately at her, and asked her what Services she had been in, and also her Name. *Milly* answered all her Questions to the Point. Her Ladyship, upon discovering her Name and the only Service she was ever in, was captivated with her, for she was Sister to Mr. *Williams* that married Mr. *Wells's* Daughter. He had given this Lady such an Account of *Emilia* as charmed her, and made her often wish to see her. I have, says the Lady, heard much of your Oeconomy and Prudence, and should be glad if you would take Care of my Children, the eldest not exceeding

ing her eighth Year, for which I will allow you thirty Pounds *per Annum*.

This Offer was too inviting for *Emilia* to reject: she waited upon her the next Day and received her Charge. Her Behaviour and manner of Address made such an Impression upon the Lady, that she immediately received her into her Confidence, and, like a second Mrs. *Wells*, was not easy a Minute without her.

His Lordship was at *Newmarket* and other Places of Diversion a Month after her Engagement with his Lady, and upon his Return home was surprized to hear that *Emilia Finch* lived in his Family, for he knew her at Mr. *Wells's* before he was made a Peer, and had got the Title and sixteen thousand Pounds a Year by the Death of seven Persons, in the space of three Years.

Nature was exceeding kind to him as to his Person, and greatly improved by a liberal Education: he soon desired to see her, and assured her he was greatly pleased to find her in his Family, behaving for a considerable time with real Politeness and Friendship to her.

The Lady was even uneasy when she was absent from her, and would listen with an attentive Pleasure to the Recital of her Affairs.

Her Beauty and Virtue shone so conspicuous in this noble Family, that she was the Admiration of all who resorted to it. Her Happiness had not lasted above half a Year, when it was interrupted by a cursed and wicked Scheme of his Lordship's to debauch her, but which he could not conveniently effect while she lived in his Family, and therefore studied Means to get her away by his Lady's own Desire. In order to effect this, he acquainted her that an Aunt of his was come to Town, and he had invited her to dine with him the next Day: that she had above two hundred thousand Pounds

to leave to whom she pleased. She not knowing or ever hearing of this Relation, desired to be informed of her Name. He told her it was *Price*, adding, that she had been in *Holland* some Years, attending the Princess of *Orange*, and would have visited them before, but had been busied in getting a beautiful Country Seat repaired.

This Introduction being made, he next took every Opportunity to extol the Perfections of *Emilia* to his Lady when in private, which raised in her Mind a Jealousy suitable to his Design, and produced a Coolness in her Friendship to *Emilia*, who had not the least Suspicion of the Cause, and he might now sit a whole Day with the Children, and not be once called for.

Mrs. *Price* came next Day, as expected, and his Lordship introduced her as his Aunt, although he knew she was the greatest Bawd in *London*, and had been the Ruin of a thousand young Ladies in her Time. His Lady paid her the greatest Honour and Respect, and *Emilia* brought the Children, by Desire, to see their grand Aunt. Mrs. *Price* observed to her Ladyship, that being absent from *London* many Years, she was at a Loss how to get good Servants, particularly a Maid to attend herself, adding, that several had come to her, but she would not hire any without an exceeding good Character. The Lady without Hesitation said, pointing to *Emilia*, that Girl will do for you, Madam, and I will be bound for her Honesty. Your Ladyship, says Mrs. *Price*, is extremely kind. Can you work with your Needle? said she to *Emilia*. Yes, Madam, replied she, who thought it time to leave her present Mistress, and was glad to accept of an old Lady's Service. She agreed to give her the same Wages, and took her in the Chariot that afternoon to *Hamstead*, where she had a fine House

K

and

and Gardens, the Beauty and Solitude of which delighted *Emilia*.

Every Thing in and belonging to the House was in a very genteel Taste, except the Women Servants, who were all common Prostitutes, and the Footmen and Coachman, were all Panders for Lust, and poor *Emilia* intended as their first Victim for his Lordship, who, by Appearance, never thought herself safer.

In a few Days his Lordship visited his pretended Aunt, and at Dinner *Emilia* was desired to sit at Table, where she observed he was rather too complaisant. At his third Visit Mrs. Price retired, and left them together; he then declared himself to her as her Captive. *Emilia* was astonished at him, as well as at what he said, and declared she would tell his Aunt of it the Minute she returned. His Lordship regarded not her Menaces, but directly clasped her in his Arms; she cried out Murder! Mrs. Price coming in said, My Lord, let her go till I speak to her, which he did. She then insisted they should sit down a little with her, which *Emilia* was obliged to comply with, and hear what she had to say, who began her Harangue as follows:

His Lordship loves you exceedingly, to my Knowledge, and as a Proof of it has expended no less than six hundred Pounds by bringing you here besides having me to satisfy for my Service and Trouble, and I expect he'll not be a little generous. I have not the Honour to be related to him no more than you, but am employed by him and Persons of his Rank, in my Occupation, which many disdain not to follow. After all this Trouble and Expence, he will not nor shall not be disappointed.

I shall explain the Difference to you between Consent and Compulsion; by obliging his Lordship, he will settle something handsome upon you yearly.

yearly, and make you a Present in Hand ; besides, if you have Brothers, Relations, or if you marry any Fellow, he will provide for them in Church or State, his Word will fit them for either. On the other Hand, if you are compelled to submit he will owe you no Obligation ; it will be in vain to cry out here, for you cannot be heard by any that will relieve you ; the first Alarm you make your Mouth shall be stopped, and after that you will not only be subject to his Lordship's Pleasure, but to every common Footman's in the House. Consider, People of his Distinction are pretty much out of the Reach of the Laws, unless they attack a Power superior to themselves. Don't be uneasy, you must hear me, the Laws will never relieve you against him ; there is nothing so common, nor more erroneous, than to say, it knows nobody ; I tell you plainly it does, and every Day's Practice sufficiently proves it ; we shall make use of it against you, as a Tool to defend us from you hereafter ; when we think proper to turn you out of this House it shall be to *Newgate*, for robbing me of this Watch by my Side ; I have always my Proofs ready upon these Occasions ; you have already been taken up for robbing a Lady of her Diamond Necklace and Ring, take care of the second Charge against you of the like Kind.

Upon the Whole, here is an Opportunity for you to make your Fortune, by securing his Lordship's Friendship, he will presently inform you how, or else by dying at *Tyburn* as a Thief, after being made common here ; now I insist upon having your Answer, that I may take my Measures accordingly.

Judge, O Reader ! the unfortunate *Emilia's* case at this time. As there was a Necessity for an immediate Answer, she replied, Madam, I believe it is in vain observing to you the Wickedness of

your Life by your Oration: Take this as my Answer, that I will die ten thousand Deaths before I will yield myself a Victim to your hellish Machinations, you Monster! I have God to defend me. Then addressing his Lordship, Why would you, says she, employ so wicked an Agent? As a Nobleman, the Distressed have a Right to apply to you for Protection; I therefore beseech you have Pity upon me and defend me; I fly to your Lordship for Sanctuary and Mercy. I'll Sanctuary you presently, says Mrs. Price, and then rung a Bell. All the Servants, both Men and Women, coming in, she said to them, My Boys and Girls, this Hus- fy declares she will not go to Bed to his Lordship. One of the Russians replied, Shall we undress her now, Madam? Take her to the next Bed-chamber, says she, for she is bashful, and there put her to Bed. They dragged poor *Emilia* forcibly into the Room, who all the time struggled and fervently called upon God, saying, My God, relieve me now or I perish for ever.

About two Minutes after she had been forced into the Room a violent knocking was heard at the Door, Mrs. Price looked out of a Window and asked who was there, together with the Business she was informed they were Persons authorised to search her House, and must come in; she told them they were Robbers, and that they should not come in there, upon which they instantly broke open the Door, and left a Guard at it. This Noise alarmed all above Stairs, who crouded down to know the Cause; they told Mrs. Price they came in search of a Murderer and Highwayman, and would examine every Part of the House if she did not tell them where he was; she assured them there was no such Man with her. When his Lordship saw them he was in great Confusion, and thought proper to withdraw. In searching the House, the

came to the Room where *Emilia* was, half undressed; the Fellow who guarded her proved to be the Person they looked for; he had murdered a Butcher he was travelling with in *Northamptonshire*, of which Fact he was afterwards convicted, and hung in Chains at *Widden*, on the Road from *Chester* to *London*, where any Traveller may be informed as to the Truth of this Fact, and every other Part of *Emilia's* Life. I should not be so particular about this Fellow's Exit, only I imagined this fortunate Incident might be thought to have the Complexion of Romance.

The frightened *Emilia*, on the Officers and their Assistants entering the Room, at first thought they were to be employed against her, which made her redouble her Shouts and Invocations to God; but when she heard one of them say, That's the Man, secure him, and heard the Affair related, it revived a little her sinking Spirits. At this time she stood before them with her Gown and Stays off, so far prepared was she for Sacrifice. They all took great Notice of her, and concluded she was one of *Mrs. Price's* Girls, for that Lady's Business was known by some of them. *Emilia*, in great Disorder, got amongst them, and falling upon her Knees, said, Gentlemen, if any Person among you is unbelieving as to God and his Power, hear my Case and miraculous Deliverance, of which you shall be all Witnesses, it will confirm you as to his Godhead, and that he has always Power and Will to relieve those who trust in him. She then related what she knew of *Mrs. Price*, from her first Acquaintance, with what had happened to her since her coming into that detestable House. Many of them were more taken with her Beauty than her Speech, all Charms being disclosed to their View; however, it affected some of them, who had an Inclination to take *Mrs. Price* up, but considering the

Interest she had with Persons in Power, and particularly with his Lordship, it deterred them from it, and they only interposed, and got *Emilia* out of the House with all her Things.

None but the Virtuous can conceive the Joy she had upon this wonderful Escape, that a Man who had committed a Murder some Years before, should screen himself from Justice, till he was providentially made the Instrument and Cause, by his being taken, of involuntarily relieving as much Virtue, Goodness and Beauty, as ever was distressed by Vice.

Boundless was *Emilia's* Joy for Liberty, and getting out of this abominable Mansion; thoroughly sensible was she of that mighty Power, who in the Hour of Danger and Terror, delivered her out of Hands that regarded no Laws divine or human.

She went to her old Lodgings in *Long Acre*, and found them as she left them; they were rejoiced to see her, but shocked and surprized to hear her relate all that had happened since she went to Mrs. *Price's*; she beseeched them, as no Injury was done her, not to publish it for Lady *M—d's* Sake; she also told them she would take no farther Notice of it, and was determined never to go to Service any more.

The News-writers heard of the Affair at *Hamstead*, and as it was too remarkable for them to omit, they inserted a Paragraph of the Murderer's being taken at Mrs. *Price's*, where a beautiful young Lady was confined to oblige a certain noble Lord, who was then in the House, and likewise the manner of recovering her Liberty.

Lady *M—d* always inspected the *London* Paragraphs, and when she read the Name of Mrs. *Price* and a certain Lord, it caused her at once to suspect 'twas her own Consort, which determined

her to send a trusty Maid Servant to *Hamstead*, to get all the Information she could of this Affair. When she returned, she explained every Particular that happened, and that Mrs. *Price* was the same Person who dined with her Ladyship, and personated his Lordship's Aunt. She went on, saying, It would grieve the Heart of your Ladyship to hear the barbarous Usage they gave the young Woman that went to live there, and the hellish Designs they formed to ruin her. It was certainly poor *Emilia*, says her Ladyship, and ordering the Chariot to the Door, told the Servant she must go with her; I hope, added she, we shall hear of her at *Long Acre*, from Mr. *Thompson* her late Landlord.

Emilia by this time having recovered the Fright, was quite composed, and at work as usual, when her Ladyship, Mr. *Thompson*, and her Maid enter'd her Apartments, and was accosted thus by the Lady, You may be surprized to see me, but I could not have an easy Minute till I acquitted myself. It may appear to you that I was an Accomplice in the cruel Design my Lord and his wicked Aunt, as he called her, had upon you, by my easy Resignation of you to her; but the real Cause of it was, he continually praised you to me; I knew you merited his Commendations, but the Fear of bad Consequences made me desirous and willing to part with you, having no other Reason, upon my Honour: The whole Transaction I am acquainted with, but have not seen his Lordship since: Did you hear what became of him? I assure your Ladyship, says *Emilia*, I did not, nor do I suspect you would be concerned in so base an Affair. Her Ladyship, though well acquainted with the Adventure, desired to have every Circumstance of it from herself. When *Emilia* had related all the Particulars, her Ladyship caressed her more than ever,

but said, till Time should injure her Beauty, she would be dangerous to the Peace of any House where she resided, and it was not possible her Virtue should prevent it, as Instance the late Attempt made upon her; she then insisted upon her taking a Purse of an hundred Guineas, and assured her, that she would pay her Rent there while she pleased to live in it.

Emilia was prevailed upon by Mr. *Thompson* to accept of her Goodness, especially as her Ladyship said she would take it all out in Work, observing that she was under so many Obligations to her, that it would never be in her Power to make a sufficient Return. His Lordship, added she, had these sort of Follies to a great Degree, but this is the only Slip I have heard of these two Years past, and as he has been so disappointed and exposed by this, I hope it will discourage him from the like Practice for the future. It is not in my Power to reform him, unless he sees his own Errors, I must be passive. However, I have News to tell you Mr. *Wells*, your old Master and Lover, has been privately married to a very pretty Girl of sixteen, a Tenant's Daughter of his own, these four Months, and she is now with Child. I am obliged to your Ladyship, says *Emilia*, for telling me of it, as I can sometimes now go and see my Father and Mother. Her Ladyship gave her Assurances of her Love and Friendship while she lived, declaring she would frequently call upon her, and so took her Leave.

Emilia after this used once a Month to visit her Parents, and took Care they had every Necessary requisite; but Mrs. *Jervis* let her have very little Trouble that way, for she fulfilled her Charge with the strictest Integrity, and *Emilia* and Mrs. *Finch* her Mother, used to be constantly together. In a little time she was informed that Mrs. *Wells*

was brought to Bed of Twins, two Sons, to the no small Joy of the Family, on which Occasion were great Rejoicings both at *Wells-hall*; and among the Tenants.

Emilia lived extremely frugal, and as her Circumstances mended her Charity increased, which added new Beauty to every other Action.

One Day, as her Mother and she were chatting, they heard an easy Tap at their Room Door; *Emilia* desired them to walk in; when the Door was opened, good God! what a Surprize was it to them to see the once witty, sprightly, handsome, proud, and talkative *Catharine Finch* in wretched Rags, and all her Face broke out. From old Nurses we often hear Tales of Spirits, to reproach the Living with their foul Deeds; but we may justly suppose that no real Apparition, if any exists, could be more shocking to them than the sight of the unnatural *Catharine*, now urged by her extreme Necessities, which were manifested by her Figure and Dress, who applied to them on her Knees, begging their Forgiveness and Help. You Monster, go out of my Sight, says Mrs. *Finch*, turning away from her. Rise, Madam, said *Emilia* to her, the Poverty of your Dress, and all the Misery and Wretchedness that you appear to be in, together with your Unkindness to me, shall not in the least abate the natural Love I ought to have for you, had you come to me with honest and virtuous Poverty. Your Trial at *Guildhall* has been sold about the Streets in Print; the Author behaved extremely ill to the Publick in exposing the Obscenity of it, for it is so bad that a virtuous Mind would disdain to read it; your scandalous Behaviour since, has confirmed all the Facts related of you, for you are loaded with Vice and Infamy, which is never in a Woman's Power to shake off; and your Morals are so corrupted, that you spread a Contagion

Contagion almost wherever you are; therefore you must for ever keep from me. I cannot bear to see or hear you want the Necessaries of Life, I will therefore provide you with them, but not pamper you in Vice; work for your Bread, as I do, and I will provide you with it; if ever you come here again I shall then declare against you; I now will give you of my own Things as much as will dress you; besides, here is a Guinea and seven Shillings for you, and this Money must last you seven Weeks; in the mean time, let me know where you lodge, that I may send you Work, and inform myself of your future Life. You must put your Hands to Labour, for I cannot support you in Idleness. I have no more to add, but desire you to keep an entire Distance from me, for I have a Father and Mother to take Care of; and if I find you live in a dishonest House I shall for ever have done with you. She then gave her the Things, and *Catharine* promised to work and not be troublesome.

She is a Scandal to us, says Mrs. *Finch*; I really am surprized you would concern yourself about her. Because, says *Emilia*, I love you and my Father, whose Child she is; nor will her Vices be a Scandal to us, in the Opinion of Persons of Sense, till we are concerned in them. If I could work her Reformation, it would be acceptable in the Sight of God; then should I hope to prevail on you to stay here for good with my Dada, and she might be hid for ever from the World with Mrs. *Jervis*, who would take Care of her Morals. By frugal Management we have enough to support us all, and you shall be Mistress of it. My Dear, it is in better Hands than mine, says her Mother, you provide all Necessaries for us before we feel the want of them: Consider your Circumstances, and if they can bear it, as I know and am sure of your

Inclination,

inclination, we shall live comfortably together when this Creature is settled somewhere out of our sight.

Emilia then reckoned her Income to her, saying, she had thirty six Pounds a Year from the Stocks, and above six hundred Pounds in Money and Effects in her Hands, which she would likewise soon pay out in the Stocks; that she commonly earned eight or ten Shillings a Week at her Needle, which was only an Amusement to her; all this, said she, I am sure will support us very happily, as I pay no Rent here, and there is Room sufficient for us all.

Add to that, says Mrs. *Finch*, the thirty Pounds a Year you have from Mr. *Wells* near *Gravesend*: would have you consider well before you make any Alteration; you are young, and may marry, tho' you don't think of it now. You know, said *Emilia*, I was firmly contracted, and will never marry any Person till I am sure of Master *Jack's* Death. As to your Contract with Mr. *Wells*, says her Mamma, he is supposed to be dead, and consequently all that Affair is over, and I think you are very wrong not to marry, as there is nothing I wish for more. I will, replies *Emilia*, fulfil your Wishes in every thing in my Power but that; my dear Mamma, desire me to have no Husband, since I can't have the one I loved; I am extremely contented with the Company of you and my Dada. Child, says she, I never will request it of you again.

Two or three Months after this, as they were both chatting, they heard a Tap at the Door, says Mrs. *Finch*, Come in; to their Astonishment and great Surprize young *Wells* appeared. If the candid Reader ever was in Love he may judge of the joyous Transports and Emotions that filled the Breasts

Breasts of these constant Lovers, after an Absence of more than two Years, especially as she despair'd of ever seeing him again. He was embraced by *Emilia*, and introduced to Mrs. *Finch*, but he appeared greatly dismay'd for want of good Clothes, and also I believe the Necessaries of Life. He thought the World had deserted him, by the unnatural Usage he had received from his Father, to whom he had applied the Day before, and who would neither speak to him nor relieve him; what he had on the Curate gave him, together with eight Shillings in Halfpence. Mrs. *Jervis* offered him three Guineas, which he refused, fearing he should never be able to pay her. He told them he heard at his Father's where to find *Emilia*; that he had been taken up at *Paris*, and confined in the *Bastile* two Years and three Months; that the Charge alledged against him was plotting to overturn the State; that he was often examined but never tried, and at the End of that Time was discharged from Confinement, without knowing the true Cause of his being a Prisoner or being enlarged; that he received all her Letters, but was denied the Use of Pen, Ink, or Paper.

As to his Relation of the *Bastile*, there is no other Proof of it but his own Account; but it is a known Practice in Kingdoms and even Regions of Liberty, to seize suspected Persons, if the State be concerned, without shewing Cause, and to keep them until the Danger is over, or till they discover their Innocence or Guilt. If Money could do it, I should suspect his Father had a Hand in it, to keep him from marrying *Emilia*, and prosecuting his own Designs when he got into his Love Fits for his Reception of him when he came home, shewed he would wish never to see him. The Account he gave of the *Bastile*, and of the Prisoners kept there upwards of forty Years, are long and curious,

curious, but I must now postpone the Relation of them, and proceed with *Emilia*, who requested of her Mamma to take Mr. *Wells* with her, and as soon as possible to buy every thing ready made for him, fit for the Dress of a private Gentleman; in the mean time she would prepare Dinner, and gave him twenty Guineas for that Purpose, desiring he would come home dressed, and dispose of what he had on.

In their Absence, *Emilia* got Mr. *Thompson* to buy another Bed, with all Things suitable, and had it fixed in the next Room for herself and Mamma, that he might lie in the Room she did before.

Mr. *Wells* came home pretty well dressed, and *Emilia* had a good Dinner prepared with her own Hands. She appeared pretty grave, and gave Mr. *Wells* the Diamond Ring his Mother left him, which he insisted she should accept of as a Present from him.

After Dinner she shewed him where he was to lodge, and in a Month's time took such Care of him that he was quite restored to his Complexion and Strength, and appeared a very clever, handsome, young Gentleman. She spared no Expence upon him in that time, but afterwards let him into a thorough Knowledge of her Circumstances, and that they must retrench their Expences for the future, or Want would inevitably ensue; that she did not purpose to save or lay by any thing, but to make both Ends meet; this she did to strike off the superfluous Expences of going to Plays and other Places of Amusement, which she at first encouraged him in to divert and make him chearful, which was always her Practice, observing, that those Places amuse for the present Time, but afterwards fall heavily on the Spirits, if pursued too closely by Persons who cannot afford it, saying, it was true Wisdom to pursue such Conduct as always

ways led to a composed Mind, and to have as few Causes for Repentance as possible.

Mr. *Wells* replied, it was by her Importunities he went to those Places, but unless she was with him, which was very seldom, he was always melancholy at them, and that all the Diversions and Pleasures of *London*, or the World, would be dull and insipid to him, if she did not very soon remember and fulfil her Engagements; that his present unhappy Circumstances deprived him of Spirit to urge her to the Performance of her Vows, as he had nothing to rely upon but her Honour and Generosity; that he would conform to any way of Life she pleased, but observed, her old Reasons for delaying it were now over, that his Mother was dead, and his Father so unkind and indifferent to him, that he would not give a Shilling whether he married her or not; he could think of no Reason she had to put off their Marriage longer, if ever she intended to do it; that he was grieved for her Sake more than his own, as he had not a Fortune to give her; and that he never should have Peace of Mind or Comfort until she consented to it.

Sir, replied *Emilia*, you have been a great Stranger to me for a considerable Time, I must renew my Acquaintance with you, and be satisfied whether your Morals have not been corrupted, which will require a little Time; when I think and see you love Virtue, I will then invite you to it; in the mean time you may see my Conduct, and be yours, but be assured, I will never have any Person but yourself, and while I have a Shilling you shall never be distressed; I beseech you don't press me to consent for some time, I love you as well and with as much Sincerity as ever, but think of some Business that may suit you, in this Place or near it. I find, says he, I must leave all to your-

self.

self, and will use my utmost Endeavours to bear it with Patience : As to Business, I am not acquainted with the World, nor do I know what I am fit for, therefore dispose of me as you think proper.

Emilia consulted Mr. *Thompson*, who knew her Circumstances and Love for him ; he advised her to get him into the King's Guards, to ride as a private Gentleman among them, which would be worth eleven or twelve Shillings a Week to him, and would cost about seventy or eighty Pounds ; adding, as he had a graceful Person he might get it cheaper ; then *Emilia* desired him to negotiate this Affair.

Mr. *Thompson* took Mr. *Wells* to the Officer, who liked him so well that he received him for sixty Pounds, which *Emilia* gave Mr. *Wells* for that Purpose. The Duty was but very trifling, and gave him Liberty to be with her or where he pleased, so as he was but ready to attend his Turn of Call. By Agreement with her, he was allowed to spend seven Shillings a Week out of his Pay, and not to be accountable for the rest, nor any thing but his Time.

One Night coming off Duty, and going home, he saw a Fellow beating a young Woman unmercifully, he rescued her from him, but was attacked himself by the Fellow, assisted by two other Ruffians ; in his own Defence he was obliged to draw his Sword, and wounded one of them ; Murder ! was cried out, and the Watch secured him and the young Woman he protected, and lodged them in St. Martin's Round-house for that Night, in order to be examined in the Morning. Knowing that *Emilia* expected him home every Minute, it caused him to be more afraid of her hearing this unhappy Adventure than any other Consequence that could attend it, which determined him to conceal

ceal it; he therefore applied by Letter to some of his own Troop then upon Guard, who were House-keepers, to come and relieve him. Mr. *Thompson* was there at the time, sent by *Emilia* to enquire for him, who immediately returned and informed her where he was; she went to him as early as the Door of St. *Martin's* Round-house was opened, and saw Mr. *Wells* and his Fellow-prisoner there very disconsolate; he was so shocked and confounded at the sight of her, he could not then say a Word. She desired him not to be so dismayed, that if the Man was not mortally wounded, or his Case very doubtful, she would procure Bail for him, but did not like the Looks of the young Woman with him. I know nothing of her, said he, but my interposing to save her from being murdered.

When the Justice they were to go before was ready for Business they all went, and *Emilia* got Mr. *Thompson* and another Neighbour to be his Bail, if any would be taken.

When they were before the Justice, it was sworn that Mr. *Wells*, unprovoked, assaulted, and they believed mortally wounded, one *John Fripp*, who was then languishing in Bed. The young Woman, whom he had so charitably defended, positively swore against him, that he endeavoured to force her away from her Husband *John Fripp*, whom she believed he had murdered; that as she had no Money, the Watch would not hear what she had to say, but hurried her to Confinement with him. The Justice would hear of no Bail, but without Hesitation committed him to the *Gate-house*.

Emilia had the Mortification now to see her dear Mr. *Wells* in Gaol, and dined there with him every Day for three Weeks. She had the Generosity never to upbraid him with what the young Woman swore, as to his Intent to force her from her Husband.

band. All Mr. *Wells's* Sufferings were trivial to the Uneasiness of his Mind, lest *Emilia* should suspect him as to the Woman.

In a little Time this Part of his Misfortunes was pretty well cleared up by the same young Woman's being sent to the Gaol he was in for a Riot, where he made a voluntary Oath that it was all a Scheme of *Fripp's*, hers, and their Accomplices, which they had practised before with Success; that they had now abandoned her, and she would discover them all. Upon *Fripp's* Recovery and appearing abroad, *Emilia* got Mr. *Thompson* to compound the Affair with him and drop the Prosecution, which cost her fifty six Pounds, besides forty Pounds for other Charges, and obliged her to take out of the Stocks an hundred Pounds.

Mr. *Wells* confessed what an expensive Acquaintance he was to her, and that so unfortunate a Man ought not to live. She pretended to be very angry with him for expressing himself in such Terms, and reasoned seriously with him, that Misfortunes are sometimes unavoidable; that she believed it was his Humanity brought him into it, and if it was, that he would certainly be rewarded for it when he obtained his Liberty. She appeared as composed and chearful as if it had not happened; and he on his Part determined to spend none of his Pay idly, but to save all he could.

One Day he came to her hastily, with a Newspaper in his Hand, saying, *Emilia*, you are advertised in this Paper. She was surprized, and desired him to shew it. Here, says he, read this, which was to the following Purpose: *Emilia Finch*, Daughter to the late *John Finch*, Change Broker, by directing a Letter for *A. B.* at *Jonathan's* Coffee-house in *Change-alley*, *London*, may hear of something to her Advantage; or if the said *Emilia Finch* be married, dead, or has left Children behind her, who-

L

ever

ever will give an Account of the above Particulars, shall be paid for their Trouble.

She shewed this Advertisement to her Mother and Mrs. *Jervis*, who happened to be there, and sent Mr. *Wells* to tell *A. B.* all he knew of her. In three Hours after Mr. *Wells* returned with Mr. *Samuel Finch*, her Uncle, whom she got out of Confinement five Years before. She received him with the greatest Love and Affection. He saluted Mrs. *Finch* and Mrs. *Jervis*, and embracing *Emilia*, said he came to dine with her; that he was forced to have Recourse to a News-paper to find her, and that he was at Mr. *Jervis's* to enquire for her, but could hear no Tidings there; that he had seen his Brother, who looked extremely well, and desired him to stay with him. There is none there, says *Emilia*, knows where I am but Mr. *Jervis*, and he would not tell any Person, for Reasons I shall inform you of hereafter. Had I been at home, says Mrs. *Jervis*, when you was there, I should have ventured to have told you where to find her. He dined with them, was very chearful, and continued his Visits every Day, sending vast Quantities of valuable China and other Things to her as Presents; but was very inquisitive as to her Life during his Absence, of which she fully informed him to his great Satisfaction, in every Particular; but when she came to that Part of her Narrative that related to Mr. *Wells*, who was present, she said pointing to him, this Gentleman's Love for me was his Ruin, and he will lose a very fine Fortune by it: All I have I got by him and his Family and have contracted with him to be his Wife; I would have married him before now, but was afraid our Income at present was not sufficient to support us, for I have others to take care of, whom I never can neglect, out of the little I am possessed of. My hope Uncle, added she, if you believe the Obligation

tions I am under to him and his Family, you will approve of the Match. Her Uncle, who was an honest and good Man, readily agreed to it, saying, I will give you twenty thousand Pounds to help you both, and that Instant pulled out his Pocket-book, and gave her Bills upon the Bank of *England* to the full Amount of what he said; he then recommended her to fulfil her Engagements to the young Gentleman in a few Days, saying, he was certain he deserved her.

Emilia, quite overcome with such immense Wealth, said, Dear Uncle, I will not take this prodigious Sum, till I know how you can afford it. Had I a Kingdom, said he, I would give it you, but I can easily spare what you have got; I have had great Success in the *East-Indies*, by Factorage and the Death of a Supercargo of one of the Company's Ships, who left me all he had; and upon the whole I have cleared above forty thousand Pounds; the Remainder I will put in the Stocks, the Interest of which will be sufficient for me during Life, and all shall be yours after my Death; I will appoint you my Agent to give our poor Relations an hundred Pounds a Year, I shall send 'em to you for that Purpose, and intend living most of my Time with you.

Mr. *Wells* could not contain himself, but went on his Knees to embrace his, for being his Friend with *Emilia*. Her Uncle raising him up, said, I will see you married to her, my Boy, before a Week is elapsed; he then told *Emilia* he would dine with her every Day, and then withdrew.

All present rejoiced greatly at her good Fortune, and Mrs. *Jervis* said she always believed she would come to it.

Emilia put the Bills up in her Trunk, and taking out of it a little Book desired Mr. *Wells* to read it, accordingly he retired to obey her Commands.

mands. She then address'd her Mamma, saying Madam, you see the abundant Kindness of God to me; my frequent Prayers to him for Blessings in this Life, were to enable me to invite you and my Dada to live comfortably with me for Life, which I now have in my Power, and before I part that Power, will lay out in the Stocks as much as will bring you in forty Pounds a Year, to do with as you please, which with what you have besides, will make your Lives comfortable and easy with me. I love, honour, and will obey you both, and the Reserve I make, for fear any thing that I now cannot expect or foresee may give you Offence in Mr. Wells's House; I believe him a good and well-disposed Man, and that he loves me, and all that belongs to me, but I will not trust to my own Judgment as to your Welfare and Happiness hereafter, but will secure it solidly now, by making you forever independent. My Dear, replies her Mamma, I thank you, and God I hope will for ever return it to you; but I wish you would use the same Caution for yourself, and secure some of your Fortune out of any Husband's Power, for fear of bad Usage, tho' I don't suspect Mr. Wells would be guilty of it. Madam, says she, I think those whom I trust my Person with, I likewise ought to trust my Fortune, as the latter is of less Value to me than the former.

They chatted in this manner for some Hours till Mr. Wells had read the little Book. When Emilia asked him his Opinion of it, he said, I think she was a very wicked Woman. She is a Sister of mine, says she: You seem surprized, but what I tell you is Fact. I am sorry to hear it, replies Mr. Wells, because I fear it may give you Trouble. It is a great Grief to me, says she, that such an Affair should happen in my Family, but it is the only Blot in it, and which I thought was not Prudent

to conceal from you : The Dishonour of my being so nearly related to her, may hereafter give you Pain. Your low Circumstances, added to the Regard you say you have for me, might make you overlook it now ; but to convince you of the Esteem I have for you, and the dear Remembrance I retain for your Mother, determined me to take you at no such Disadvantage : I desire you would accept of what I have this Minute taken out of my Trunk, which I hope will give you the full and free Use of your Reason ; here is ten thousand Pounds for you to do as you please with, either to marry me, or advance your Fortune otherwise, and insist upon your taking two or three Days to consider of it ; do as you will, the Money is your own, and I will receive no Answer at this Time to what I have proposed. He replied, I shall not answer you now, as you have commanded me not ; but give me Leave to tell you, I am to be upon Guard to-night, and think it dangerous to have so much about me, therefore desire you will keep the Bills till you give me Leave to return an Answer, then do as you please with them. *Emilia* pausing awhile agreed to put them up again, which done he went to his Duty.

I declare, says Mrs. *Finch* to her, you behave in a very romantic Manner : How like a Fool would you look if he had taken you at your Word, and lost your ten thousand Pounds and a Husband ? Madam, says she, it would be an Advantage to me to lose both, rather than have him repent it all his Life ; suppose he had taken the ten thousand Pounds, I have more left than I know what to do with.

In a few Days, Mr. *Wells* told *Emilia*, that she was no more accountable for her Sister's Conduct than for any other Woman's ; that had he known all her Generation to be bad, he would rely upon

her; that no Money or Wealth could purchase from him the Right he thought he had in her, and desired she would keep her Bills till she gave herself to him also; and that now there was no sort of Reason to delay it. She replied, as he was so determined upon it, she was willing absolutely to obey him, when her Mamma and Uncle would name the Day. Mr. *Wells* then applied to them (who had a great Value for him) to make the Time as short as possible, which was appointed to be the *Sunday* following.

○ *Emilia* made the best Use she could of the four Days Liberty granted her, declaring she would then resign it to Mr. *Wells* for ever.

During this time she secured forty Pounds a Year, with thirty she had near *Gravesend*, which made seventy Pounds, for her Dada and Mamma during their Lives, and for her Sister *Catharine* twenty Pounds a Year, provided she lived an hundred and fifty Miles from *London*. At the Expence of twenty Guineas she got Mr. *Thompson* into Mr. *Wells's* Place in the Guards. She gave her Mamma a Purse of an hundred Guineas, and Mrs. *Jervis* one of fifty, saying, hereafter all must proceed from Mr. *Wells*.

Her Uncle was so well pleased with what she had done that he made her another handsome Present which she disposed of in charitable Uses. She told Mr. *Wells*, she imagined nothing would be more agreeable to him than living near *Gravesend*, for which Purpose she would purchase the House and Demesne her Father lived in, and make him a Present of it before they were married. He told her, nothing could add to his Pleasure more than living there. It was accordingly advertised in the News-papers to be sold, and the Uncle bought for them.

The happy *Sunday* came, on which they were married, as agreed upon before, to the unspeakable Joy and Satisfaction of both. They continued a Month after in their Lodgings, till their Country House was prepared and got ready for them by Mrs. *Fervis*.

They laid out in the Stocks as much as brought them in seven hundred Pounds a Year, and had upwards of two thousand Pounds in their Possession, together with a very genteel House, Offices, Garden, and sixty Acres of fine Land subject to no Rent.

Mr. *Wells* had a mind to keep a Coach for his Lady, and privately consulted her Uncle, who approved of it. When it was proposed to her, she intimated, that it would require too strict an Oeconomy with their Fortune to support and to live up to it. All her Friends were against her in this Point, upon which she gave it up, for she assumed no more now than advising, which was ever after her Practice with her Husband, who always regarded her as an Oracle.

The Coach and Country House being prepared, they all went to it, and soon received the Compliments of the Country, except his Father's. The first Act of Mr. *Wells* was to repossess Mr. and Mrs. *Finch* of the Apartments they lodged in before, and to engage them to stay with him for Life.

Mrs. *Wells* took great Care of the Curate's Shelf, and had him as often as she possibly could with her.

Old Mr. *Wells* and his Son, with their Wives, appeared now at Church, and notwithstanding the Power and Influence of the old Gentleman's great Fortune, the Son and his Wife had abundantly more Compliments and Respect shewed them, which must be attributed to their Superior Excellencies,

lencies, or the universal Propensity of the World, to worship a rising more than a setting Sun.

They frequently met at Church, and at one of these Meetings, by some sudden Impulse, *Emilia*, for so I shall still call her, went to old Mr. *Wells*, who stood upon the same Place where he first spoke to her, and Mrs. *Jervis* about living with him, and said to him, in the hearing of the Curate and better sort of People then present, Sir, this has been a most fortunate Spot to me, for it was here you invited me to your Service, which was the Introduction to all the Happiness I now enjoy; nothing now can make it so complete as the giving me your Blessing, and presenting me here to Mrs. *Wells*.

The old Gentleman was surprized at the suddenness of it, but his Wife immediately embraced *Emilia* and her Husband; he seeing this President of his young and beautiful Wife's, thought he must follow it, and accordingly embraced them both and gave them his Blessing.

After this happy Reconciliation, *Emilia* requested they should dine together at either of their Houses that Day; this was agreed to, and they all went to old Mr. *Wells*'s to Dinner, and the worthy Curate was so rejoiced at it, that he made one of the Party.

From this Day commenced so great a Love and Friendship between these two Ladies, that they were always uneasy at the Absence of each other.

I have taken Notice of this publick Affair in the Church-yard, to shew that the Severity of old Mr. *Wells* did not proceed from his Wife, as was reported; this was the only Instance I could ever hear of *Emilia*'s doing or attempting any thing material without consulting her Husband, tho' he indulged her Will in every thing.

The old Gentleman received great Content of Mind and Pleasure upon this Union, and in less than two Months after conveyed to his Son *John*, and his Heirs for ever, twelve hundred Pounds a Year, and complimented his Wife with a Present of a thousand Pounds, to furnish out a genteel Side-board of Plate.

Emilia's natural Attachment to Virtue, when a Maid, gained her the Esteem and Love of all, which shone so bright now in her exalted Life, that she was even a Pattern to the Noble and Great, whose Happiness is often sullied with false Glory, but hers exceeded her Wishes.

Her good Uncle could not bear a Month's Absence from them in the Year. They even rivalled the Curate in their Charity to the Poor, who when in their Company was charmed with their Virtues.

There happened to be a Vacancy in the Country near them for a Member of Parliament, young *Mr. Wells* was prevailed upon to offer himself as a Candidate; who carried the Election, tho' strongly opposed, chiefly by the Interest of the Curate, who reported him to the Publick as a Man of the most unbiassed Principles; and that he would, when in Senate, do Honour to them, by discharging his Trust with Integrity both to King and Country.

In fine, this virtuous Couple being blessed with a hopeful Offspring, I shall now take my Leave, by wishing them a long Continuance of mutual Felicity.

I hope my Female Readers will endeavour to imitate her Virtues, which if they do, I can assure them, from my own Knowledge and Experience, that their Actions will be generally crowned with Success. I shall now give an Account of my Government, which if it happens to be too dry and

* *

steril

steril a Subject for your Taste, pass it by, till you come to the Life of *Catharine Finch*, which I believe will not perhaps please you so well as *Emilia's* but it will answer my Purpose, which is to shew by plain Matters of Fact, the Rewards that always attend a virtuous Conduct, and the Pains, Distresses, and Contempt that unavoidably go Hand in Hand with the Practice of Vice, even in this Life, and hope such Use may be made by perusing these Memoirs, as the Law intends by publick Examples, which is, that those who see or hear of them may not commit the like Crimes, the Fear of which, I believe, deters many from such Practices more than Conscience. I think there is no Death or Punishment the Law inflicts half so cruel as dragging a Life for Years together, environed with Corruptions of Mind and Body; the inward Stings of our Consciences are certainly in Proportion to our Vices, which makes me think that the Wretch just jumping into Eternity out of a Cage being properly prepared for so awful a Change is happier than his former Friends, who are with dangerous Industry picking Pockets at his Execution and are regardless of all Examples.


My Subject here is low, I shall therefore raise it by assuring you, that there are Gradations of Pickpockets, even from the M——r of State down to the *Tyburn* Thief; but they who rob Kingdoms cannot be so conveniently haltered. Now I am upon this Subject, I think it incumbent upon me to shew you an Example of Thieves who have superior Opportunities and Genius, and would rather steal from a Nation every Shilling it was worth, than demean themselves by privately picking a Gentleman's Pocket. Such was the *South-Sea* Scheme, encouraged in all its Forms both in *France* and here, and by all the great Men in Power, who were so well acquainted with its Contrivance

trivance, as convinced them they would, by a proper Execution of it, drain both Kingdoms of all the Money and Credit they were worth. When Millions were ruined, our Guardians thought proper then to pillage and rout those Sons of Rapine principally concerned in it; and if you trace them afterwards, with all their Wealth, you will find that Death and Rottenness soon overtook them, and that their ill-got Pelf was not enjoyed by their Posterity, but gave their Wives an Opportunity to purchase young clever Husbands with it. This is one Instance, out of thousands, to prove, that no Success in Vice can secure our Happiness. *Emilia* was a Servant, and the Virtue and Resignation that always attended her, by which she was so gloriously raised, may be imitated in every Station; and the same Conduct will have the like Effects upon all who follow her Example.

A SHORT



A SHORT
ACCOUNT
OF THE
Seraglio and its Government.

HE promoting of Virtue has been the Subject of most good Authors, the ill Consequences of practising Vice that of others; I shall imitate neither, in this History of my Heroines, but pursue them faithfully from their Births, to their Graves, or the End of my Acquaintance with them, and occasionally make such Remarks as may occur to me. Though I fear those who have read my Memoirs, lately published, will suspect the Sincerity of my moralizing, yet I shall venture a little now and then.

I must beg Leave to put those in mind who peruse this Work, of the Restraint I am under, as I cannot relate Trials of Rapes and criminal Conversation with the same Freedom and Language that is used in publick Courts of Justice.

As

As I have read many Forms of Government, it has greatly surprized me that I could never find any assumed by Women since the *Amazonians*; yet I believe they govern Mankind, and consequently the World, if I can judge of others by myself. Since I came to Maturity, which is now about twenty-seven Years, I have been generally in Love with one Woman or other, but not always criminal; and honestly declare, that I had no Liberty but what they thought proper to allow me during that Time; I also generally found it so with all my Intimates, who had either Wives or Mistresses, that were artful enough to adapt their Chains. Nor are we without many Royal Examples; the late Queen of *Spain* had a long Reign without Controul, while the King, her unspoke-of Husband, slept and heard Musick. The present Queen of *Hungary* seems to dictate Laws to the Remains of the *Roman* Empire, and to Kingdoms and Countries, whilst her Husband the Emperor amuses himself with only putting on and taking off the Imperial Robes; together with the late King of *Sardinia*, who resigned his Crown for a Woman; besides many other Instances of crowned Heads who are led in delightful Bondage. Now let us look down from Thrones into private Families, and there you will generally find the vulgar Saying made good, of *the grey Mare's being the better Horse*.

If Things are so in Fact, it is great Arrogance in Men to assume to themselves the Honour of conducting the busy World; and Authors are equally condemnable who begin the History of a People or Country from the Æra of such a King's Reign, when in all Probability it ought to be from that of his Queen or Concubine. Thoughts of this Kind made me hope an Account of a little Female Commonwealth, vulgarly called a Seraglio, which in

the Eastern Nations of the World are held in great Esteem, would be acceptable to my Readers; I shall therefore, without farther Prolixity, proceed.

I once had the Confidence of the great and learned Dr. M——d, who by Estate and Practice was worth above twelve thousand Pounds a Year. I will refer the Reader to the History of my own Life, where he will find the Particulars both of my first Acquaintance with him, and also his advancing me to the Dignity of Governor and Judge of his Seraglio, when he was no less than sixty-eight Years of Age.

He generally kept twenty chosen Beauties, who lay two in a Room in a large House provided for that Purpose. In this House there was a Ball-Room, where the Ladies assembled and danced once a Week, in the Presence of the Doctor and three other Persons of Distinction. At these Carnivals, the Ladies of my Flock were generally visited by others from the several Seraglios belonging to those who resorted ours.

These Visits were always returned, and those Connoisseurs in Delicacy of Features had many Contests about the Ladies Beauties, whom they frequently beheld in all their Attitudes; and I had the agreeable Pleasure to see seventy or eighty of them at a time, with a Diversity of Beauty in each Countenance.

In this Room was held our Court of Justice, and a Translation of *Epicurus*, the renowned Philosopher, was the Standard of our Laws, with some few Ordinances from the Doctor, enjoining the strictest Chastity. So rigid was he in this Respect, that he forbid any Part of a Lady's Leg, or even her Foot, appearing when dressed; and always in his Discourse to me signified, how acceptable it would be to him if I would recommend austere

Virtue

Virtue of this Kind to those committed to my Charge, which I promised carefully to make them observe.

But to proceed: The Doctor took me in his Chariot to this House, and formally introduced me to all the Ladies, who were upon this Occasion assembled in the Ball Room, and told them he had appointed me to succeed Mr. *Martin* as their Judge and Governor, and recommended me to Mrs. *Price*, who had been Matron to this Seraglio for upwards of twenty Years, desiring her to assist and instruct me in my new Employment, and then departed, leaving me in full Possession of the House and its Furniture.

Mrs. *Price* being very well acquainted with me before, we soon retired to view the House and the Ladies Apartments. One of these unhappy Fair Ones came and called her aside, but she soon returned, and with a Smile told me the Ladies all waited to address me. Address me! said I; what do they mean by it, to address a Person before they know him? It seems, replied she, you know little of our Government; it is always the Custom here, whether they know you or not. As Governor, they will say a great deal in Praise of your Wisdom, Justice, and Conduct, and it is always done to those who are preferred to such high Commissions; upon my Word you will hear a very pretty Speech made, come let us go to them. I went with her, and walked upon this Occasion as magisterially as I could. It was not long before the lovely Tribe of angelic Forms, and my dear Mrs. *Winnett* at the Head of them (whose Life I have already published) appeared, and accosted me in the following Manner.

May

May it please your Honour,

I AM favoured with the Commands of these Ladies, the selected Beauties of *Great Britain's* Empire, now assembled in your Presence, and in their Names, to congratulate your Honour on your Advancement to this Government. They beg Leave to represent to your Honour, their affectionate and grateful Sense of the Doctor's truly paternal Regard, on every Occasion expressed, and particularly in the Appointment of a Person of your Honour's Penetration, Wisdom, Candour, and Justice, to govern and protect us feeble Women. Your Honour's Vigilance and unwearied Care, through all the Parts of shining Life, confirms us how much the Doctor has our Comfort and Welfare at Heart, by subjecting us to your Conduct and glorious Example, which will make us the happiest People in the World. From a Principle of real Gratitude, we are ready to sacrifice our Lives and Fortunes, and every Thing that is dear to us, to prove how much we desire to please our Benefactor and those he appoints. I have it in Command from these Ladies to request your Honour's Company to dine with us this Day.

To which I returned the following Answer.

Ladies,

I Return you my sincere Thanks for this affectionate Address, and will faithfully represent it to the Doctor. While you regard the Laws of this House, it shall be my constant Study and Practice to make every Hour of your Lives pleasant and delightful, and shall with Pleasure accept your Invitation.

Which

Which gracious Answer was generally applauded.

This Ceremony being ended, I conversed with several of them, many of whom, in my Opinion, were highly bred. About two o'Clock I heard Mrs. Price desire one of the Ladies to bring a Box and Dice; no sooner did I fix my Eye upon them, but I was so urged by my cursed Passion for Gaming, that I could scarcely resist them, though the consequence might have been the Loss of my Government: Mrs. Price soon informed me, the Ladies threw Dice every Day, and the three who threw lowest always attended the Service of that day in the Kitchen, and at Dinner; that no Man was admitted into the House but the Doctor and those he thought proper; that they cost him a great deal of Money, and it was very hard to take care of them and to keep them out of Harm's way.

Greatly approving of her Conduct, which plumed her Vanity, she ushered me into my Apartments as Governor, which were two good Rooms very genteelly furnished. The Ladies here threw Dice for the Vocation of the Day, and the three unfortunate Casters, making us low Courtesies, desired we would take no other Notice of them but as Servants for the Time being. These three were Daughters to Sir J——n W——n, Colonel ——ms, and an eminent Merchant then living in London, whose Beauty and Faith in Mankind were the Causes of their Ruin.

At four o'Clock we had a very elegant Dinner served up: Nothing engaged my Attention so much as our beautiful Servants, who anticipated our Orders by our Looks. No *Asian* Monarch ever dined with more Softness, Delight, and Delicacy than I did at that time and frequently after; but how hard was I circumstanced to be oblig'd to pro-

M

nounce

nounce Sentence against some of these unhappy Charmers in the course of my Jurisdiction.

Dinner being ended, the enlivening Glass went cheerfully round, which raised the Genius and Spirit of some of the Ladies, who stood up and amused the Company with repeating the Parts of *Stolira*, *Roxana*, *Cleopatra*, and a Variety of other Scraps of Plays, with Dancing, Singing, &c. till we all got jovially drunk together. The first Toast, in a Bumper, given by Mrs. Price, was The honourable Doctor; the second, Mrs. Catherine Rich, alias Finch, the last Name is what I shall call her by, whose Toast was, Success to Drinking, Whoring, Gaming, Revelling, and Swearing; I give the Reader these only as a Specimen of other Toasts, for we looked upon ourselves as a free People, and consequently might drink what we pleased; those who were troublesome in their Cups with Mrs. Price's Advice, I ordered into the Custody of the Servants, who immediately took them away. Such were my first Acts of Government and Authority.

Drunkenness was not forbid by our Laws, which I think was a great Defect in the Policy of them for in the Course of my Experience I have known more Evils proceed from that one Vice, than from all others we are liable to; but as it is the darling Practice of the Age, it is in vain for me to attempt a Reformation.

About twelve, being fated with Wine, I was ushered to my Apartments by the lovely Servants in waiting. When retired, various were my Thoughts upon this extraordinary Change in my Life, and the *Cupid's Paradise* I got into; but how to govern it embarrassed me most, having those Characters strongly impressed upon my Mind which always attend vigilant Governors, whether for the Good of their Sovereign, those committed to their Care,

their own Interest I must soon determine. Thus was I restlessly musing till relieved by Sleep; I awoke early, and found myself in the following Soliloquy.

Good-morrow, Mr. Governor, propitious Days for ever attend your Honour, (Excellency I think it should be, but Honour will do, as it is the customary Address here.) Dear *Bradstreet*, be as free with me now as you were a few Days ago, though you are not the same Man, and let me know how you intend to manage in your present exalted Station. I cannot say yet what I shall do. Consider whose Interest will you regard most, your Employer's, your Flock, or your own. Remember, in all Ages and Places the old *Latin* Proverb, *Vox Populi Vox Dei*. 'Tis now the Opinion of all the World, from Pole to Pole, that Self-love is the first Principle of Nature. If this universal Maxim holds good, *Bradstreet*, Love yourself; but always think the footing of your Government is as slippery as ice, and only during the Sunshine of your Employer's Favour; it is much easier to gain a Friend than to keep him, therefore continually use all your Art to secure him, which if you accomplish, you may do as you please with those committed to your Care; their Cries or Tears against you he will neither see nor regard, if you keep such in Favour who are most taken Notice of by the Doctor, to oppose the just Allegations against your Tyranny. Do not rely too much on his being under a Necessity of keeping you on account of your supposed Impotency, for he has told you before, he believes half the Men who apply to him are so. Keep well with Mrs. *Price*, she is in very high Favour and Esteem with him, and others of greater Power, for her extraordinary Abilities and Services. You are now, *Bradstreet*, in a Station wished for by most Men, that is, to have Dominion and Power over others. As to Justice, when Mat-

ters are indifferent I would have you administer it, and for so doing, let your benign Disposition be published by your Friends. As to Conscience, your present Dignity is above the low, groveling Thoughts of it, or any Bubble like it. As to your judicial Capacity, give no Judgment till you consult your Employer; proceed as he would have you, and then no Appeal from you will be heard; if he be severe, you must pronounce Sentence accordingly, and have it executed without Remorse, as you will feel none of the Pains or Penalties you inflict. Profess Friendship, when it suits your Convenience, to all your Tools, but suffer by none, the Honour of a little Familiarity with you is sufficient. Still remember you have been an humble Subject, and may be so again, for Governments of this kind are generally given to Favourites who have been Spendthrifts, in order to recover themselves, which when they have effected, they are commonly changed. Refuse no Presents that come thro' proper Channels. Take Example by your Superiors as to regarding of Merit, who always find it most in those who are convenient to them. I strongly recommend it to you, to have no Intrigue with any of the Ladies of this House, nor undeceive them as to your Condition; Mrs. Winnett, who knows you, will keep the Secret for her own Sake, provided you do not make her jealous; I confess your Temptations are great, for the Ladies are beautiful and familiar, and seldom refuse Men of your Consequence any thing in their Power: Get their Money from them, because it enables them to rebel. Be fond of Addresses, they may be a Defence to you hereafter, but if they are not submissive and agreeable, break them insensibly into Factions, for this Course will weaken them and strengthen you; by having one of your Side to oppose another with, and hearing their Complaints, it will be Proofs of your Friendship, Mildness and Justice; in

some

some Cases side with the Weak against the Strong, so as to keep up the Strife, and change Sides as often as you see convenient; let the Ballance of the Factions be pretty equal, for by this Method you shake off half your Dependence, and when you find it convenient to give more Weight to either Scale, Condescensions from you to some of the Principals on the opposite Side will do it, and leave those bewildered you spirited before; by this Conduct you have their Fortunes and Liberty in your Power: Keep up a Spirit of Animosity and Revenge among them, then will you be informed of whatever passes in their Cabals: Speak affectionately of the Blessings of Liberty and Property, but let them enjoy no more of either than what is sufficient to undo and beggar them: Enervate and debase their Minds and Bodies, by making the most insinuating Luxuries fashionable, which will help their Ruin, and keep them dependent on you: Make humble and honest Poverty insufferable, and prepare them for all the base Purposes a Statesman or Governor may want. The same sort of Adulation you receive, return improved to your Superiors; such various Passions as they have, which the low World call Vices, sooth as the most amiable Virtues, for there are no Sounds of Musick so ravishing to the Great or Fair as well-timed Flattery. Avoid Discourses or even Thoughts of Death, for they may occasion some silly Qualms to arise, which the vulgar Part of Mankind call Conscience, if it forces itself upon you, bring up that busy Plague of the Mind, which is often too troublesome, and discharge it like a loathsome Puke; be ashamed of it, none but Novices in Government think about it. Have always at your Tongue's End the Publick Good, but in your Heart only your own Interest. Be not so far amused with the loud Applauses and Addresses you receive, as to let them influence you

from your intended Purpose. This Government is no more an Inheritance to you than it has been to your Predecessors; you may go out like a Candle in a Stink, but leave them the Stink for their Money. Before you appear at publick Levee, be informed who are there, and prepare yourself with proper Addresses for those of Consequence at it. Practice before your Glass till you can play your Part well, and surround yourself with Chairs, and suppose them to be the Sturdy Beggars you are going among; when you think yourself perfect, then make your Appearance, and when in the Ring, deign to smile graciously upon all your Sycophants and Tools, sometimes their Numbers may be so great as to puzzle you, upon such Occasions give and take Snuff plentifully, bow to some, nod at others, and lay your Hand on some of their Shoulders; if any happens to be there whose Honour or Virtue you know to be incorruptible, take him familiarly aside, in sight of all amuse him with any kind of Discourse, this Intimacy between you will make his Friends suspect him, and consequently render him feeble and weak against your Designs, &c. all those you deign to distinguish will then conclude their Fortunes made, and declare the Governor's Friendship, and that they can scarcely get from him when they have the Pleasure of seeing him; this sort of Behaviour will cost you nothing; but when in private the dear Vanity of it will amuse you, and make those blinded Fools, who run into such Raptures on your many Excellencies, curse their Inadvertency, when you give them Reason to repent; you must reward those among them who betray their Friends to serve your Designs. A Governor is little more than a Cypher if there be Concord among his People, for it is then, touch one touch all; but Discord well managed has the contrary Effect, you may strip them all in Turn, and receive the Thanks of their Opposites for so doing. This System

System of Government I would have you record, that it may serve you and your Successors hereafter.

In this manner did my Head wander, like *Sancho's*, upon his imaginary Plan, till I was dressed and went to my Drawing-room; my dear Mrs. *Winnett* came presently from Mrs. *Price* to inform me that Breakfast was ready; she in a most affectionate Manner recommended to me, to have no Intimacy with any of the Ladies, that if I had all would be discovered that they could boast of. I promised to observe her Caution, but said, I should be glad to have her Company when retired, which she assured me of.

We went to Mrs. *Price*, and found four of her favourite Ladies with her, who appeared to me to have polite Education.

Mrs. *Price* desiring my Company, about five Days after I had been there, to take a Jaunt with her to her Country-house, we commissioned Mrs. *Winnett* to take Care of the Flock till we returned. The great Undertakings she had in the Business of Love, delayed her a Night longer than she expected, which induced me, from the Beauty and Solitude of the Place, and the Recess I had from Business, to stay till she was at Leisure. We were no sooner returned, but Mrs. *Winnett* gave us the dreadful Tidings that *Catharine Finch* and *Violante Andretti*, a *Venetian* Singer and very great Beauty, had escaped out of their Window, by the Help of a Ladder of Ropes, which was found after them, and that no Person could give the least Account of them.

Mrs. *Price* stood confounded awhile at this News, at last she said, it was hard she could not go about her lawful Affairs, without such Mischief happening at home; this also convinced me that I had been remiss in my Duty as a Governor, who con-

tinually, for good Reasons, expects to have his Garrison besieged, when most of those in it are inclined to Mutiny and Desertion. Mrs. Price told me positively the Town must be searched for them, for his Honour would not want the *Italian* upon any Consideration, adding, he was extremely fond of *Catharine Finch*. I told her I did not know where to look for them, upon which she got me Pen, Ink, and Paper, and ordered me to write a List of all the Bauds and Pimps in and about *Westminster* and *London*, that made a genteel Appearance, and at their Houses to enquire for them, for by some Means or other they must be got back. I was as uneasy as herself about them, and made the most strict Enquiry, according to my List, but to no Purpose, and continued it in vain till I despaired of finding them. Mrs. Price likewise took her Turn with as little Success. When the Doctor missed them, the Trouble it gave him was inconceivable, but their getting off by means of a Ladder of Ropes, convinced him we were not privy to it, nor could prevent it.

In less than a Month I saw an Advertifement in one of the Papers, setting forth, that a foreign Lady, of very great Beauty, was publickly to shew her Legs, high as her Knees, against those of an *English* Lady, the majority of the Company to decide which had the finest, or was the most beautiful Woman, Tickets for Admittance were a Crown each, to be seen at a certain Hour at Night, at *Lebeck's* great Club-room in the *Sirand*. Upon reading this, it immediately occurred to me that they were my stray Pigeons, and I determined to go in quest of them; I accordingly set out, and seeing the House fill very fast, I bought a Ticket, went up into the Room, and fixed myself as much out of sight of the Ladies as I thought convenient. To a reasonable Person it must be astonishing, to

see so many Persons assembled on so foolish an Occasion; in short, the Room was soon filled with the *Beau Monde* and People of Distinction.

Presently the Ladies appeared, and proved to be those that had given me so much Trouble.

It is not to be conceived how much the Company thought the Honour of *England* concerned in their Countrywoman's Legs, who lately thought little of them herself, yet declared that the Stranger should have Justice done her. There appeared in both of them an exact Symmetry of Features, which being minutely examined, the Spectators were divided in Opinion whose had the Preference; I thought thought there was a little Partiality shewn in this material Affair, imagining the *Italian's* was beyond Controversy. At length the Company called out, *To Legs! To Legs!* *Catharine* instantly obeyed, and shewed a little above her Knees, *Violante* did the same; but sure never was Assembly more embarrassed than the present on this great Occasion. To set Matters in a clearer Light, it was generally desired they would pull down their Stockings to their Shoe Latchet, and both exhibit together; which being acquiesced with, it was then declared by the most exact Judges in the Place, that the *Italian* was the best formed, and *Catharine* had the whitest Legs.

The Shew being over, the Company seemed to be very well satisfied with what they had seen, and departed, forming themselves into Parties, some reasoning on the Excellence of one, and some on the other.

I waited some time for an Opportunity, a few of the Company staying with them, to present myself to their full View. They seemed not a little surprized when they first perceived me. I invited them home with me, but they absolutely refused, and begged the Protection of the Gentlemen, being

ing in high Spirits with all the Money they had got for Tickets. After leaving a proper Person to watch them, I went to Mrs. *Price* and acquainted her where they were, she instantly went and found them: Her common Method was to lend the Ladies of the Seraglio some valuable Thing to wear, that in case they should absent themselves she might threaten them with a Prosecution if they refused to return; which Policy being now made use of, frightened them so greatly that they were glad to return home with her, but were confined pretty much.

To do Mrs. *Price* Justice, she was as excellent at protecting as debauching, and acted in either Capacity agreeable to the Will of those who employed her.

There was no other Immorality practised here but looking at and speaking to the Ladies, which was certainly all the Liberty the Persons admitted to this House desired to have; such Restraint was very intolerable to those unhappy Women, who had been accustomed to other sort of Freedoms, and many who had absconded for two or three Months have frequently petitioned to be restored again, and being denied Admittance was looked upon as the most severe Punishment.

It is scarcely credible that any Man of Reason would expend five thousand Pounds a Year thus ridiculously. I ordered these two Prisoners into close Confinement and bid them prepare for Trial, which I appointed to be in two Days after.

By this Time I was well acquainted with *Caroline Finch's* Life, in relating of which I hope to be excused some few Repetitions, that are to me unavoidable, as she had such a Connection in the History of *Emilia*.

THE



T H E

H I S T O R Y

O F

CATHARINE FINCH.

SHE was born in *London*, and by the accidental Death of her Brother her Fortune was advanced to six thousand Pounds. She was the only Person of her Family who escaped the Poverty occasioned by her Uncle's Bankruptcy, by which her Father, Mother, and Sister were brought to great Distresses. Her Mother was extremely fond of her, but there was some little Censure happened as to her Conduct before Marriage, a Servant Man having been seen in her Room later than was thought proper, for which he was turned off, and herself reprimanded; but the fond Mother bore a great deal of ill Usage from her upon this account.

She was married to one Mr. *Rich*, a young Merchant, worth upwards of twenty thousand Pounds; he declared to her Mother, the Day after their Wedding, that she was not a Virgin when he married her, though but eighteen Years of Age, and seemingly

seemingly adorned with all the Innocence of her Sex. Mrs. *Finch* and other experienced Matrons reasoned with Mr. *Rich*, and satisfied him he was wrong in the Opinion he had of his Wife. Whatever his Thoughts were, he prudently seemed contented, as Matters were gone too far to retract.

In a short time after he took his Wife and her Mother, Mrs. *Finch*, home with him in his Coach to a very genteel House in *Bishopsgate-street*, *London*. He was an exceeding fond and, I may say, obedient Husband, and inclined to relieve her Family, who at that time were quite broke, having no House of their own. Her Sister, a fine and virtuous Girl, wrote to her an Account of the Distress she and their Father was in, and desired to lodge with her; she received the Letter with all the Ill-nature and Contempt imaginable. Her Mother, with Tears in her Eyes, desired she would shew it to Mr. *Rich*, but she, in her usual Stile, said, she knew how to manage without being dictated to, which soon silenced the poor depending Mother. She sent this Letter back by the Messenger, with this Answer, never to trouble her any more, which obliged the poor afflicted Sister to go to Service, and by an honest Industry to support her Father, whilst she indulg'd herself in every sensual Pleasure.

High Dress, grand Living, and resorting publick Places of Diversion engrossed all her Thoughts, and though she was indulged by her Husband in all these Extravagancies, yet her insatiable Gout for Pleasure knew no Bounds. His Success in Trade, with any tolerable Oeconomy, might soon have enriched him, but her Genius was so fertile in finding out Schemes for spending of Money, that a good Estate left to her Management would soon cut an indifferent Figure. He had, besides a Number of Clerks, one *John Rince*, a handsome Youth

Youth of about eighteen Years of Age, his Apprentice; these Gentlemen used to dine together, but his Wife in seven or eight Months time, removed the Apprentice from the Clerks Table to her own.

Her scurrillous Wit had in a short time banished every sober, modest Person from her House, so that her innocent Husband was obliged to put up with all her indecent Inuendoes and low mean Similies, which were certainly disagreeable to him, as his Taste was more refined. Her Conduct in general too plainly shewed her Affection for him, if she really had any, was upon the Decline; she approved of nothing he said or did, and with Pleasure forgave his Absence at all times. Such Behaviour is the surest Sign of Virtue's being in Danger. When our Inferiors are put upon a Level with us, they generally praise those Errors that make us look ridiculous in the Eyes of the more discerning, and by accustoming ourselves to an unmannerly way of Conversation, it becomes habitual to us in all Companies, as was mostly her Case, especially with her Husband. One Day they happened to have a Goose for Dinner, and she desired him to cut up his Fellow Creature: At another time he asked her what was for Dinner, she replied, a Piece of your Brother. What do you mean? says he. Are you stupid? returned she, I mean a Piece of a Hog; which Reflection he thought levelled at him, as he was a fat gross Man.

Such Specimens of her Genius as these being daily shewn, determined him to ask her as few Questions as possible, to procure to him Peace and Quietness, which, next to her Esteem, was what he most desired.

A Resignation of his Power and Command in his own Family, indicated a Weakness, or want of Experience in him; for it may be well inferred, from

from her Contempt and Disesteem of him, her Intentions were not to stop there. Had he in time shewed his Authority, the Infamy, Ruin, and Desolation that afterwards ensued to himself and Family might have been happily prevented; had he limited her unbounded Extravagance, it would have been as commendable, as it is base and scandalous to keep the Partner of our Lives upon a rigid Dependence.

Her Mother was the first that observed the Pleasure she took in the Company of young *Rince*, who who was at this time a very innocent well-behaved Lad. When she presumed to expostulate with her about the Scandal and Infamy that might attend such a loose Conduct, she desired her to mind her own Business, adding, if you do not, we must live in separate Houses.

Notwithstanding these Threats, her Mother was continually laying down such Rules to her as would, if adhered to, have preserved her Reputation, which at length she resented to such a Degree, as to order her to keep her Room or quit the House. I shall leave Mrs. *Finch*, in her Confinement, to contemplate upon the Ingratitude of her darling Child, and to ruminate with Sorrow on the want of an Habitation of her own.

The Absence of Mrs. *Finch*, together with the Supineness and Easiness of Mr. *Rich*, gave as much Opportunity as she could wish to have the Company of her Apprentice: He was really a Novice as to Intrigue, and understood none of those Love-Signals and Encouragements that are so eagerly seized and caught at by Lovers of Experience. She tried every Art when with him alone, she looked, she sighed, she languished, and discovered to him her lovely white Bosom, then almost undrest herself, and bid him dress her again, and asked him, if he had an Opportunity with a Lady he loved

loved would he improve it, &c. &c. but all would not then do, which so chagrined her that she determined to gratify her unruly Passion, and, in Fact, to force him to comply; for which Purpose she thought it necessary to remove her poor afflicted Mother, whose Room was too near her intended Scene of Pleasure, to the Garret, four Pair of Stairs high.

This Instance of Wickedness and base Ingratitude shews, that the Ties of Nature, Friendship, and Obligations, will be sacrificed and must fall Victims in our way to the Gratification of a darling Vice; but it cannot thus prey upon us till we abandon Reason and Morality. An Historian says of a certain King, He never spared Man in his Anger, nor Woman in his Lust; I believe our beauteous *Catharine* was much of his Disposition, for she spared neither Husband or Mother to accomplish her Desires.

When all was clear, and Opportunity inviting, she called *Rince*, and received him in her Bed-chamber, where she made a full Declaration of Love to him. The Youth was astonished, not knowing what to say, or how to behave. In this Confusion she seized him in her Arms, and did not part with him till she had debauched him. He merits some little Compassion, by unfortunately falling into the Hands of so abandoned a Wretch, for his Ruin and hers commenced from this Day, though they continued their private Interviews for some time unnoticed.

The other Clerks observed the high Favour and Esteem he was in, and that they were neglected more than they used to be when he boarded with them, which Difference caused a Jealousy, and as there is no Passion more watchful, they determined to have their Eyes and Ears open, to know if possible the Cause.

A few

A few Successes commonly emboldens Lovers, and makes them less cautious; it was so with them; for when Mr. *Rich* was at home, as they could not meet in his Bed-chamber, the most convenient Room they could think of in this Dilemma was that which Mrs. *Finch* was turned out of, and the worst furnished of any of the lower Apartments; it had a Press Bedstead in it, where a Servant generally lay when Mrs. *Finch* was there, with a few ordinary Chairs and an old Table; *Catharine* got a fine *Turkey* Carpet spread on the Floor of this Room, without any Change of the Furniture, which surprized the Servant Maid who laid it, for there was not at this time the least Suspicion of her Guilt.

The Clerks often observed them go cautiously in there one after another, and fasten the Door, that used commonly to be open. They were excessively curious, and agreed by Turns to watch in the Bedstead, and as there was no Bed in it, they had each Room enough to lie concealed, and observe all that passed.

The first Day the eldest Clerk took his Post, but nothing happening he was replaced by another the next, whose Curiosity was fully satisfied; for in a little time *Rince* came in, and was soon followed by his Mistress. In less than a Minute the young Gentleman in the Press beheld Matter of very great Speculation before they parted. When the Coast was clear he goes to his Brother Clerk, who asked him what he had seen or heard; they were both there, replied he, and I heard her give *Rince* very good Advice, if he will but follow it (but he concealed the real Affair to suit his own Purpose); however, added he, I shall watch them once more, to satisfy my own Curiosity, and accordingly the next Day fixed himself in the same Place, when behold our enamoured Lovers re-enter the Room, where,

here, after raising their vicious Appetites by soft and balmy Kisses, they proceeded to more substantial Joys, when he rushed out upon them, to their great Surprise, and desired to speak with her in private.

You may judge of their Confusion; she was all a Tremor, and her Gallant, who was ordered to withdraw, in as great a Consternation. On her knees she begged he would not expose her. He said, Madam, I was ordered by my Master to watch you, and saw you both Yesterday; there is no way to save you but by making me your Friend, which nothing will effect but your immediately granting me the Favour you intended *Rince*. Whether she did not like to be disappointed, or was afraid he would discover what he had seen, I cannot determine, but she instantly complied, and received him into the warm Embraces from which he had before expelled *Rince*; so near is a Woman to become common who once breaks in upon her Virtue. Notwithstanding he had extorted this Compliance from her, *Rince* was her Favourite; however, she was obliged, through Fear, to be very complaisant to *Robert*, (for that was the Fellow's Name) who unexpectedly triumphed over her Pride and Constancy to her young Lover.

She was now obliged, to her great Mortification, to change the Place of Rendezvous. As she was thoroughly convinced that the Carpet was ill matched with the Furniture of the Room where she consummated her Revels, she had it taken off, and fixed upon the Garret she had confined her Mother to, having first turned her out of Doors half naked, which reduced her to the Necessity of applying to the well-disposed for Charity, till she could reach her other Daughter, then in Service; who supported her for Life.

This plainly demonstrates, that one Vice is generally the Parent of another.

Her Coach was still kept up, and her Manner of living as genteel as ever; she had one Gallant for the upper Part of the House, another for the lower, and her Husband for the Middle; this pleasurable Course was unhappily interrupted, by her discovering an uncommon Indisposition, which proved to be the Venereal Disorder, about twelve Days after she had granted the Favour to *Robert* the Clerk, who was a very debauched Fellow, which she communicated to her young Gallant and unhappy Husband.

Thus was the Tranquillity of the Family changed to Misery, by the abandoned Conduct of the lascivious Woman, who first began to violate the Principles of Virtue and Honour by disobeying, using ill, and neglecting the best of Mothers; but the Punishment of such Wretches is generally adequate to their Crimes.

Neither herself, Husband, nor *Rince* knew what their Disorder was, but the Anguish and Pain obliged the latter to inform some of his Companions, who having more Experience, told him it was the *French* Disorder, which he acquainted his Mistress of; she was greatly confounded and shocked to find she had contracted a filthy Ailment, that would continually insinuating its Poison into her whole Mass of Blood, and if not immediately prevented must end in nauseous Rottenness and Death.

In order to effect the Cure, she privately sent *Rince* to buy a Book that treated fully of the Disorder, and understood by it that there must be proper Regulation and Regimen used in her Family, with a Forbearance of her late Practices, which she could scarcely bear to think of; four of the being infected, she concluded, while one of the continued infected, the others, by a Familiar

now grown too common, could not be without it, which shewed the Necessity there was for a Separation. The Thoughts of her Husband's discovering her Baseness, by the Medicines he must be obliged to take, gave her the least Concern of any, relying on her own Power and Influence over him.

Mr. *Rich* was so very ill that he applied to a Surgeon without her Knowledge, who told him honestly his Case, and said, if he did not immediately take proper Remedies the Consequence would be very bad. The Goodness of Mr. *Rich* upon this Occasion was very extraordinary, for he told the Surgeon he got the Misfortune abroad, and had unhappily given it to his Wife.

When he went home he said to his Wife in private, You have heard me complain of an Illness for some time past, I have this Day consulted a Surgeon about it, who assures me it is the foul Disease, if so, I must certainly have got it from you. From me, you Monster! says she, you got it, I suppose, from some of your Creatures abroad, and, not content with injuring my Person, would wipe the Scandal from yourself, by endeavouring to stab my Reputation. He, with unusual Courage, replied, Madam, I have had no Dealings with any Woman except yourself, therefore it is evident you must be the Cause of my Disorder, which if you do not immediately confess I shall instantly hand you out of this House, and publish your Disgrace to the World even though I suffer by it myself.

Confusion appeared in all her Features; she fell upon her Knees, beseeched his Mercy, and confessed every particular Circumstance before she left her affecting Position. He tenderly viewed her assembling Tears, which melted him into Compassion and Love; she importuned, and he not

only forgave her, but agreed to take the Shame of it upon himself. The two Gallants were discharged, and the unhappy *Rince* died of its Effects in about seven Months after in a Salivation. As to *Robert* he always had it, and took no Pains to get rid of such a fulsome Companion, only to keep it under, as he phrased it, which he was very regular at. Mr. *Rich* employed the same Surgeon to attend him and his Wife that he spoke to before; surely the most injured Innocence or Virtue could not exclaim more against the Perfidy and Baseness of a Husband, in such a Case, than did Mrs. *Rich* to the Surgeon, who, like others of his Profession, was regardless of the Cause, so he reaped the Benefit.

In many Stages of this Disorder it is requisite to come to a nice Examination of the Parts affected, which is generally the Case, when a very fine young Lady is in the Question, and a young Surgeon or an old Letcher to take Care of her. His Examinations of her in private were abundantly longer and more frequent than with Mr. *Rich*, which, from the extraordinary Care he took of the Lady, may induce the Reader to believe that he had other Views than what he was really employed for.

I think proper to say a little of his Person and Circumstances: He was a very handsome, agreeable Man, about thirty Years of Age, and had been married near four Years to a young Lady, whom he had eased of the Tooth-ach, with a Fortune of four thousand Pounds, which he had since greatly improved, kept his Chariot, and was reputed as good as any of his Profession in *London*; but it will presently appear his Skill was not equal to his Fame for he had not attended Mrs. *Rich* above three Weeks before he was of Opinion the Disorder was removed, owing, as may be presumed, to his Impatience

patience for receiving a Compliment due to those of his Function, from Ladies in her way, by which the Cure is proved; but he was, by an unhappy want of Judgment, severely injured, and that by being a few Days too early, which he most barbarously and ungratefully gave to the young Lady who married him and made his Fortune; this was the Cause, not long after, of a Separation between them; however, with his utmost Art and Industry, he at length perfectly effected their Cure and his own.

It might be expected that all she had suffered, together with her Husband's Knowledge and Forgiveness of so heinous a Crime, would have reformed her, if she had had any Remains of Grace or Gratitude.

When thoroughly recovered, she remembered no more the innocent Persons who had been involved in her Guilt, but again-reassumed Dominion over her Husband and Dependents, and carried on the most flagrant and bare-faced Intrigue with the Surgeon, who was almost always with her, till Mr. *Rich* was hooted at by his Friends and Neighbours. When he found her Conduct, which he had a Mind to conceal, was publickly known, he resolved to take other Measures. All the Servants in his House respected and loved him, and freely offered their Assistance to convince him of her Perfidy.

Determining now to detect her, he pursued the old Scheme, telling her he had Business in the Country, which would detain him two or three Days at least; the Surgeon embraced this Opportunity, and came, invited by his dear Enamorato, to enjoy the full Possession of her Love. About twelve the same Night, when they were closely locked in each others Embraces, Mr. *Rich* returned with some Friends, and was told by the Servants that

his Spouse and the Surgeon were in Bed together in his Chamber; they took off their Shoes and went with all possible Silence to the Room Door, which they burst open with their united Force, there the lovely Couple were discovered naked in Bed: Mr. Rich had the Surgeon immediately secured, against whom he issued a Prosecution, and obtained a Verdict against him in *Guildhall* for three thousand Pounds Damages, which Money he was obliged to pay directly, or go to Gaol. As for his Wife, he ordered her out of his House, which she did not leave until she had stripped it of Plate and Jewels to the Amount of eight hundred Pounds. The Surgeon was utterly ruined by this Verdict and its Consequences, his Wife and he were parted, all his worthy Friends rejected him, and his Reputation was irretrievably forfeited.

Here let us observe the Complaisance of our Laws to the Ladies: A Man is generally punished with the Loss of his Fortune, or his Liberty for ever, for a criminal Conversation with another Man's Wife; but we never meet an Instance of a Lady's being confined for the like, though she is often known to be the Seducer. I think she rather seems to get more Liberty to pursue her Inclinations, by being detected: In my Opinion she was as guilty as the Surgeon, and would be as much punished if the Laws were made alike for each Sex. In most civilized Kingdoms and Commonwealths, Adultery in Women was punished with Death, and for this Reason, that they might impose Children got by others upon their Husbands, as their own; but, Thanks to our Land of Liberty, get Children as you will the Husband must take Care of them; and this Part of our Laws every Woman knows as well as the most learned Professors of it.

I shall

I shall here observe in what an odd manner the Romans punished Women for Adultery, as is recited in the third Volume of the *Roman History*, Page 215. In the Reign of *Theodosius the Great*, it was customary in *Rome* to inflict such a Punishment on a Woman taken in Adultery as removed not the Sin but increased the Vice, for they confined her to a common Stew, where she was compelled to prostitute herself to such Adventurers as were provided for her, and whilst the Deed was doing her Neighbours were informed, by means of some sounding Vessel prepared for the Purpose, that she was that Moment under Correction. I am sure the Ladies of our Land are far more obliged to us, who give them Liberty to do as they please, rather than confine and pimp for them, as the *Romans* did.

Catharine thought herself happier now than ever, being sound in Body, having exceeding good Clothes, eight hundred Pounds, and not subject to the Restraint of Father, Mother, or Husband. She took Lodgings at a Guinea a Week, and her next Care was to provide the most agreeable Man she could to live with. She was extremely fond of a personable Man, and in order to find one for her Purpose, often viewed the King's Life Guards; at last she fixed upon one Mr. Cook, who lived with his Parents in *Houndsditch, London*. Her Choice in him proved her Judgment. As to his Person, he was an exceeding fine, clever, young Fellow, and as well disposed in Mind as perfect in Body, before his Acquaintance with her, only making a little Allowance for his Age, and the Habit of Gallantry common to the Youth of that Metropolis. Though she never had spoke to him, yet, on some frivolous Pretence, she sent for him to her Lodgings, having first dressed herself as alluring as possible to attract him the more. When he came,

her Prefence struck him with some Awe; she desired him to sit down, saying, Sir, I have sent for you about an Affair that concerns me greatly, and it is in your Power to make me easy, and then stopt. He replied, Madam, if it is in my Power pray command me. Sir, says she, I have had a great many Misfortunes, though very young; for I was married to a Man I could not love, who got with me a Fortune of above six thousand Pounds, though I never enjoyed a happy Hour with him; we have been parted for ever these three Weeks past, which Time I have mostly spent in seeking for a Companion for Life in this City, where the World seems to be assembled; after a diligent and careful Search my Fancy and Judgment have at length pointed you out to me. Mr. Cook interrupted her, saying, the Honour she had conferred upon him was far beyond his Merits. As to your Merits, Sir, says she, I know nothing of them, but, if the Face be an Index to the Mind, I believe you are sincere; there is no Man or Woman that has a good Person but knows it too well, and when I assure you that you are a very handsome young Gentleman, I beg you may believe me, and that it is the greatest Motive which induces me to offer you my Person, with the little I am possessed of, provided you are as much disengaged as I am; I can assure you that I am worth eight hundred Pounds clear, besides my Watch and Clothes. Mr. Cook, finding by her Discourse that she was in earnest, honestly told her he had nothing of his own, except his Clothes, that he understood the Linen Business, and if she liked it he would go into it again, as he had behaved well to those who dealt with him before, and hoped with her Stock to have Credit enough to carry it on. She said she was agreeable to go into any Trade or Business with him, and desired him to consider of it against the Morrow. They

They drank Tea and supped together, but she encouraged him in no other Freedoms.

This Night, I believe, he thought his Fortune and Happiness complete, but the next Morning, when he waited upon her and rehearsed over the preceding Evening's Conversation, instead of adhering directly to it, she confessed to him the most scandalous Parts of her past Life, solemnly promising a thorough Reformation. This honest Declaration, instead of separating them, rather cemented their Affections.

They went together next Morning and took a House near *Abchurch-lane* at fifty-five Pounds a Year, and immediately prepared it for Business, living as Man and Wife, intirely unmolested by Mr. *Rich.*

It is surprising she should so suddenly trust her whole Fortune and Person in his Hands, without any Security, merely from Fancy.

They were soon settled in a good House and Shop, Part of which they lett furnished, which made their Rent easy.

Catharine dropped all her Pride, and put her Hands to every Thing with the Maid, from whom she was now learning the Usefulness of them; by this it appears that Women will do any thing for the Man they love.¹ They went on for a Time with a tolerable equal Ballance between their Profits and Expences, so as to preserve their Credit. In the first half Year an intimate Acquaintance of his was arrested for five hundred and seventy Pounds, for whom he became Security, without the Knowledge of *Catharine*, who managed her household Affairs frugally, and behaved exceeding well; when he told her of it, she appeared very sorrowful and pensive; he asked her what Reason she had to be so; she replied, her Happiness was so perfect at present, that the least Danger of its being

being interrupted alarmed her, and that she did not think it prudent or kind in him to hazard their Welfare for ever upon the Faith and Integrity of any Man, especially as there was no pressing Necessity for it, but that now his Liberty and Fortune were at stake as a Temptation, and both might be inevitably ruined; she then assured him, weeping, that her Apprehensions were more upon his account than her own, that she was then better prepared to resist Poverty than ever, and should never think herself deplorable while she had him.

It was not very long before Mr. Cook was convinced that her Apprehensions were well founded, for the Person to whom he became Security, having sued the Bond, the Debtor was obliged to run away, and an Execution was brought by the Sheriff against the Effects of Mr. Cook, for the Sum of six hundred Pounds, with the Costs; he not having above sixty Pounds in Cash to discharge the Debt with, the usual Havock was made by the Sale of his Stock, which ruined both his Fortune and Credit.

Catharine was attending the Shop when the Sheriff came in, as she was a fine Woman he shewed her a little more Respect than common, acquainting her in a genteel Manner of the Occasion of his coming, which he declared himself sorry for, and desired she would excuse him for doing his Duty; she told him, with great calmness, it was not in her Power to prevent it, therefore he might proceed as he thought proper; he then seized the Goods in the Shop, which were more than sufficient to pay the Debt.

This Misfortune did not in the least make *Catharine* upbraid or reflect upon Mr. Cook for his bad Conduct, on the contrary, she administered all the Comfort to him she could, observing, that they were both young and healthy, and had still something

thing left to begin Business with again, and that provided he would make himself easy and contented, she was thoroughly satisfied with her present Condition. He was inconsolable, mostly upon her account, for he loved her affectionately.

After three or four Days melancholy Reflections he bought a fine black Gelding and Fire Arms, determining to go upon the Highway, unknown to her. Having some Money due to him at *Wind-* for Goods, he told her he would go there for it, and accordingly set off. On different Roads he met with five Stage Coaches, all which he robbed, together with fifteen Horsemen, and behaved with as much Politeness and Humanity as could be expected from a Gentleman of his Profession; in five Days he returned home with four hundred and sixty Pounds in his Pockets, besides Gold Watches and other Things of Value, putting his Horse up in a Livery Stable.

Catharine was greatly rejoiced to see him, for she was excessively uneasy at his long Absence; he was in greater Spirits than when he left her, and took the first Opportunity to give her all he had got abroad, the sight of which greatly surprized her; she questioned him about it, and he gave her a particular Account of all his Exploits upon the Road since he left her, declaring he would rather hazard a shameful Death than she should suffer by his Imprudence. If it was in my Power, says she, to be angry with you, you have now given me great Occasion. For why? replied he. By shewing a Contempt of my Judgment, and a Diffidence of my Integrity; I knew nothing of your being Bail till it was too late, the Consequence of which was your taking to the Highway, which I would never have consented to had you acquainted me therewith. I believe, says he, that it is a Weight upon your Conscience, I can assure you it is

is upon mine, thus unjustly by Force to deprive other People of their Property, but I hope it will be in my Power to make Satisfaction to the injured World. You entirely mistake my Reasons, replied she, I am not so uneasy at your committing Highwayman, as afraid that the Law should overtake you, few or none escaping that practice it; as to your robbing, I think nothing of the Crime, but the shocking Consequence if you should be discovered; as to the Violence and Fraud of it, there are many Examples of Kings and Countries watching the Distresses of their Neighbours, that make no Scruple of seizing the first Opportunity to break or evade the most solemn and sacred Treaties of Peace and Friendship, ruining, robbing, and destroying the Weak and Afflicted, such were your *Cæsars*, *Alexanders*, *Hannibals*, *Lewis's*, and many others, who were dignified Robbers, and not within the Reach of Power. Look among the common Part of Mankind, and you will see them waiting an Opportunity to catch the Unwary, professing Love and Friendship, till they lull those asleep they intend to deceive, who afterwards awake in Ruin. Our Nature seems to be made up of nothing but Fraud, Avarice, Deceit, Hypocrisy, Selfishness, and Ingratitude, which we see every Day practised for Interest; the most villainous Crimes are every Day committed with Impunity, that come not under the Penalty of the Laws, far more base and scandalous than robbing on the Highway, but not attended with so much Danger.

We are now to consider our Safety, continued she, and what to do with this Money; but pray was your Face exposed? He told her it was not, for that he had a Mask on, which gave her some little Satisfaction.

They

They then resolved to pay their Debts with this ill-got Pelf, and try their Fortune once more in Trade, which was accordingly put in Practice, but without Success, which induced him to take the Road again; so naturally prone are we, when once slipped in Vice, to pursue it even to our Destruction. Accordingly, being well equipped for the purpose, he mounted and rode to *Barnet*, with only a single Half Crown in his Pocket.

Not meeting with any Booty upon the Road, he put up at one of the best Inns in the Town, lay there that Night, and in the Morning rode off, leaving a Reckoning of nine Shillings behind him. The Landlord soon missed him, who upon Inquiry was told he was but just gone; upon which he instantly ordered his Horse and followed him; *Cook* riding on very gently, the Host soon came up with him, and demanded his Reckoning in very indifferent Language, which so provoked *Cook*, (who was not in a very good Humour, having met with nothing as yet to suit his Purpose) that he turned short upon him, and, with cocked Pistol in Hand, robbed him of thirty-seven Guineas, driving him and his Horse two or three Miles before him, the better to secure his Escape. He was bold and daring, and would attack four or five at once if they came in his way, even though they were armed, which made him a Terror to all Travellers upon the Road he frequented.

Presently after he had parted with his Landlord he robbed four Coaches and seven Horsemen, and attacked a Gentleman and his Servant well armed, who shot him in the Shoulder; being within less than two Yards of him, *Cook* said, presenting a Pistol to his Breast, You have wounded me severely, Sir, but I will not take your Life if you make no farther Resistance, and instantly deliver your Money; the Gentleman replied, I have twenty six Guineas

Guineas in this Purse, giving it to him, and I assure you, upon the Word of an unfortunate Man, I have no more in the World, nor are these Horfes or that Servant mine. *Cook* gave him back his Money, saying it would be a Pity to deprive him of it, and wished him a good Journey.

This Gentleman lay that Night at *Barnet* with the same Landlord that had been robbed, who was generally laughed at for the Oddity of his Misfortunes; the Gentleman told him of the Highwayman's Generosity, and drank his Health; the Host shook his Head saying, I will never more take a Man by his Looks, for no Man had an honest Face than that said Villain that robbed me, first to eat, drink, and sleep with me, then ride away without paying me, and because I followed him to demand my own, he took from me all I had; surely it was a very ungentleman-like Behaviour.

He suffered a great deal of Pain by his Wound, notwithstanding which he took a great Round before he got home to his beloved *Catharine*, who received him with Transports of Joy, but was surprized at the paleness of his Face, which was occasioned by the Loss of Blood; he shewed her his Condition, which terribly alarmed her, but she directly got an experienced Surgeon to take Care of him; he gave her above five hundred and thirty Pounds he had made in this last Excursion, and in about three Weeks was perfectly cured.

Being now richer than they were for some time past, and living near the Seat of Gluttony and Epicurism, that is, the famous *Pontack's*, they indulged themselves in all the most sensual and expensive Pleasures, with which that House abounded, moderately speaking, they laid out this way above fourteen Pounds a Week. This Extravagance may appear incredible to some of my Readers.

ders, but the Truth of it I can with Safety aver, and every other Expence bore a due Proportion with this; he was most to blame for this Conduct, *Catharine* at first opposing it, but being naturally inclined to Luxury, it was no difficult Matter to bring her to Compliance.

Being, while the Money lasted, mostly void of Reflection, they thought themselves happy enough while they had the Price of a Dinner.

When Money became scarce he prepared to go off again; *Catharine* importuned him to give her Leave to join him in Disguise, but he would by no Means consent to it. He went to *Dover*, and lay a Night at *Canterbury*. At the Inn he put up at he observed a Gentleman who had a pretty deal of Money about him; the Landlord knew Mr. *Cook*, and had a Friendship for him, though he suspected his being a Highwayman.

Mr. *Cook* set off for *London* with the Gentleman he had observed, but before he went, desired the Landlord not to acquaint any Person with his Name that should enquire after it; the Landlord understood him very well, and promised he would not. Mr. *Cook* and his Fellow Traveller rode together till they came to a proper Place, and then he robbed him of two hundred and seventy Guineas.

After this Misfortune, the Gentleman returned to *Canterbury*; and pretending to be very ill, said to the Landlord, I never knew a more pleasant or agreeable Gentleman in my Life than him I rode with, he told me where he lived in *London*, but I was so sick I could not attend to his Discourse, though he engaged me to call and see him. Oh! Sir, says the Landlord, you will hear of Mr. *Cook* in *Abchurch-lane*.

The Gentleman set out for *London*, and went directly to Mr. *Cook*'s Shop, who was serving some Customers; the Gentleman said to him, Sir, do you

you know me? He replied, I do very well, please to walk into the Parlour and I'll be with you presently; as soon as the Customers were dispatched he waited upon the Gentleman, and introduced his Wife to him, saying to her, This, my Dear, is the Gentleman I robbed a little of this Side of *Canterbury* of two hundred and seventy Guineas, and immediately gave him the whole Sum back again, importuning him to stay with them to Dinner, which he complied with.

Over a Bottle after Dinner, the Gentleman said, he was a little surpris'd that he should have so much Confidence in him as to give him such an Invitation, when he knew it was so much in his Power to prejudice him. Mr. Cook replied, that his Countenance assured him that he was a merciful and good Man, and as such, he thought it was Prudence to act in the Manner he had.

This Gentleman often visited them after, and cordially advised him to refrain those wicked Courses which one time or other would be his Ruin, observing, that let him have ever so much Success, it was a Life of Misery and Fear, and generally ended in a scandalous Death, that most of them, if not taken in the Fact, were discovered by one Accident or other; that the Reward for apprehending a Highwayman was very tempting, and must make a Man be under continual Apprehensions and Disquietudes of Mind, for there could be no perfect Enjoyment where Rapine and Plunder were the Means made use of to attain it; adding further, that easy getting of Money invited them so much to Extravagance, that they scarcely ever, if they escaped the Law, died worth a Farthing; besides, that it often led Men into the greatest Sin that can be committed, which is Murder; for a Man that had his All about him, would sooner hazard his Person than part with it, and if

he makes Resistance, it is often at the Expence of his Life, which may probably prove the Ruin of his Family. The Success of such Proceedings emboldens a Course of foul and dangerous Vice so much, that the Life, Property, or whatever is dear to his Fellow-creature, are looked on as trivial: I hope, continued he, you have never imbrued your Hands in human Blood, and wish sincerely you would for ever avoid the Occasion, except in the Service of your King and Country. Your taking this Advice will give me great Satisfaction, as I have no other Interest in it than your Welfare, and wish you both extremely well, but desire you will from henceforward retrench your Expences. Mr. Cook thanked him for his Admonitions, assuring him, as his Advice was founded upon Reason, he would absolutely follow it.

Catharine heartily recommended what the Gentleman had advanced, saying, she feared he was in more Danger by robbing about *Canterbury* and *Dover*, where he was known, than he apprehended, and advised him to get another Lodging for a few Days, and not appear at home; in the mean time she would make Money of every Thing she could, and go with him where they might be safer; accordingly he followed her Advice, and took a Lodging in *Caroline-court*, which Precaution saved him this time.

She began to dispose of the Goods as fast as possible, but before she could clear the House there came Constables and others in search of him, imagining he was concealed at home; they carefully rummaged every Part of the House, and though they missed of him, yet they found a Parcel of Gold and Silver Watches, with various other Things that were advertised, and immediately took poor *Catharine* into Custody, who was committed to *Newgate*.

O

He

He was acquainted with this Disaster by a faithful Servant Maid, who used to pass between them with the greatest Caution.

Though *Catharine* was now in Confinement she never once repined at her Fate, being only in Fear for the Safety of her Husband, to whom she sent about seventy Pounds by her Maid; the Girl discharged the Trust with Fidelity, although she had an Opportunity of getting an hundred and forty Pounds to betray him, this extraordinary Instance of her Integrity is the more to be admired, as her Wages was not more than four or five Pounds a Year; besides, she was often tempted with Money by those who were in search of him, and also the Reward insured to her, all which she rejected.

His Horse was found and seized, and his Father's House searched, which made him change his Lodgings once more, without acquainting any one of the Place.

Catharine had a Room to herself in *Newgate*, and behaved very well while there; she would not sit with a single Man, except in the open Press-yard, where she often walked and was greatly admired. Sessions began about three Weeks after her being committed, and she was brought to the Bar of the *Old Baily* to take her Trial; but no Facts appearing against her she was discharged, being well fleeced in her late Apartments, and went home. It was now a melancholy House to her, who was almost distracted about her Husband, not knowing where to find him. The next Morning a common Porter brought her a Letter, to the following Purport.

My dear *Catharine*,

NO one can conceive the Afflictions I endured on account of your Troubles, and our long separation: I heard of you every Day, though I confined myself, and was fully informed of your regular and good Conduct in *Newgate*. In three days you will hear where to find me, be prepared at that time to come to me, never to part again. As this requires no Answer, I conclude,

Yours for ever,

E. C.

This Letter made her much easier than before: the that Day sold all the Goods that remained in the Shop, giving up the House and Furniture to the trusty Maid Servant to keep for her, in case she ever returned, if not to make the most Advantage of them for herself; at the same time telling her, if she could let the Shop, and the Rooms Lodgings, they would bring her in near thirty pounds a Year.

She sent *Ruth*, her trusty Servant, to purchase an entire Suit of Man's Apparel, except a Wig, and to make it in her Agreement to have the Money returned if they did not fit, having now determined to adventure with her Husband.

The Reader may imagine a Design of this Kind could not be carried into Execution, but the like has been frequently done. In the true History of the Pirates you may read the Lives of *Mary Read* and *Anne Bonny*, disguised as Sailors, and their extraordinary Adventures and Courage. Many Women were disguised as Soldiers under the late Duke of *Marlbrough*, and on most Fields of Battle the

Bodies of Women are frequently found among the Slain. To prevent such Disguises a very severe Act has been made, called the *Black Act*, notwithstanding which, I believe, the Practice is still more frequent in *England* than any other Country I have, at this Instant, Notes before me of Female Adventurers, disguised at Sea, with some of the present Commanders of the Navy of *England*, that their Instructions particularly forbid them to take knowingly, any of the Fair Sex on Board; however these Things may be credited, the following Exploits done by *Catharine* will require much more Faith.

Her Maid returning with a Porter's Load, then retired, and found among the Parcel a Suit that fitted her extremely well; when perfectly dressed in it, she appeared as charming a young Fellow as ever strutted in a Pair of Breeches, shading her upper Lip and Chin with a kind of Paint, difficult to be got off, except with Brandy or other Spirits, and having shining black Hair, she appeared Man enough for any Expedition.

This Disguise was laid aside till she had Occasion to make use of it, which was shortly after on receiving a Letter from *Cook*, intimating, that he was at a little hedge Alehouse in *Field-lane*, and intended to continue there that Day; upon this Notice she immediately put on her Man's Dress, not forgetting the Embellishment of her upper Lip and Chin, and embracing her Maid, who wept sincerely, committed every Thing in the House to her Care, with an Assurance at the same time that she might depend on hearing from her, and then took her Leave; though it was the middle of the Day, she went off quite unobserved by her Neighbours.

She came to the Place appointed, and found him dozing, with his Head leaning on a Table; she sat down by him, and having roused him by a Rap on the Head with two of a Quart Pot that was standing empty, and calling for some Beer, she drank his Health, begging Pardon for disturbing him; though he had not the least Knowledge of her, he said, there was no Offence committed.

Observing the House was not much frequented, he thought they might be safer there than walking the Streets till Night, which determined her to spend the Remainder of the Day in it; accordingly she bespoke a Dinner, which he sometimes used to be fond of when at home; this created some Respect from the Hostess, who imagined her Trouble would be compensated by a flowing Bowl after Dinner, and caused her to offer them a Room much more convenient for Gentlemen to dine in. This Proposal being accepted of, she importuned the Favour of his Company, which he readily granted, leaving a particular Direction with the Landlady to call him if a Gentlewoman should come to enquire for him, adding, that as he was sure one would come, they might dine together. This Order convinced *Catharine* that he intended to stay there the whole Day. They immediately were shewn the Room appointed, and she proposed to play a Party at Picquet, which she had before taught him, to amuse themselves at home; he replied, it was quite agreeable to him, and accordingly the Cards were brought, and they played for the Reckoning.

After an Hour had elapsed he appeared very uneasy that the Gentlewoman was not come, continually making Enquiry after her of the Landlady, who answered him always in the Negative; he then desired Pen, Ink, and Paper; just as he was going to write, she, judging the Cause of his Uneasiness,

ease, begged the Use of the Pen for a Minute, he complied, and she then wrote on a Card as follows, Take no Notice of me now, your *Catharine Finch* is with you, and gave it to him to read.

Never was Man more surprized; he first looked on the Card, and then gazed at her. She told him what appeared to him to be a Beard was only a Paint; she then took off her Hat, and putting her Hand before her Mouth and Chin desired him to look at the rest of her Face, which he no sooner observed but it eased all his Doubts, and convinced him of the Truth of what she wrote, but was sorry the Place did not afford him an Opportunity to give a Loose to his joyous Transports, after so long an Absence; however, she confined him to such Behaviour as could give no Suspicion of any kind, in case they should be privately observed.

They dined here as comfortably as if they feared nothing; after they had done, they play'd Cards and drank Punch; but she would not permit a Word of Business to be talked of.

The Room where they sat being close to a common Drinking-room, divided only by an old Wainscot, they heard some Fellows telling the Landlady that the next Alehouse was surrounded by Constables, &c. suspecting that Cook the Highwayman was in it. This Alarm gave them great Uneasiness, but was much increased when they heard the same People say, both Ends of the Lane were secured. There being no time for Hesitation, *Catharine* immediately called the Landlady, and told her privately that Cook was in her House, that if he should be discovered here, it would be a Disgrace for ever to her, and that she would get no Part of the Reward; adding, that she would conceal him there were thirty Guineas for her, offering her the Money; the Landlady accepted

accepted the Present with a seeming Reluctance, saying, If I was not a poor Widow, I would not be prevailed on to take it; she then desired he might come down to the Cellar with her that Minute; he instantly complied, and she covered him over with Coals, leaving only an imperceptible Place for him to breath.

She had hardly effected this Scheme before the Officers and their Assistants came rushing in, and called for her, she readily appeared with a Tub of Coals in her Hands, as an Excuse for her Blackness, poor *Catharine* standing in the common Room reading a News-paper; they demanded to know what Company she had in the House; she replied, have none but what you see. The Constables then asked one or two of the Neighbours that were standing by, whether they thought he was there, who said they believed not. Whether or not, said the Constables, we must search your House, Landlady. You may, Gentlemen, says she, if you think proper; upon which they went into every Room, turned up the Beds, and searched very diligently; they then went into the Cellar, and examined the very Necessary-house, but were disappointed of their Prey.

When they were gone, he told *Catharine* he was glad she had come to the right House, because he had wrote the Note he sent her from the other, where he was set, which gave him great Uneasiness till he saw her, lest she should mistake the Place, both Houses being in the same Lane.

Having escaped this eager Pursuit, they both determined to make as short a Stay in *London* as possible, but how to get safely from thence was the Difficulty; at last they resolved that she should take a Lodging as remote as possible from their Acquaintance, and when she had fixed on a pro-

per Place, and got every Thing in order she should come for him.

No sooner was it resolved but executed ; she went and took one in *Westminster*, then came back for him that Evening in a Coach, which carried them both to their new Apartments, where they continued some time concealed from the World. They enjoyed an exquisite deal of Happiness after such imminent Dangers, but it was like a Species of Flies that goes through all the Progress of Life in twenty-four Hours. These Lodgings were extremely private, and whilst they kept them he did not go out, but she provided every Thing necessary.

It was now thought proper to change her Name with her Dress, and accordingly, after some Debate, it was agreed to call her *Thomas Jennings*, which for the present I shall continue to do. In two or three Days they examined what Stock they had between them, when *Cook* produced sixty-three Pounds and *Jennings* eighty-four, making in the Whole one hundred and forty-seven Pounds. *Cook* observed, that they could spend their Money where they were with more Safety than on the Road, and proposed continuing there while the odd forty-seven Pounds lasted, saying, that the hundred would be sufficient to equip them genteelly ; to which *Jennings* agreed.

They went on for about twelve Days with more Tranquillity, I believe, than any other two in the World in their Situation, till the Maid of the House observed, on making their Bed, some Sign which escaped their Care ; she told her Mistress what she had seen, it soon reached her Master's Ears, who was as hardened a Scoundrel as *Westminster* could produce, having been a discharged Bailiff, and was now a pressing Constable ; in short

he lived by sucking the Blood out of those who unhappily fell into his Power.

He came to their Room, with three of his villainous Assistants, and told them both they were the King's Prisoners: *Cook* having no Arms to make a Resistance, they were directly secured without the least Noise.

Their villainous Landlord told them, the Reason of his apprehending them was, he suspected one of them to be a Woman, but if, upon Examination, which he insisted upon, it proved to be otherwise, he would discharge them. An Officer, he said, could not in Conscience but endeavour to prevent a Practice so contrary to Law, and then began to explain the Nature of the *Black Act*, within the Intent and Meaning of which they then were.

Their Countenances too plainly betrayed their Guilt, which being observed by the Mirmidons, one of them took *Cook* aside, and advised him to tip his Landlord thirty Pieces, which he believed would make up the Affair. This Advice was readily complied with, and the Landlord prevailed upon, after much Importunity, to accept of thirty Guineas for their Liberty; after which he began to be more pliable, saying, they were extremely welcome to stay as long as they thought proper, for he would protect them; but, added he, if I had taken you before a Magistrate, you would not have come off so cheap, which they were very sensible of, for had that been the Case, in all Probability some one or other would have discovered *Cook*, the Consequence of which might have proved fatal.

They thanked him for his Civility, but declined the Invitation, and that Evening *Tom* went out and took another Lodging in *Bloomſbury-square*, where they lay that Night.

Thus

Thus was this great Danger escaped, which ought to have been a Lesson of Admonition, but they were so immersed in sensual Enjoyments that they seemed absolutely to court their Ruin.

Tom now, over a chearful Glass, determined to make the Road his Empire, saying to *Cook*, We have entered into a League offensive and defensive against the World, and declared War against the whole Race of Mankind, so here's to you, my Dear, in a Bumper. *Cook* returned the Compliment, saying, You would certainly make a respectable Figure on the Road if you could ride. *Tom* told him that he would hire a Horse, and the next Morning try what he could do, desiring *Cook* to instruct him on which Side he should mount, and how to fix his Right Foot in the Stirrup. This Piece of Instruction was given in the Room, by placing two Chairs with their Backs to each other, and supposing them a Horse, on which he mounted and dismounted several times, but was informed that nothing would accomplish a proper Attitude but Practice.

They were both now in high Spirits, and seemed only to wish the Money exhausted they designed for their spending.

The next Day *Tom* rode nine or ten Miles, and when he came home boasted how well he had managed his Horse. *Cook* told him, as he was so expert he must soon purchase a Pair of Geldings, Fire Arms, and other Things requisite for them, but feared he would be imposed upon, to prevent which he advised him to see a Jockey of Credit, to buy such Cattle as were extremely good, and not remarkable, and desired to see the Fire Arms before a positive Bargain was made.

In a few Days they were thoroughly equipped, and had even Conveniencies to carry Provisions, which they stored themselves with. Late in the
After-

Afternoon they both mounted near their Lodging, and rode the whole Night, being Summer-time, at a moderate rate, and found themselves in the Morning upwards of forty Miles from *London*, which was pretty severe upon *Tom* for his first Journey; *Cook* observing him ready to faint, rode up to an ordinary Inn, where no Person knew him, and got *Tom* some Refreshment: He was determined to inure him to such Fatigues before he alarmed the Country, which had for some time been easy from his Excursions.

Here they stayed two Days, to refresh themselves and Horses, and then proceeded forty Miles farther, without attempting any Adventure, *Tom* all this while improving every Hour in Horsemanship, the Hardship of which he bore surprisingly; but they lived well upon the Road, and spared their own dried Provisions.

Cook took every convenient Opportunity to instruct him how to leap his Horse, telling him the different Addresses to Gentlemen and Ladies in a Coach with Pistol in Hand, and how to form a Judgment, as to his Booty, by the Appearance of Persons; that for the general those in a snug Dress turned out to better Advantage than the Beaus, and that fat Men commonly felt well; he concluded this Sort of Discourse by recommending to him, never to hurt or wound any Person till the last Extremity, and if it should happen, by the Chance of War, that he should be taken, to conceal the Sex as long as possible; that Courage was to be acquired, and was sure, upon Occasion, that he would not fail, advising him to make such Use of it, as rather to die upon the Road, with Sword or Pistol in Hand, which was his Determination, than be taken Prisoner, and led in Triumph to Execution, and that their greatest Danger was being surprized when they least expected it.

Tom

Tom gave great Attention to these Lessons, and often desired to be led to Action. When *Cook* thought his Pupil pretty well prepared, he told him he should begin the next Day, but imagined it would be Prudence to indulge themselves in one Night's Repose more, which being agreed to, they accordingly did. *Tom*, next Morning, was impatient to give the Word of Command, saying, as they had not a Guinea left it was time to try for more. *Cook* observed to him, that Conduct was as necessary as Courage, and that the Afternoon was the proper Time for such Expeditions, the Night soon after coming on, which would shade them, if pursued, therefore it would not be prudent to set out for six Hours; adding, I have gone to work in a Morning, and alarmed the whole Country by it, which has prevented my further Successes that Day; besides, we may have Opportunities enough before Sun-set; therefore let us, in the mean time, take as much Repose as Sleep can afford us.

The Strength of these Reasons caused *Tom* to submit to his Advice. To Sleep they went till about three o'Clock, when they left the Inn, properly prepared and determined for Business; when they had rode about twelve Miles, *Cook* said to him, Now is our Time, I will hold a Pistol to them while you rummage. *Tom* begged to be excused in that, desiring to have the Honour of presenting the Pistol, which being agreed to, as soon as the two Horsemen came up, they had before observ'd, he accordingly presented his Pistol, demanding their Money, and robbed them of eight Pounds, without the least Resistance, then drove them into an adjacent Grove, and obliged them to lie upon their Faces, threatening them with Death if they offered to stir without Leave; thus they left them, and returned to an Ambush near the Road, out of which they popped upon any Person that appear-

ed

ed worthy of their Notice, and after robbing them obliged them to join the other Company, which they increased to seven in Number before Night came on, and then rode off, having a Booty of about thirty Pounds; they continued their Course for five Hours, till at length they came to a Wood, where they remained that Night, making use of their Provision, and amusing themselves with their Expedition until they thought convenient to take some Rest, one watching and taking Care of the Horses while the other slept, by which Method they alternately received a comfortable Refreshment.

It is impossible for me to give an Account of the particular Places which were the Scenes of their Adventures, therefore shall content myself with relating the most material Facts, as they occur to my Memory.

As soon as they awoke in the Morning they began to consider their Situation, and found themselves upwards of thirty Miles from the Place where they had robbed the preceding Day, and quite another Road, which encouraged them to put up at the next Inn they came to, to refresh their Horses.

From thence they rode several Miles till at last Cook fixed on a proper Spot for Business, which was generally on a Road where he could have a good Prospect, and far distant from any Town or Village. To work they went, and before Night robbed eleven Gentlemen, securing them as they had done the Persons before mentioned, the Booty amounting to an hundred and twenty-five Pounds. They rode forty or fifty Miles farther, to a fresh Spot of Ground, and lay that Night in the Fields, with the same Caution as before, but much more Spirits, on account of their Success.

Here

Here they came to a Resolution, that as soon as they had increased their Stock to three thousand Pounds, they would then quit that way of Life, and retreat either to *Ireland* or *Holland*. It was earnestly recommended by *Cook* to his Companion, not to think of going into any House until they had compleated that Sum, saying, they could provide for themselves and their Horses in the Woods and Fields, where he intended to take up his Lodging, it being much more advisable than to run the Hazard of being known at the publick Inns on the Road, where perhaps they would be secured in their Beds.

Tom readily agreed to follow the Method he had laid down, and they robbed every Day for a Month after, neither eating or sleeping in any House; but they contrived to purchase Provisions in the Towns where they imagined themselves most secure.

Ten Days after this they attacked three Persons, one of whom knocked *Cook* from off his Horse, upon which *Tom* instantly shot at the Man and broke his Arm, and then they all surrendered; they took from one of them three hundred and eighty Pounds, but the other two had nothing worth taking; they then secured them from making a Pursuit, bound up the Man's wounded Arm, and rode off.

This Night, upon casting up their ill-got Pelf, they found it amounted to nine hundred Pounds, which they increased in twenty Days after to fourteen hundred; a considerable Part of the Money being in Silver, it became too burthensome to carry, therefore they concluded to hide it in a Wood near *Nottingham*, where they took up their Lodging.

Tom went next Morning to buy Provisions in the Town of *Nottingham*, and as he was putting a
boiled

boiled Ham, some roasted Fowls, and three or four Bottles of Wine into his Bags, he was surrounded, seized, and brought before a Magistrate, where two Persons appeared, and positively swore that he was one of the two who had robbed them a few Days before; he was committed to Gaol and there heavily ironed, and seventy Guineas which he had in his Pockets were taken from him and deposited in the Justice's Hands, who allowed him out of it seven Shillings *per Week*. All Endeavours and Promises were used to make him discover his Companion, but in vain, for he would not tell them a Word.

In his Confinement he received all the Honours of the Place from the inferior Rabble, who pay a much greater Deference to Highwaymen than any other Sort of Criminals. Here I shall leave him to contemplate upon his Condition, and reconcile himself to Afflictions, the unavoidable Consequences of such a Course of Life.

Cook, whom we left in the Wood, suspected the worst, and waiting a considerable Time for *Tom's* Return, was near being taken himself. The searching and examining his Comrade took up a great deal of Time, which when settled, those who were concerned in apprehending him concluded that his Companion could not be far off; from which Conjecture, they mounted a Person upon our unhappy Prisoner's Horse, as near his Size as they could find, and put his outside Coat and Hat upon him, with the Provisions, which they knew were intended for the Comrade, ordering the Fellow to take the Road near the Wood, where they suspected he lay concealed, adding, that they would be in a body near him, which was accordingly put in Execution.

This Stratagem in part took Effect, for *Cook* being on Horseback, saw *Tom* at a Distance, as he thought,

thought, coming, and rode towards him a considerable way before he discovered the dangerous Bait, calling out as loud as possible, that he was almost distracted at his Delay; but before he came quite up to him he luckily perceived the dreadful Cheat, upon which he turned his Horse about, and rode off with all the Speed he could make; but those who pursued him being well mounted, they gained Ground pretty fast upon him, till the foremost Man riding furiously to attack him, he shot his Horse, and it fell under him; the rest being pretty far behind followed the Pursuit with a great Hue and Cry, till Cook was obliged to make to a deep and rapid River, which he swam his Horse across, and so got quite away from them; he rode as far towards *London* as his Horse was able to carry him that Day and Night, but the Beast tiring, the first Stage he came to he left him there, and took a Post Chaise, travelling incessantly till he got safe to *London*.

He was now quite indifferent as to his Life, since he lost his dear Companion. He told the Landlord of the Inn where he put up, that he was afraid to appear on account of some Debts he owed, which would oblige him to keep his Room. The Landlord replied, that no Person should arrest him in his House.

He had been here but three Days till he read in the News-papers an Account of poor Tom's being taken and stripped of every Penny, together with the Pursuit and Scheme formed against himself. He had neglected taking the Money from the Place where they had hid it, but if he had, it would have been impossible for him to have escaped with such a Weight; however, he had now above three hundred Pounds, and how to convey some of it to Tom embarrassed him greatly.

He thought of his old Servant Maid, who was still in his House, and ventured to send for her; she came, and was greatly rejoiced to see him, kindly inquiring after her Mistress. He frankly told her all their Adventures, and her Mistress's present Disguise and Misfortune. The Affliction of this good-natured Girl, upon hearing of her Mistress's being in Custody, is hardly to be conceived. He told her, that it was not in the Power of any Person to do his Wife so much Service as herself, upon which she declared that she would use her utmost Endeavours to serve them. He then said, he believed her Mistress was in a starving Condition, and as he had Money enough requested that she would take some to her; that she must hire a Post Chaise, it being a great way off, and carry some of her Mistress's best Clothes with her, to appear in upon Trial: They may, added he, compassionate her Sex. But do not take publick Notice of her till you have made yourself well acquainted in the Town, by which Means you may pass to and from her without being asked a great many Questions; and be particularly careful to conceal her being a Woman till the Assizes, then she may probably be of Service to disclose it. The Girl hearkened attentively to his Instructions, and assured him she would use her utmost Power to execute them. Sir, added she, I have a Sister whom I will entrust with the Care of your House and Goods till I return; I can give you a very good account of every Thing, and hope soon to have a little Money saved for you. Here he interrupted her, saying, all you have belonging to me I now make you a Present of, and accordingly confirmed by an Acknowledgment under his Hand, except her Mistress's Clothes.

The next Morning, after settling every Thing in the House to her Mind, and hiring a Post Chaise,

P

she

she went to him, according to his Directions; he gave her one hundred and sixty Pounds for her Mistress's Use, telling her she passed by the Name of *Thomas Jennings*.

We shall now leave her on her Journey, and return to Mr. *Cook*, whose voluntary Restraint began to grow very uneasy to him, upon which he prevailed upon his Landlord to purchase a good Horse for him, and, being otherwise properly equipped, he intended to go towards *Nottingham*, for the Money he had hid in the Wood near that Town, and to hover thereabouts, to be ready to assist his dear *Tom* if Occasion should require.

He was to take Horse in *Shoreditch*, so called from the beautiful and unhappy *Jane Shore*'s dying in it; but fatally for him, as he was walking very early through *Cheapside*, he was seen by a Milk-woman who knew him, having served his Father's House from his Infancy, and with whom he had lodged, and dogged by her till she had him apprehended.

The Sessions at the *Old Baily* began soon after, where a Number of Prosecutors appearing against him at his Trial, he was found guilty, and soon after executed at *Tyburn*, with this Mark of Distinction, that he was indulged to swag in a Coach, whilst many others, who accompanied him the same Road, were jolted in Carts.

Before his Acquaintance with *Catbarine*, he was as well liked and as much regarded as any young Fellow in *London*, and none ever charged him with spilling of human Blood in any of his Enterprizes, notwithstanding the late Corruption of his Morals; his Charity was unlimited to those he thought proper Objects. He died with as much Resignation as Prisoner ever did, and seemed rejoiced to go into the Coach that was to take him to the End of his

Life. He had an hundred Pounds when taken, but what became of it I could never learn.

From this fatal Catastrophe of Mr. *Cook*, young Men may see how far they ought to be cautious in conducting themselves, one Slip from the Paths of Virtue too often lead to Ruin, or at least to the Forfeiture of that good Name they have long endeavoured to attain. Had he not been acquainted with *Catharine Finch* in the Manner he was, it is probable, from the promising Hopes he gave, that he would have made a credible Figure in Trade at *London*; let young Men therefore think as they will, criminal Love and good Conduct will never agree, and the Consequences generally prove

The faithful Maid got safe to *Nottingham*, and pursued the Instructions she had received. Being well informed of every Thing relating to *Tom*, she went to the Gaol to see him, and passed for one of his Relations. He, being quick of Apprehension, immediately concluded *Cook* had sent her, but said little, not knowing the Scheme that was laid. She presented him with a few Pieces, which made her welcome to the Gaoler, for *Tom* let the Money fly when he had it. Being frequently supplied by the trusty Maid, he treated the Keepers generously, who in Token of Gratitude took off his heavy Irons and put on those that were lighter, and as bright Silver, which seemed rather an Ornament for a Highwayman than a Burthen; after this he made them several handsome Presents, which induced them not only to take the Irons quite off, but to conduct him to the State Room of the Gaol, which was the strongest and best secured.

The Maid's making continual Visits caused a jealousy in Miss *Sally*, the Gaoler's Daughter, who was exceedingly in Love with *Tom*, and frequently interrupted them when they were contriving of

Schemes to evade the Laws; she offered, at the Hazard of her Life, and the Ruin of her Father, to endeavour his Escape, to which he would have agreed, if he had not thought of a Course that was safer.

When his Legs were well of the Galls occasioned by the Irons, he took the Opportunity one Afternoon, when Miss *Sally* was abroad, to get the richest Dress, with a Gold Watch, conveyed to him by the trusty Servant Maid, which they hid under the Bed that was newly made; he then ordered some Brandy, and called for Soap and Water to shave himself, which he had often done before, for Reasons easily to be judged. When Things were thus disposed, he told the Maid she must make all possible Expedition to *London*, and at the same time desired her to give him what Money she had, and not to leave the least Individual of his former Dress behind, as she regarded her Life. The Maid accordingly gave him one hundred and ten Pounds, which was all she had left, excepting what would defray the Charges of the Post Chaise and travelling Expences.

Things thus settled, he immediately pulled off every Thing he had on, and equipped himself in a Dress more natural, and sent away the Maid with the Things, desiring her to trouble herself no farther till she saw or heard from her in *London*; all which Orders were punctually executed.

She fastened the Door as well as she could till she was completely dressed, getting the Paint clean off of her Face that the most discerning Eye who only knew *Catharine* (which is to be her Name for the future) with her Face painted and in Man's Apparel, would not now know her: she lay down on the Bed in her full Dress, covering herself with the Clothes, except her Head, letting the Hair hang loose. A drunken Under-keeper came to her

Door, as was customary, to know if the Prisoners were within, when they were going to lock them up, saying, Sir, I hope you are well, to which she replied in the affirmative; he then locked the Door, and she heard no more of him till the next Morning.

As she commonly used to lie till ten or eleven o'Clock, it was that time before any one came near her. Miss *Sally* being out Part of the Day before grew impatient to see one she was so fond of, and having got Tea ready for Breakfast, went up Stairs to see her delightful caged Bird, saying, when she opened the Door, you will sleep your Eyes out, I believe; but, how great was her Surprise at beholding, instead of the one she admired, the Apparition, as she thought, of one of the finest Women her Eyes ever saw (for *Catharine* was dressed in as full Form as if she had been to receive an Emperor) she screamed out and fainted, which brought up her Father and Mother and several of their infernal Attendants, who stood astonished at viewing this Prodigy and Metamorphoses, not one of them suspecting her to be the Prisoner, nor knowing how to behave.

This most extraordinary Affair was soon spread all over the Town, and drew a vast Concourse of People to the Gaol, but none were admitted except a few of the better Sort, among whom was the Magistrate who had committed her, together with the Persons who had sworn against her. Their Amazement was equal to that of the People belonging to the Gaol, thus to find as beautiful a Woman as Nature had framed, adorned with all the Ornaments of Dress, in the Place of a noted Highwayman.

The Justice asked the Persons who were to prosecute her, if she was the Person who had robbed them, to which they replied, that they had never
 P 3 seen

seen the Lady before; certainly then, says he, this is not the same Person I committed for robbing of you: He then addressed *Catharine*, saying, Madam, how came you here? I really cannot account for it otherwise, Sir, says she, than that I was forcibly brought into this Place; but I can assure you that I am a young Lady of Fortune. Where does your Father live, says he, and what is his Name? She replied, though it is my Misfortune to be here, yet as it may reflect on my Family, I shall therefore conceal them both if I can. This Account will not do, says he. Pray Sir, replied she, has any Person the least Thing to alledge against me that can detain me here, if they have let them make their Charge. I beg your Pardon, Madam, says the Justice, I have not a Word to alledge against you, nor is there any Body else as I hear. By the Respect that is paid you, Sir, says she, you seem to be a Gentleman of Distinction, for which Reason I must apply to you for Justice and Protection; you see plainly there is nothing laid to my Charge by these People, I therefore desire you will order me out of Confinement, otherwise I shall go of my own Accord, and accordingly was walking off with the Majesty of a Princess till prevented by the Gaoler, who told her, she should not quit the Place till he had taken Advice upon the Matter. She then applied herself to the Justice again, saying, Sir, I cannot tell but I may be robbed while I am detained here, therefore request the Favour of you to take Care of these Pieces for me till I have Occasion to call for them, pulling out her Purse and telling one hundred Guineas into his Hand. He received them as her Banker, and from that time she was more respected. She then said, as she could not tell what Attempts might be made upon her Person, she hoped he would be so kind to send her a Maid or two of good Reputation;

tion; and concluded with telling him, she should think he did her the highest Honour and Favour if he would sometimes visit her in that deplorable Place, which he promised to do, and took Care to keep his Word.

He then gave strict Orders to the Gaoler to make her Confinement as easy as possible, and to remove the Felons and other Prisoners farther from her Apartment, and saw it done before he quitted the Place, the other poor Wretches being so greatly crouded together that they were almost stifled; but whatever they suffered was thought little of, if it contributed to her Repose: Immediately after this the Justice and the Company took their Leave of her.

The powerful Interest of the Justice was the Gaoler's chief Support in his Place, by the Advantage of which he was in good Circumstances; as this was his whole Dependence, he was studious to do every Thing pleasing to *Catbarine*, knowing it would be acceptable to his Patron. The Fame of her Beauty, and being miraculously found in the Gaol, became the Subject of the Country, which drew vast Numbers from the adjacent Places round about in order to see her, who by their drinking and Presents increased the Gaoler's Profits considerably, for without these Requisites there was no Admittance, and not even then could they satisfy their Curiosity unless she thought proper.

Her Charms captivated many, but none equal to Justice *Groby*, at that time sixty Years of Age, and very rich.

There arises a Softness in our Nature when we behold a beautiful Woman in Distress, that first works up our Pity and often ends in Love; this, I believe, was Mr. *Groby's* Case; for when *Catbarine* was first brought before him to be examined as a Highwayman, he insultingly said,

that the Gallows was pictur'd in his Face, and that his very Looks would hang him; adding, I am very sure you are some Scape-grace returned from Transportation as a Curse upon the Country; which was generally the kind of Language he made use of to the unfortunate Persons who came before him. But how suddenly was this Moroseness of Manners changed by her Transformation, that Face which he before thought abominable was now no less than divine, and all her heavenly Form worshipped by him.

Let us now leave him awhile recounting his Wealth, boasting of his Services for his Country, and publishing the Excellencies of *Catharine's* Mind and Person, and take a View of what passes in the Gaol relative to her.

Money came very fast into the Gaol by her being there, great Numbers of People coming from all Parts of the Country, who called her the *Beautiful Captive*, and she was frequently visited by Ladies as well as Gentlemen. This increased the Gaoler's Profit so greatly, that he was pretty much consoled as to the Danger he was in, by Reason of the Escape of the notorious Highwayman, which he expected to be called to an Account for at the next Assizes. Ever since he got the Gaol he was as suppliant as a Willow to the Chiefs of the Country, and as inexorable as a Usurer to those in his Power, which Conduct procured him useful Interest when he had been at any time remiss in his Duty.

But poor Miss *Sally* was tortured by another sort of Motive, for all the Wealth that could be acquired by the unknown Lady's being there, did not give her a Moment's Consolation, occasioned by the Loss of her dear *Tom*; every Person that knew her took Notice of her Despair and Melancholy on that Account, which was of Service to her in one respect,

respect, her Love for him being suspected by many, and concluded she had a Hand in the Escape, but none censured her more severely than those disappointed of the Reward for taking him.

Love and Jealousy are more quick-sighted and industrious than Passions that are dull and heavy, to obtain or discover the Objects they point at. Sally from the Time of the imagined Escape, made the most diligent Enquiry after the Girl who used to come to *Tom*, but all to no Purpose. One Day she took an Opportunity, when the Astonishment of the Publick abated, to address herself to *Catharine* in the following Manner: You will be surprized, Madam, at what I am going to say, but it bears so hard upon me that I cannot help mentioning it, but first I must desire your Pity and Forgiveness; the Gentleman you succeed in this Room I love dearer than my Life, he has by a Miracle disappeared, and left you by some extraordinary Magick, in his Place: My Love is too great to be imposed upon so grossly; I am positive you have my dear *Tom*'s Eyes, Nose, Forehead, Hair, and Voice, and believe that you are the very Person, or his Sister; if you are the Man I love, is it not a Shame for you not to repose Confidence in me, who would sacrifice my own Life, and all the Lives in the World if I could, before I would suffer a Rope to be fitted round that lovely Neck of yours; this you know, and therefore ought to have trusted me with the Secret of your Disguise previous to any other.

Catharine was somewhat confused at this Discourse, and the better to conceal it affected being in a Passion, saying, Hussy, I have had great Patience to hear you mention a Rope for my Neck; however, I should not take it amiss as you speak but in Character; nevertheless I desire you will be gone
this

this Instant, and never come into my Room again whilst I stay here.

Sally, greatly dissatisfied, was obliged to withdraw, determining to resent the ill Usage she had received from *Catharine*, which she did by informing her Father and Mother that she strongly suspected the Lady they had in Custody to be the Highwayman whom they imagined had made his Escape, and assigned as a Reason the Similitude there was between them; they immediately joined her in Opinion, but dreaded to examine her properly lest they should incur the Displeasure of Justice *Groby*, who they knew had the greatest Regard and Esteem for her, and would not readily forgive an Insult of the Kind, especially if they should be disappointed in their Inquisition. After some Debate, they prudently came to this Determination, to let the Justice know their Suggestions, and to get his Permission to clear up the Point in Question.

The Justice was very constant in his Visits to *Catharine*, and very often enquired if she met with agreeable Usage. At one of these Visits the Gaoler spoke privately to him as follows, May it please your Worship, we all mistrust the Lady in Custody to be *Tom* the Highwayman that we thought had ran away, my *Sally* is very sure of it, and she is exceeding quick of Apprehension; I would have had her searched before now, but would do nothing without your Honour's Advice, who I am sure has more Wisdom than half the Country. Mr. *Groby* replied, Sure the young Rogue could not impose upon me so greatly; but you really surprize me; pray learn the Truth of it immediately, and if it be as you think, load him well with Irons; as I have always laid hold of every Opportunity to serve my Country, I would wish to do so now by detecting this Villain, therefore desire you
will

will privately put me to see her examined, and do you say upon the Discovery that it was my Judgment that discerned it, for which I will get you a good Presentment at the next Assizes. God bless your Worship, says the Gaoler, you never forgot me, I will bring her to the Parlour which my own Room joins, where there is a cunning Peep-hole through which your Worship's Honour may see what passes, and I will order my Wife to turn her Face to the Hole. If we should happen to be mistaken, says Mr. *Groby*, I desire you will never let her or any other Person know I was concerned with you in it, for she will complain of the Insult to me, and consequently I must seem greatly displeased with you, but as you are conscious I have procured you Forgiveness for Facts that the Laws would transport you for, so will I also excuse you in this, let me keep what Fufs I will about it.

They agreed he should not visit her till this Business was over, requesting him to walk into the Room which would give him an Opportunity of being satisfied.

The Gaoler ordered his Wife to be ready to examine *Catharine*, Miss *Sally* insisted upon being present, which was granted; when Matters were settled, the Gaoler's Wife went for *Catharine*, who came with her to the Parlour, where she had often been before, and left her with her Husband, who without any Ceremony said, Madam, I have a violent Mistrust that you are *Tom* the Highwayman I had here in Custody; if you do not confess it, my Wife and Daughter shall examine whether you are Man or Woman, and if you make any Resistance, it shall be done in my Presence by my Men, for the Affair seems so intricate to me I cannot tell what to make of the Matter. Sir, says she, I thank you for your Compliment, but as it must be so, pray let me be examined by the Women of
your

your Family. He then gave a Whistle, and his Wife and Daughter immediately came into the Room, and he modestly withdrew.

No sooner was his Back turned but they went to Work, and plainly convinced his Worship (then peeping through the Hole in the Service of his Country) of the Reality of her Sex, and which consequently convinced *Sally* that there was nothing under that Disguise, as she called it, agreeable to her Purpose.

Catharine, soon after this curious Examination, withdrew to her own Apartment, and the Women to attend their Tap and Reckonings.

His Worship now came forth, and said to the Gaoler, I knew you were all mistaken, do you think if it had been so I should not have smoked it. The Gaoler said, Did your Honour see that she was a Woman? I did assuredly, replied he, and the finest in the World, but they ought not to have left a Stitch upon her when they went about so material an Affair, for we ought to have had every Thing as clear as Sight could make it; I tell you, Friend, People are very wicked, and are continually thinking of one Contrivance or other to cheat their Fellow Creatures. Sir, says the Gaoler, I assure your Worship that my Wife and Daughter could not be mistaken that way; but to satisfy your Honour she shall be stripped as naked as when born. Mr. *Groby* replied, Nay, nay, I am only for your own Good, and would help you in this as I have done in many Things before.

The Danger poor *Catharine* was in was very great if this old Letcher's Advice had been carried into Execution; for her Legs, though healed, had yet the Marks of the Irons upon them, which an experienced Gaoler would very soon have discovered.

But to return to their Conversation: Says the Gaoler, I have something particular to say to your Worship, if I thought you would not be angry with me. He replied, proceed, I shall not, upon my Word; I will admit of a Familiarity now. Well, says the Gaoler, it is certain your Honour is better than other Men, but still you are Flesh and Blood. Here *Groby* interrupted him, saying, Give over your Preambles and come to the Point. Why then, continued he, please your Honour, as all I had to say was in a String with me, and you put me out, I must begin where you made me leave off, that was, at your Honour's Flesh and Blood; and that you have a Regard and Veneration for me I make no Doubt of; and that I have likewise the same for your Worship, is as true as that this Gaol is the strongest House in Town. Where are you wandering to now, says *Groby*, I tell you, I can't have Patience if you do not speak to the Purpose. And that you would, says the Gaoler, for my Sake, be glad to make a full and total Discovery of the wicked Villainy and Conspiracy that took *Tom* the Highwayman away, and left another Person here in his stead; to bring these Practices to a clear Light, and to know whether she be Man or Woman; if your Worship would do me the Honour to go to Bed to her in my House, there your Judgment cannot fail you: I know you love a Girl, for many a one I have got you in this Gaol, if pretty and in great Distress, but such a one as this we never had. Could you not have said so at first, says *Groby*, and not be so prolix. My Reason was, replied the Gaoler, because you have not honoured me that way with your Commands for these two or three Years past. Well, says *Groby*, there may be something in that, but suppose I have a mind for her how shall I manage? Why, my Wife and I, says the honest Gaoler,

Gaoler, will be constantly telling her of your Power, Influence, and Riches, and do you visit her oftener, and speak handsomely to her, as you know how, and nobody need be the wiser of it but ourselves. Secrecy in it, says the Justice, is what I would chuse, and to be sincere with you, I declare, I never liked a Woman so well; but I fear we cannot do it for she is a haughty Dame, and I believe one of great Fortune, for she seems not to value Money: I will sup with her To-night in her own Room, and be sure have good Wine for us; I shall order you to sit down with us sometimes, when you are admitted to such Freedom, if you know any particular Person that she likes, who has been to see her, urge their Health in a Bumper, and let her often know it is I that can release her out of this Gaol as soon as I please. I will engage the Business shall be done for your Worship, says the Gaoler, and would have you go now and chat with her, and remember me at the Assizes, or I shall be ruined for the Escape of the Highwayman. What! replied *Groby*, do you doubt me? I tell you I will take Care that you shall get over that, and then withdrew to see *Catharine*, who immediately complained to him of the Rudeness of the Gaoler and his Family. Mr. *Groby* seemed to resent it greatly, and calling the Gaoler, denounced his Displeasure against him, saying, that he would at the next Assizes turn him out of his Office, if he ever again gave her the least Offence, and did not instantly, in the most humble Manner, beg her Pardon, she being the only Lady in the World that he had the greatest Esteem and Honour for. Upon an immediate Submission she forgave him, and he withdrew.

Mr. *Groby* insisted upon Leave to have a Supper that Night in her Room, which she agreed to, provided there were more Company than themselves.

selfes. He told her, it would not be convenient to have any but the Gaoler and his Wife, and as she was so good to forgive them, this Compliance would demonstrate her Sincerity in it.

He was more the Courtier this Evening than ever before, and by his Glances, and sometimes taking her Hand in his, convinced *Catharine*, whose Conception of these sort of Matters was always very early, that she had him fast in the Toils of Love, which determined her to make a Property of him, as she thought he was fit for nothing else, being old and rich.

She knew of poor *Cook's* Disaster by the Newspapers, but had Philosophy enough to resign the Dead to their Fate, and thought of nothing more than regaining her Liberty. She never loved any Man so well, and was true and faithful to him in their wicked Courses.

Mr. *Groby* at taking his Leave assured her, he should have no Pleasure till he had the Honour of waiting upon her again.

I should before now have observed that he had provided her a Maid, according to her Request, whom she had sent of an Errand, but the Gaoler meeting her would not suffer her to return to her Mistress, but kept her out, which *Catharine* knowing nothing of, concluded she had ran away; the Reason for his so doing was lest she should prevent the Justice's Opportunity with her Mistress that Evening.

Mr. *Groby* soon reassumed his Visit, and appeared extremely happy in her Company, whilst the Gaoler and his Wife were continually talking of his Wisdom, Power, and Riches, which he often forbid, as not being agreeable to his Modesty: The Gaoler swore he would turn out all the Prisoners in the Gaol if he bid him, then pusht about a Bumper to one Excellence or other of the Justice's, which

which was always pressed to go round; *Catbarine* seeing the Design often excused the Glafs. When no more could be done that way they retired, and left Mr. *Grobby* and her together, at which she seemed uneasy, he then fully explained himself to her, saying, he loved her to Distraction; that he was unhappily married to an old, infirm Woman; that if ever Providence blessed him with an Opportunity, she of all Womankind should be his Choice; that if she made him happy that Night he would order her Liberty in the Morning; that he would not insist upon it so much till she was at large, only he feared he should then be made unhappy by her eternal Absence; that he wanted the Possession of her only as a Pledge to secure her for ever to himself.

Catbarine replied, Sir, from the first of my Acquaintance with you I admired your Sense and Humanity, I make nothing of the Fortune but as a Consequence of your Wisdom; your Person is inferior to none, and, in short, I think it is impossible to see, know, and not to love you: I must now therefore inform you, that I have forty thousand Pounds in the Funds, which is at your Service the Minute you go to *London* with me, provided you give me, in the Presence of the Almighty, such Assurances as will satisfy me you never will abandon me; the Loss of Fortune, and Fame which has been as yet unspotted, are disregarded Trifles to me when compared to your dear self; ask me for no more Confessions of my Passion whilst I am confined within these hated Walls, if you do, I shall conclude you mean it as the Price of my Liberty only, and not of everlasting Love, which is what I require from you; I am determined, whilst a Prisoner here, to give you no other Indication of my Love than to advise you to distribute your Benefactions to those you intend to provide for, which

done

done, I then invite you to my Person and Fortune; you have Money of mine in your Hands sufficient to bear our Expences to *London*, take not a Shilling with you of your own, I have enough, with your Prudence, for us both, and would give an Empire for you if I had it; I do not, I assure you, say this with the least View or Hope of Liberty, or to have the Laws strained in my Favour to obtain it, for I am conscious, from the Innocence of my past Life, of no Crime, and that nothing can be more unjust than to detain me here; but by what Authority it is done I know not; however, I will with Patience bear my Confinement till legally discharged, and then, when I am at Liberty, I shall resign myself and Fortune to you with Pleasure.

Never was a Lover's Ears more charmed than Mr. *Groby's* was at this long Harangue, both Love and Avarice, which were his leading Passions, being feelingly touched by it; his Mind being, as to Lust and Covetousness, most insatiable: Happy *Groby*! to have both gratified by the lovely *Catharine*. He was like most Lovers, who believe the greatest Improbabilities from the Objects of their Worship; and to such a pitch of Faith did she bring him, as to make him believe Youth and Age would agree.

He found it in vain to press her to any further Concessions; the more she resisted his Importunities, the more he honoured and adored her, and at length he thought it ungenerous to urge her further.

When he was departing she held him by the Hem of his Garment, and gave him such gentle and delicate Tugs of Love, to replace him again, as conveyed thrilling and raptured Joys to his fired Heart, and made him give up his famed Wisdom and Prudence to the happier Dalliances of her re-

served Charms; in short, he was more a Captive than she, and determined to live and die with her.

To form his Conduct in pursuance of this Resolution, he told the Gaoler that she was, to his Knowledge, a Woman of vast Fortune and Distinction, and of incorruptible Virtue; that he was afraid they would be called to a severe Account for keeping her, and thought it most adviseable to let her have her Liberty. The Gaoler replied, Please your Worship, Women will often say one Thing and think another. *Groby* interrupted him, saying, Hark you, Friend, none of your long Sermons for me now; do you think, because you are acquainted with Wretches fit only for the Gallows or Transportation, that no Woman will honestly tell her Mind; I assure you this Lady is great and virtuous, and I believe every Word she says to be as true as the Gospel, for they have the certain Appearance of Veracity, and she shall be turned out of this instantly; because she is the Occasion of much Extravagance here, you would for that Reason keep her, right or wrong, for ever, but thank God I am a better Christian than to allow such Wickedness. The Gaoler replied, Your Honour is disobliged with me, and I would as soon be hang'd as provoke you wilfully, but your Interruption prevented my explaining myself. Proceed then, says *Groby*. Women, continued he, say one Thing and think another, Men believe them because Love is blind. You said that before, cries the Justice, and I will hear no more from you, but if you do not discharge her To-morrow look to it. I will, says he, and all in the House if you order me, let the Sheriff do as he will with me. There you insult me again, says *Groby*; don't you know that he owes me eight thousand Pounds, and that I have the pricking down of every Man's Name for the

Grand

Grand and Petit Juries, and that the Judges always dine with me; these Advantages and Honours must be of very little avail to me, if I cannot transport such as you, or keep you from it, when the Law says you must go. Sir, replies the Gaoler, I know very few of any Credit but what owes you Money; I am sure at our last Election, not one of us Freeholders dare open our Mouths till we knew how your Honour was disposed; I never disputed your Commands, nor ever will, and know I may laugh in my Sleeve at any Person who threatens me, whilst I have your Worship on my Side: Shall I have her stripped, as you desired, before she goes? Upon my Word, replies *Groby*, I am puzzled about that, but I believe it is better let alone, for she would greatly resent such a Proceeding; you find by this I can foresee Consequences, and that there is no imposing upon me, whoever attempts it will, I am sure, be disappointed; my Friendship to you will entirely depend on your Secresy in conducting her away from this Place, which must be late at Night, in a Post Chaise; the Boy must be an utter Stranger to us all, and I will in the Morning let you know when to have Things in readiness: You spoke to me some time ago to provide for your Nephew, I had not an Opportunity till now, and I believe I can get him into the Revenue; you may depend upon it that I will take Care of your Interest, but do not imagine that any Woman alive should ever blind my Eyes or Understanding.

This Conversation ended, and in the Morning *Groby* came to Breakfast with *Catharine*, who now, to his great Comfort, could neither eat nor drink without him; after chiding him for being so long absent, he told her, she was at Liberty to go where she pleased. Instead of Thanks, which he expected, she wept, and, in imperfect Words, desired to know what he meant by Liberty to go where

she pleased; asking him, whether he expected she would go any where without him, declaring, she would rather be eternally confined, or beg in the Streets, than be deprived of his Company, which was of more Value to her than the Acceptance of a Crown. My Angel, replied he, dry up your Tears, or give me Leave to kiss them away, I never will give you Cause to shed any; this Day I will quit Wife and Family for your Sake, and meet you upon the Road To-night, where you think proper to appoint; if I come any more here it may be taken Notice of, it being already imagined at home that I am grown negligent of my Family: I will order a Post Chaise for you here this Night and meet you ten Miles off, and then travel with you where ever you please to direct. She replied, Can I rely upon you? You may, my Soul, says he, I would sooner desert Life than you. Then, says she, I will depend upon your Word, but positively declare that I will turn back if you disappoint me; and I insist upon your settling all your Affairs before you go, so as never to have Occasion to return back again. I have says he, done that already, and hope your Honour and Generosity is such, that you will make me happy for ever, and to let the Commencement be from this Day. Command me, replies she, but out of this Place, and it shall be my whole Study intirely to please you, if you will only inform me in what manner you would have me to behave when I set out from it. You are not to take Notice of any Thing, says Groby, but go into the Carriage and drive the direct Way for London, till you see me, and I desire you will set off about eleven or twelve this Night, the Gaoles having Orders to conceal your going away for some time.

Groby now acted as he had promised, for he pretended at home to have Business of Consequence in London, and settled his Affairs accordingly for long an Absence. As this Man has some Connection with *Catharine's* History, I cannot avoid being particular. He was the Son of a poor Smith in *Norwich*, and listed for a Dragoon about the Age of Twenty; continuing in that Station near five Years, 'till a young Widow worth above seven thousand Pounds, took a Fancy to him, and married him; he was at that Time, which is about forty Years since, as clever a young Fellow as any in the King's Army. He laid out his Fortune to great Advantage, and used all Means that offered to increase his Wealth; he got all he could, and saved all he got, that could be saved, which Conduct is certainly the only way to grow rich. His first Wife lived but five Years, when he soon after married his present, by whom he got upwards of twenty thousand Pounds, and increased it by his Management, so as to be now reputed worth upwards of one hundred thousand Pounds; tho' rated low, no Man knew better how to smile or frown upon Persons occasionally, as they came in his Way; he never regarded any but useful Acquaintances, such as he had Pleasure or Profit by; he had a most extraordinary Method by lending money, to enslave the Minds of People, who were free before, and make them subservient to his Will, by which Means his Interest and Influence became greater than those of double his Fortune, he was fond of Intrigue, and would feast at any Body's expence but his own; valuing himself greatly for the Quarrels he had had with several People, and glorying in not forgiving the slightest Injury, seeking for all Opportunities of Revenge; to sum up his Character, he was remarkably avaritious, very fond

fond of Adulation, and extremely desirous to have his Neighbours know his Power.

Catharine for her Age read Mankind very well, and none had the Art of pleasing with greater Delicacy than herself, when her Pleasure or Interest was in Question; but this was the most cautious Person she was ever concerned with.

About the appointed Time the Gaoler came to let her know the Chaise waited for her, it being ready, without the least Delay went into it, and was drove off. She was once more blessed with Liberty by her extraordinary Stratagem, and the Connivance of the honest Gaoler to oblige her Lover, but never that I could learn, had Grace enough to give Thanks to God for her wonderful Deliverance, nor even repented any Thing she had been guilty of, but was as willing as ever to enter upon new Enterprizes, which she was now hastening to one as fast as possible.

When she had travelled two Hours, her Chaise was stopped by Mr. *Groby*, who went into it, agreeing to travel all Night, to get the farther away from all his Acquaintance; they did not halt for many Hours, till they came to *Dunstable*, where they staid a Week, living as Man and Wife; the more as yet Mr. *Groby* knew *Catharine*, the more he lov'd her; she found the Way to secure such a Conquest over him, which no Woman did before; not a Word could he say, but she admired the Wisdom of it, and repeated all the Conduct of his Life, which she could inform herself of, with general Applause; she, in order to please him studied his Taste both in eating and drinking. This Behaviour made him absolutely subject to her Dominion. He gave her the Money he had of hers in keeping, upon which she insisted on treating him in *Dunstable*, the Reckoning coming to fourteen Pounds in seven Days, without any other

other Company than the Landlord, to help them out with a Glass now and then, Mr. Groby drinking very hard, which she took care industriously to ply him with.

The last Night of their being there, he observed her to be very dull, which made him so uneasy, that he desired to know the Cause of it; she with Eyes surcharged with Tears, which she had always Plenty of, when she wanted to gain a Point, said, I have Reason to grieve, for this is the last Night of my Happiness with you for ever; he desired to know the Reason; Oh, replies she, for imposing on you for a Woman of Fortune, which I can assure you that such an Imposition was form'd only for the intire Love of you, but adds she, sighing, I will not deceive you any longer, and now do as you think proper with me. Not a Man in the World could worse bear such a Disappointment, for he had an immoderate Desire to receive her supposed forty thousand Pounds; this gave him such a sudden Shock, that he said to her, I am surprized a Lady of your Appearance would impose upon a Gentleman in so gross a Manner, and intend my Ruin, by advising me to give all I had away, but I knew the World better than to do so. I wish, reply'd she, you had. What Injury have I done you, says he, that you should desire it? Because, replies she, you then would be obliged to live with me, and I could provide for us both out of the little I have. He then cheerfully told her, that since she was so generous, they would both live upon what he had, and that he forgave her with all his Heart; this was the first Instance of his sacrificing his Interest for Love.

Next Morning he was as well reconciled, and loved her as well, as if he had the Money she promised

promised him to receive. When they arrived in *London*, they went into Lodgings for a Week only, but soon after he took a House in *Bond-street*, and furnished it genteelly, giving all to her. This would not content *Catharine*, if he did not keep a Coach, and every other Thing that would indulge her Vanity and Pleasure. In this House he passed only as a Lodger of hers, tho' he could not bear being a Minute out of her Company. He now paid pretty well for all the distress'd Girls he had debauch'd in the Goal he took her out of; he lived in this Manner near two Years, and laid out above three thousand Pounds in Clothes, Jewels and Furniture for her, and spent above five thousand in living as she liked; in which Time, they often used to quarrel, and would come to Blows, but she always bang'd him severely; nevertheless, he still doated upon her, his Wife frequently writing to him, and importuning him to come home. He found by her Letters, and other Intelligence, that he lost more by his Absence from Home, than he spent or laid out in *London*, which roused him at last, and determined him to return. *Catharine* used to receive some of his Letters, and by them discovered his Intentions of quitting her, which made her resolve to give him a parting Stroke; she was sensible he knew she had a Husband, therefore she picks up one *Brown*, a very clever young Fellow, and desired him to personate Mr. *Rich*, her Husband, telling him, it would be to both their Advantage, if he would take out an Action against *Groby*, for criminal Conversation with her as his Wife, that as the House was hers, he might any Morning break open the Room Door they lay in, and find them both in bed, that *Groby* would give something considerable, rather than be exposed both to Town and Country, that he had heard of her Husband

being

being a Man of Credit, but had never been inform'd of the real Cause of their Separation, tho' publick enough; what Intelligence he had about it was chiefly pick'd up from herself, when in private together. The Scheme fix'd, she order'd *Brown* to make the best Composition with him he could, saying, if their Design was discovered, he must only disappear, and let the Action drop.

By *Groby's* cool Behaviour and Preparations, she found their Amour would soon be at an End; therefore desired *Brown* to prepare every Part he was to act carefully.

Next Morning, as soon as the Street-door was opened, he and his Bailiffs got in, who thought the Affair was a Fact, no Person being in the Secret but *Catharine* and himself; a Maid who was corrupted by *Brown*, shew'd them the Room Door where they lay, which they without Difficulty opened, and found them both in Bed together. *Groby* was exceedingly surprized, and thought they came to rob him; but when they told him they had an Action against him, for ten thousand Pounds, and inform'd him of the Cause withal, adding, that *Mr. Rich*, who was present, saw him with Witnesses enough, in Bed with his Wife; he was greatly confounded, and the Bailiffs told him, it would be in vain now to deny the Fact. Never was old Lover more perplexed, to keep his Money and Reputation; they insisted upon his dressing and going with them, whilst *Catharine* seemingly appear'd in all possible Concern. *Mr. Groby* dressed, and went in the greatest Confusion into the Par-
lour with them; he compounded this unhappy Affair for three thousand Pounds, to prevent his being expos'd, and had a good deal of Difficulty to procure it.

That

That Day he quitted *Catharine* and her House, but before he went off, he gave her very abusive Language. He took nothing with him but his Coach, which *Catharine* contrived to have followed, and immediately took out a *Middlesex* Writ against him, for two thousand Pounds for Diet and Lodging for him and his Servants, for upwards of two Years past, and had him arrested upon it, by the same Bailiffs, before he could get out of the County. He had, as he thought, *Rich's* Release to every Demand, who was also Plaintiff in this Writ. Upon which he employed an Attorney upon it, who told him upon seeing the Release he was safe. Mr. *Groby* desired his Attorney to go with him to see Mr. *Rich*, saying, that he believed he had no hand in it. They were soon informed where he lived, and accordingly drove to his House. When they came there, they desired to see Mr. *Rich*; being conducted into a Parlour, a Gentleman came to them to know if they wanted him; *Groby* reply'd, no, Sir, we want Mr. *Rich* the Merchant, that is my Name and Business, says Mr. *Rich*, and I know of no other that answers to both but myself; *Groby* then suspected the Cheat, and shewed him the Release, saying, I want to see the Gentleman that gave me this, I was arrested at his Suit this Day, for two thousand Pounds, which I have bailed; his Wife's Name is *Catharine Finch*; pray, Sir, do you know her? Mr. *Rich* reply'd, I do, Sir; she and I were married, but have been parted for some time. Mr. *Groby*, amazed at this, found to his Cost he was imposed upon, and greatly dreaded that his enquiry would bring the same Trouble upon him again. The Attorney asked him, if he would permit his Name to be made use of in suing Mr. *Groby*? He said he would in that Case, that he might be punished for having any Thing to say to her, that he

he was a very weak Man, to be so grossly cheated by a fictitious Husband, when the real one lived in Credit so near him, who ought to receive the Compensation for the Injury done, but believed it was not too late now. This alarmed *Groby* more than ever, and made him in the humblest Manner beg for Mercy, and desired him to compound the Action now commenced against him. Mr. *Rich* told him, if he accepted of the two thousand Pounds in full, he ought to be thankful. *Groby* did not hesitate a Minute about it, but agreed to secure him the Money, with a redundancy of Thanks for letting him off so easy.

Things being thus settled, Mr. *Rich* gave him a full Release, which was afterwards pleaded against this Action; but *Catharine* was disappointed, tho' the Mischief fell all upon *Groby*. Mr. *Rich* got two thousand Pounds this Day that he never expected by *Catharine*, which made in all, together with the Surgeon's Money and her own Fortune, eleven thousand Pounds, which was not a sufficient Compensation for his Disappointments in her. *Groby* made a very bad Campaign, and found his Fortune, on a moderate Computation, thirty thousand Pounds the worse for her Acquaintance, Money and Consequences considered.

He had now in the Country more Enemies than Friends, the Necessities of his Affairs in *London* forcing him to oblige those in the Country to pay what Money they owed him; he never had the same Power or Influence after, nor was he ever observed to be chearful, but had a fix'd and settled Melancholy upon him, under which he languish'd more than a Year, and then died unlamented.

Catharine was now fully possess'd of a handsome House, well furnish'd, and good Cloaths. *Brown* gave her half the Money they cheated *Groby* out of;

of; they were together every way worth near four thousand Pounds, including Jewels, &c. and seem'd to think themselves neither in the Power of Providence or Fortune. *Brown* and she, the Day *Grobby* left her, join'd themselves and Fortunes together, which was previously agreed upon, in case he executed her Scheme to Satisfaction.

Brown was a Man for her Purpose, young, handsome, and well bred; but never consider'd farther than the present Time, and was as extravagant as she could wish him, indulging themselves continually in the most expensive Things. In less than two Months he gamed away above two thousand Pounds, and in less than a Year spent and play'd all they had, quitted their House, and went into Lodgings extremely poor, pawning every Day some of the little Remains they had left, till at last they had not wherewith to get a Dinner.

In Despair, *Brown* went to a Surgeon of great Reputation, very near the *Exchange*, and who was a Man of very good Fortune; he desired to see him, upon which a Footman shewed him a retir'd Room, where his Master generally saw his Patients; the Surgeon soon came to him, but whilst *Brown* was telling him of some Illness he said he had, he watch'd his Opportunity to present a cock'd Pistol he had conceal'd to his Breast, and demanded his Money, in the getting of his Watch, the Surgeon laid hold of him and threw him down, the Noise they made occasioned by their struggling, soon alarmed the Servants, who ran to know what was the Matter. When they saw their Master engaged with such a Villain, they immediately secured him, and he was committed to *Newgate*. At the next Sessions he was condemned to die for it, but remained in his Cell in *Newgate* three Months before any Execution was ordered, during

ing which Time, he was supplied by the Surgeon, whom he had attempted to rob, with Half a Guinea a Week regularly paid him, to buy such Necessaries as he might want. There was nothing at his Execution remarkable, except his Person being greatly admired by the Populace.

Catharine whilst he was in Confinement was not able to give him the least Assistance or Comfort, being ill most Part of the time herself of a Fever, and her Poverty so excessively great, that when recovering, she had not even Clothes to put on, they being all sold or pledged to support her. He desired to see her the Night before his Execution, and she by great Importunity prevailed upon the Servant of the House she lodged in, to lend her what she could spare to cover her, in order to go and see poor Mr. *Brown* before he died. She gave her a few Things, which unhappy *Catharine* put on as well as she could, but her Disguise was so great, that her most intimate Acquaintance, to see her thus equipped, and scarcely able to crawl, would not know the once celebrated *Catharine*; so ematiated by Sickness before and Famine now, of which she had so feeling a Sensation, that it was discernable by her wishful Looks at every kind of Food she saw, as she crept along, being ready in Appearance to devour it, which made her former and late Excesses re-enter her afflicted Mind, as an additional Vengeance to it, having nothing to amuse her now, but the doleful Visit she was going to make.

She got into *Newgate*, and went to his Cell, which was opened for her, where nothing appear'd but Types of Mortality. In a Corner opposite his Bed stood his Coffin, a Shroud hung upon a Nail, a lighted Candle glimmering for him to read such Books as he was not accusom'd to, and a Chair or two which bore some Part of the sad Preparations for
next

next Morning's Dress. These made up the Furniture of this Mansion of Sorrow; when his Door was first opened, *Catharine* saw him getting off his Knees, which is sometimes difficult with Prisoners, occasioned by the Weight and Pain which their Irons give them.

He had often heard of her Sickneſs and Diſtreſs, but now too plainly ſaw a more woful Example of Vice and Immorality than he could form any Idea of in himſelf, for of the two ſhe was the greater Object.

Catharine, ſays he, I could not die in Peace without ſeeing you, and I now beg you may let me have the Merit in the Sight of God to reform you; behold me ſeriously, and all about me, ſee theſe Limbs, theſe Eyes and Face, that were lately ſo dear to you, thoſe you thought ſo beautiful, will ſoon be obnoxious and hateful to human Sight, thoſe that were ſo active and buſily employed in a Courſe of Wickedneſs, muſt now be confined to theſe few Boards, till Rottenneſs diſſolves and annihilates them to Eternity. Had I not come to this ſhameful End, Eternity at one time or other muſt have been our Caſe. Happy would we be if all our Wretchedneſs were confined to this Life only. I am young, but was hardened in Sin, and am now rather inſpired than informed that there is a God, an accounting God, that will fairly ſettle with us like Debtor and Creditor.

Alas, *Catharine*! What ſhall you and I do when call'd upon for our Accounts? My Turn comes To-morrow, yours may not be long after; therefore I beſeech you, let me date your returning to your Duty to the Lord of Souls, from this Day, and earneſtly deſire that you will no more rebel againſt him. My prevailing upon you to do ſo, may help to ballance the Scale of my Iniquities. What have you got by your Vices, that you ſhould love them,

them, with the Hell that always accompanies them? Shake them off, and if you have but an Hour to live, you will enjoy it with Comfort. I speak from Experience, for I never had real Happiness till now, and that in a Condition that would be avoided by all Mankind. I am thoroughly reconciled to Death, and think the Hours tedious in passing till To-morrow, when my mortal Part will be given to the World that corrupted it, and tho' compelled will atone for my Wickedness. *Catharine*, I expect and am sure of a joyous Day To-morrow; it is happy for a Criminal to know the Hour of his Death, otherwise I believe I should never have been prepared. When I saw any resemblance of Death, I was struck with Horror and not Reflection, thinking my Day was still far off. We see every Hour one dropping off after another, Death sweeping Generation after Generation, to make Way for others, and who will assuredly summons the whole Race of Mankind in their Turns, without Regard or Distinction.

How joyous, *Catharine*, were we, when scheming against, and robbing Mr. *Groby*, assuring each other Happiness of long Continuance, by what we defrauded him of; but never foresaw, nor did we think it was done in the Presence of a just and mighty God, who had it in his Power to punish us both, as we now certainly are, by his holy Will and Providence.

As this is the last Time I will ever see you, or any of the Companions of my Vices, I now most humbly beg your Pardon and Forgiveness, for hastening your Destruction and my own by Gaming. I was actuated by some incomprehensible and irresistible Power, to be the Instrument of yours and my own Ruin, as I was of our late Rapine and Fraud. My Sentence is very easy, as I am in a few Hours to be relieved from the Miseries of
this

this Life, and the committing of more Wickedness; but you seem to be reserved for other Purposes of Wretchedness and Miseries; defend yourself in Time, by Prayers to the Almighty, and by Repentance for what you have done, and reconcile yourself to Virtue.

Catharine, there is Half a Guinea and Half a Crown upon that Chair, take them, for you are the greatest Object I ever saw. All the Succour I had here, was from the Gentleman I intended to rob, but thanks be to God, he took and secured me, for had I got ten thousand Pounds it would have been the same thing with us both. May the great God for ever bless him and his, and make you take Warning by the Fate and sincere Repentance you now see in him, who during your Acquaintance with him, neither believed nor regarded the God of the Creation.

Catharine seemed to relent and appeared touched with Remorse at the Sight of him, and the Abode of Horror and Woe that surrounded her. I wish, says she, Mr. *Brown*, I was to suffer with you To-morrow, and be as well prepared as you are for Eternity. This cursed World corrupted and blackened me with Vices, that had the Appearances of Beauty and Pleasure, then betrayed, forsook, and left me in the Condition you now behold, which is, I can assure you, much worse than you can imagine, for not a Rag I now wear is my own. No Food have I tasted for this Week past, but the Filings of Bread, which was purchased with two Pence, being all the Remains I had left in the World. You are conscious of the wicked Delicacy of my Taste, sparing no Cost to indulge it, and turning my Eyes and Heart away from the Sight and Feeling of Objects, that wanted perhaps as much as I do now. I basely turned out of Doors the best of Mothers, when I lived in Affluence

ence and exposed her to the Dangers of Want and Misery, neglecting also both Father and Sister, when in my Power to relieve them; not one moral good Act of myself do I remember, but Vice after Vice I pursued, till I became acquainted intimately with almost the whole Circle of them. You may easily judge from this State of myself, that my Nakedness and Famine are but trifling Woes, compared to the Stings and Tortures of Mind and Conscience I must endure. In short, numbers of innocent Persons have been involved by my Crimes, so that my Condition is abundantly more unhappy than yours.

Will you give me leave to see you To-morrow, before you go out, to take my Farewel of you for ever? And pray tell me where you are to be buried?

I would not chuse, replies *Brown*, to see you any more; what may be done with my Body I know not, nor do I care; I offered it as a Present to the worthy Gentleman who supplies me now, and thought it might be acceptable to one of his Profession, but he generously refused it, and sent me word, he would lay out five Pounds on my Funeral, and that I should know where I was to be buried To-morrow.

Upon this, one of the Keepers came and asked, what kept that Woman there so long; Mr. *Brown* replied, she will go presently, and then addressing her, said, *Catharine*, it is to no Purpose to me, your staying any longer here, if you have any kind Remembrance of me, reform immediately, and pray for me whilst I live; God hears the Prayers of the afflicted, when sincere, therefore now depart and remember to take the Money with you; she then wept sincerely I believe, acquiesced with his Desire, and went away and never saw him more.

R

Catharine

Catharine seemed to have some Sense of her past Life and Conduct, for some time after this, and she certainly must have perished for Want, had it not been for the Money he gave her. She lived some little time upon Bread and Cheefe, and drank a little Beer, till she greatly recovered her Strength, and really thought that the most delicate Fare she ever had in her Life; but being still in want of Clothes, she was obliged to keep her Bed, or have the Blankets pinned about her, and was threatened to be turned out into the Street, if she did not pay her Rent in two or three Days.

In this Distress, she thought of some Clothes and other valuable Things she had out in Pawn, for much less than half Value, and told her Landlady of it, desiring her to let her have some Things to dress herself in, and to go with her, for she would sell as much as would pay her off, to which Proposal her Landlady agreed, being desirous of getting what she despaired of. They both went out, and in two or three Hours *Catharine* sold as much as paid her Landlady off, and put forty Pounds in her own Pocket. She came home well dressed with her own Things, but did not redeem the eighth Part of her Goods.

The Comfort she felt in being once more dressed, together with Money in her Pocket, revived her drooping Spirits, and created the greatest Respect from her Landlady and Maid to her; but she liked neither, and was determined to leave them as soon as she could suit herself with another Lodging, which she did in a few Days after.

When her Landlady understood she was for going, she endeavoured to prevail upon her to stay, and asked her, whether she had given her any Offence? She replied, she had, and that a most shocking one too. She desired to know what it had been. *Catharine*, where she had no Design,

was apt to tell her Mind freely, accordingly she told her, that when she was recovering, she smelt some roast Beef, and desired the Maid to beg a Bit of it for her, and was so impatient she crawled by the Wainscot to the Door, to hear the Maid request the Favour of her, and that she heard her reply, the Devil a Morsel I'll give her, let her buy as I have done, tho' she was sensible she had nothing to live upon at the same time, but Raspings of Bread and Water, which cruel Answer of hers, made *Catharine* say, in the Anguish of her Soul, Oh! I am starved, and directly fell on the Floor, from whence she was helped by the Maid into Bed again, and there lay languishing, unneeded by her; adding, that it was, besides hardness of Heart, extreme bad Policy, for if she had died, which she was very near, she must have been at the Trouble and Expence of burying her.

Catharine took another Lodging, paid Eight Shillings a Week for it, and was more careful than ever of her Money; but her evil Fortune was not so know how to employ herself, besides being idly bred, she had had a long Habit of Idleness, which greatly endangers the Conduct of every Person who is not secure in some easy Station. It is a received Opinion, that we must be always doing Good or Evil, and that our general Propensity is more for the latter than the former. As Vice is artfully varnished, and its Invitations are for instant Pleasure; Virtue has no Veil upon it, but is quite plain, nor has it the sudden Gusts or Transports that is found in the pleasing Enjoyments of our sensual Appetites, but has a settled tranquil Happiness from the Commencement and enjoying of it, to the remotest Times, that nothing can sap or shake the Foundation; it agrees well with Work or Employment, but

Vice will not, if it can help it, agree with either; and Idleness is laid out by the Vicious, who can indulge themselves with it as a Rule for Life.

As to Work *Catharine* knew very little of, which was now in her Opinion a great Misfortune, for she began to loath her Vices, and seemed more disposed to shake them off at this time, than ever before, as Traytors not to be trusted.

Beginning to reflect seriously, that she was spending daily the little she had, and getting nothing, which in some short time would reduce her as low as ever, these Reflections determined her to consult the Servant Maid, who had been so faithful to her, and whom she had never thought of whilst living in Grandeur in *Bond-street*, with Mr. *Groby*, nor in her Distresses. She sent immediately for her, and when she came, to her great Surprise she saw her big with Child, and dressed much above her former Station, but was soon informed that she was happily married, and lived with her Husband in the same House Mr. *Cook* left her in Possession of.

Catharine gave a true Account of her Circumstances to her, saying, she was willing now to follow any Business she was capable of, to get a Livelihood by, and requested her Advice. Mrs. *Loverson*, which was her Servant's Name now, told her there was Bread to be got by very small Beginnings, but it would require the strictest Frugality to make it do, the Want of which, she feared was her greatest Danger, by the long Habit she had had of high Living and Pleasure, both of which she must refrain from, with the small Stock she had, and not to think favourably of those false Pleasures when industriously employed, but always to have her Distresses and the Misfortunes of others in view, and carefully to avoid the Causes of them again for her own Sake.

Whatever

Whatever Profit you make in Business, continued she, lay out less upon yourself than it comes to, for Sickness or other Accidents may happen, which is out of your Power to prevent, and to be prepared for the like is the height of Prudence. There is no Ruin more certain, than your spending even slowly, more than the Profits you make; therefore I advise you frequently to bring yourself to a strict Account, and if you find the Ballance against yourself, it will certainly give you uneasiness of Mind; but if the Reverse, how comfortable will it be to see you have secure and independent Bread, by pursuing the same Course. I would not have you venture much in Trade, it may tempt your Husband to seize it all, which would undo you for ever.

It appears to me, that the best Business for one in your Situation, is to have ready made Linen to dispose of, and likewise to make it up for other People. I can serve you in this Way, because I carry the Business on in the same Shop you formerly lived in. You shall have my Interest with those Customers who buy from me, and I will provide you a Woman or two to work for you, who know their Business very well, and I desire you will cheerfully join your own Industry with theirs. This is the Trade I would follow, only God has provided abundantly better for me. Your Stock is more than you imagine, your Clothes are all safe with me, your Furniture was appraised and valued at seventy eight Pounds, all which I have ready to give you.

I thought, says *Catharine*, Mr. Cook gave you under his Hand the Furniture? He did, replies Mrs. *Lawson*, but God forbid I should insist upon it, for only doing my Duty to you both, especially when I see you so much inclined to get Bread for yourself, tho' I cannot help charging you with

246 BRADSTREET'S LIVES.

Ingratitude, for not coming to see, or enquiring after me, since I was with you at *Nottingham*. I did not then think you would ever have been so indifferent about me, as I knew not where to hear of you. I was sometimes so hurried, says she, and at other times so distressed, that I had no remembrance of the World, but the Objects before me, but for the future shall ever acknowledge your uncommon Goodness and Integrity to me, and would be glad to know how you got your Husband. Mrs. *Lawson* replied, by being honest to myself; which was to resist all the Arts and Stratagems he made use of to get his Will of me; so finding none of them would do, he courted me for a Wife, and we were accordingly married. I believe I am now as happy a Woman as any in *London* in a Husband, for he had five thousand Pounds when I married him, and owed not a Shilling, all which is now employed in Trade, and hitherto we have had good Success.

What do you think of the Business I proposed to you, for we should determine that before we speak of more indifferent Matters? I am determined upon it, replies *Catharine*, and intend to begin as soon as possible, but shall never know how to go about it, without your Assistance. I will send you a Woman, says Mrs. *Lawson*, that I believe you may depend upon. I have at present, added she, as much to mind of my own, as I am able to do, but shall continue always to give you the best Advice in my Power, and will send you as much Work as will be sufficient to support you, without touching your Principal, which I would have you by all Means reserve.

In less than a Month after she was, by Mrs. *Lawson's* Direction, fixed in the millinary Business, and redeemed all her Goods out of Pawn, selling what

what she could well spare, which together with what Mrs. *Lawson* paid her, made her worth above three hundred Pounds, having still Dresses good enough for one of ten times her Fortune.

She went on successfully in her new Trade for about three Months, and got sufficient Support her genteelly; in which Time, as she had confessed, she had more settled Content than she had experienced for Years before; but in her greatest Prosperity in this Way of Life, going one Day about Business, to Mrs. *Lawson's* House, Envy filled her Breast, to see the great Respect paid to one who was once her Servant, but by an uncommon turn of Fortune, was now become her Mistress, as she really was, for all she had to do mostly came from her Hands, and returned to her again when finished, and from whom she always received Payment.

Catharine used frequently to speak to her two Work-women of her Pride and Arrogance, telling them, that she would never have been worth a Groat, had it not been for her, and that she was very ungrateful.

All these Reflections Mrs. *Lawson* was informed of, by the Women *Catharine* spoke to, and the next time she came to her House, she took her aside, and said to her, Madam, I am well acquainted that you do not approve of my Conduct to you, which I am sorry for, for your own Sake more than mine, because, in our present Stations you will suffer most by a Difference with me. It is certain, I have been your Servant, and hope you cannot reproach me whilst so, with want of Duty or Faith to you, or since with any ungenerous or unkind Usage, that I know of; therefore I beseech you to inform me what I have done amiss, for I am in pain till I know the Cause.

Catbarine finding herself so closely pressed, said, As you insist upon it, I will tell you, I really thought you were unkind never to invite me to Dinner, and in all you give me to do you are as exact with me as you would be with any other Stranger, and are extremely formal with me when I speak to you. Mrs. *Lawson* replied, I must be free to you now and tell you my Reasons, Your past Life is well known in this Neighbourhood, which is the Reason I did not invite you to dine with me, but the seventy-eight Pounds I gave you, if well applied, will get you Dinners whilst you live; as to my Exactness in the Work I gave you to do, upon my Word I have paid you a Crown a Week in it more than it came to, and stole it in upon you, in hopes it would help to make you persevere in the honest Course of Life you are now taking; as to the Stiffness of my Behaviour, it is more affected than changed by my Fortune, that you might see you were to have no Dependance upon me if you misbehaved; do not repine at the Alteration which Providence has made betwixt us, and believe it occasioned only by the different Rewards for Virtue and Vice; you may live very happy as you are, and I desire you will keep yourself so, but I fear you are near falling when you want to quarrel with me; I can, with Justice, charge you with Ingratitude, for speaking and thinking unkindly of me, after all my past and present Services to you; and do not imagine I have any Bargain of this House by your Means, the Landlord of it making me an Abatement of five Pounds a Year less than you paid for it; the worst that can be said of me is that I was your Servant, but when first so I thought you virtuous, and knew nothing to the contrary till your Misfortunes came on, in them it would have been base and scandalous to have deserted you, though I should

should have been countenanced and rewarded by the Laws and the World for so doing, yet I would not have so foul a Treason to reproach myself with. Have you any sort of Demand or Obligation upon me not fulfilled? Speak and I will discharge it, if not, be thankful for the Continuance of the Usage I give you. Reflect on Providence a little more than you have done, and you will find Reason to bless God that he has not quite abandoned you, and consider the extraordinary Deliverances you have had from Gaols, Dangers, and even perishing Poverty. You are now in a most happy middling Station, as great as a Princess at home, giving Laws and Orders to your Workwomen and Dependants; and notwithstanding all you have said of me, I will still be your friend, and desire you will keep me so, by serving yourself and not me.

Catharine seemed very sorry for having said any Thing to her Disadvantage, and assured her she should hear no more of it, upon which this Breach was made up, and they parted good Friends, *Catharine* minding Business after without the least Murmur against *Mrs. Lawson*.

There was a very pretty young Gentleman resorted the House she lived in, his Name was *Fitzgerald*, at this time a Clerk to *Mr. Dillon* in *St. Mary Axe, London*, Brother to *Mr. Dillon*, the Banker in *Dublin*; he was genteelly bred in the mercantile way in *France* and *Spain*, and his Reputation quite unsullied before he became acquainted with her. *Catharine* and he often chatted together, which gradually brought on an Amour, but it was with more Discretion than she commonly made use of.

He never publicly lodged with her at home, but frequently met her abroad, and would stay with her two or three Nights together at some of the

the adjacent Villages to *London*. These Meetings and Delays were exceedingly expensive to them, besides the Loss they sustained through Neglect of Business; the Consequence of which unhappy Intrigue intirely ruined them as to Fortune and Reputation, and reduced them in a few Months to the lowest Shifts to get Money to support their Extravagance.

When they had squandered away their whole Substance, *Fitzgerald* unfortunately forged a Note upon Mr. *Nesbitt*, a Banker in *Coleman-street*, *London*, whom he served as a Clerk before; he sent a Porter for the Cash, and the Note being suspected, the Porter was seized and examined, who told where the Gentleman was to meet him that gave him the Note, upon which they went with him and took *Fitzgerald*; he was tried at the next Sessions at the *Old Baily*, and found guilty of the Fact, and notwithstanding the great Friends he had, who used their utmost Interest to save him, he was executed at *Tyburn*.

You find, in the Course of *Catharine's* History, that this is the third of her Intimates who has been sacrificed to the Gallows; though perhaps she did not directly advise them to commit the Crimes that brought them there, yet the expensive and idle Course of Life they led to please her, was as sure a Road to it as they could take, which Practice cannot fail to end in inevitable Ruin, when there are not Means to support it. A Man of great Fortune may, like the careful *Groby*, escape it, and be ruined another way.

She now lost her best Friend Mrs. *Lawson*, who would not see her, and was as destitute as ever, except having a few Clothes, which served her to apply to Mrs. *Price*, upon a Vacancy in the *Se-raglio*, to be admitted; she stood for it with three other

other Fair Candidates, and had the good Fortune to be most approved of. Since her Reception, she was often guilty of Rebellion, Mutiny, and Desertion, to give an Account of which, as her Trial and that of the other Lady is just coming on, I shall discontinue her History for the present, but will hereafter reassume it.

You must not here expect learned Debates upon the Trial, as they are but short and agreeable to our Constitution; but I think it necessary to let you know, for the better understanding them, the Form and Policy of our Law Proceedings.

The Bench was elevated by several moveable steps, which occasionally served upon Trials and other Purposes; thirteen of the Ladies were seated, who served as Grand and Petit Juries; Mrs. Price acted as Attorney General, and your humble Servant, for the present time, as Judge, &c. The other Ladies had their Appointments, every one of our State being concerned.

Upon this first Occasion, I endeavoured to appear to so brilliant an Assembly as a Man of profound Erudition and Learning, and chose rather to be thought a Pedant, than not be seen in that light.

In pursuance of this Desire, I recollected the little Remembrance or Knowledge I had of the Form of Indictments, where that failed I had Recourse to an Ejectment, and lugging in Part of that, blended them both together; when I thought it was formed so as to appear an elaborate and perfect Work, I gave it to Mrs. *Winnett* to read, who was Clerk of the Crown in our Court, to make herself well acquainted with it before she was publickly read it; she gave me her Opinion privately, that she thought it had more Law in it, but less Reason, than an Indictment formerly read against herself

herself at the *Old Baily*, upon which she was found guilty and sentenced to die. I don't regard the Reason of it, replied I, provided there be Law and Form in it. I believe, says she, there is a great deal of both, for I can understand but very little of it; and I can assure you, her Sentiments gave me Expectations that it would be greatly approved of.

Matters being regularly prepared, and the Court sitting, the Prisoners were brought forth, they were certainly beautiful Criminals: I then harangued the Jury, saying, From the Infancy of Time collected Bodies like you were empowered by Laws, and are held in Kingdoms and States of Liberty as the greatest Blessing, and the only Defence the Commons can have against the Tyranny and Encroachments of the Great and Powerful. You may find a Resemblance of your Constitution among the Tribes of *Israel*, and under the *Arcons* and *Effori* of the ancient *Grecians*; the Tribunes of the *Romans* were to secure the Commons from the Oppression of the Consuls and Patricians: The last mentioned, after their Conquest of this Island and settling here, were the first who gave us a Light of this Bulwark of Liberty, the obtaining, confirming, and preserving of which, cost in several succeeding Ages a great Effusion of human Blood, which our Ancestors spared not, to their eternal Fame and Glory, and handed it down to us in the happy Manner we now enjoy it, by our Representatives in Parliament; which Parliament not being able to do all the Business of the Nation, have delegated Part of their Power to subordinate Courts, that they may do Justice between Party and Party, and secure the Property of each Individual from the Rapine of superior Strength. The Commons are all tried by their Equals, either for their Crimes or disputed Property.

ies; but as the wisest and best Intentions human Foresight can think of, may be disappointed by the Artifice of cunning Persons, with the Connexion of their wicked Friends upon Grand Juries, to prevent which Practices I have made this Change; now you are all assembled together in open Court, every Innovation upon you should be accounted for, therefore I think it incumbent upon me to give you my Reasons for so doing: From my own Experience and that of other People I am fully satisfied, and hope to settle you in the same Point, that many Bills from Time to Time were and are laid before Grand Juries, for cruel Assaults and various other Crimes, committed by the powerful in Fortune upon the Weak and Distressed; that those Bills have been rejected, smothered, or so fatally delayed, that the Oppressed could never obtain any kind of Satisfaction; add, that Presentments for Money are as often got for particular Purposes, by Factions among them, to serve their Friends, as for publick Uses, for which they were originally and all along intended; this I mention, that I may help to give you a just Abhorrence of these Time-servers: If I rightly recollect a Grand Juror's Oath, he must renounce his God if he serves any of his most beloved Friends, or even his dearest Child, when he is upon this Inquisition: How base and ungrateful then must those among them be, who, in the Presence of God, that gave them this Distinction in their Country, thus publickly to disavow him and challenge his Wrath, by using their Interest and joining their Voices with the Chiefs of their Brethren, to obtain useless Taxes upon their Country, saving or ruining guilty or innocent Persons just as they are actuated by Interest, Friendship, or Malice. These Practices are now grown so common, that our suffering Country is groaning under the Weight of them; for if you
give

give your Voice at any time to oblige Persons, to serve a Turn, they can do no less than return the Compliment, when you intend any Wretch as a Victim for Sacrifice, or to prevent your Friend's being tried for beating a Person to Death; they will even boast publickly how they served their Friend, and defeated his Antagonist, and all this at the Expence of betraying the Trust reposed in them by their Country; to their utter Damnation, if they believe a Word to be true of the Book they swore by. These Practices are so generally known, that you will frequently hear Persons who have Business to lay before Grand Juries, asked more particularly as to their Interest among them, than the Merits of the Case.—Ladies of the Jury, if there be any among you, like those I have before mentioned, who believe the Gospel to be an Imposition, there is another generous Motive ought to incline you to Justice, which is, a grateful Remembrance of those Heroes recorded in History, who shed their Blood to establish those Laws of Liberty, which the Existence of Juries and Senates depend upon, and when you are secluded from the World upon the Business of your Country, imagine the Champions of our Freedom are attentively hearing and seeing all you do and say; let them be satisfied of our grateful Remembrance of them, and that the invaluable Blessings they handed down to us shall be preserv'd, and convey'd to latest Posterity, and not basely abused by your Partiality in favour of Interest or Friendship; if you find the Current of Vice irresistible among them, let some of you be singly the Champion of Virtue, Honour, and Justice, for all those you oppose with these Advantages, will secretly admire you, and esteem your Friendship more valuable, where Faith and Honour are concerned, than those who betrayed their God and Country, as much as in their Power, by prostituting their

their Voices to Debauchers of Virtue for an expected Gorge of Wine or an empty Praise; always regard those who are said to be friendly Men upon Juries, as the worst of Men, for they are generally as willing to espouse Wrong as Right, and very often, being urged by their Vanity, will take up a base and flagrant Cause when others have dropped it, and by the villainous Iniquity or designed Absence of their Brothers, are often crowned with Success, to their lasting Fame among their abandoned Acquaintances; have your Eyes always upon those friendly sort of Pests to the Commonwealth; suspect the worst Thing they can do, and as you love your Country use your utmost Interest to prevent their getting into the Senate-house, for depend upon it they will there regard Friendship and Interest as much as they did in the Grand Jury Room, and will indifferently love or sacrifice Justice, Injustice, Oppression, or the Ruin of their Country, as it might occasionally serve their own particular Purposes; with this Difference only, that their Prices will then be higher and their Treachery the deeper. Whatever comes before you, if it bears the least Doubt find the Bill, and let it come into Court to be fairly and openly tried in the Face of the World, and not lie as a Weight upon your Consciences, by screening any through Favour or Affection, but rather divesting yourselves of all Love or Prejudice. I see you have already found the Bill against the Prisoners at the Bar, let us now proceed to Trial.

This Charge being delivered, I received the Thanks of the whole Court, and accordingly had the Prisoners arraigned. This short Trial will, I think, do better in the Dramatic than Narrative way.

Dramatis

Dramatis Personæ.

Judge	Dudley Bradstreet.
Attorney General	Mrs. Price.
Clerk of the Crown	Mrs. Winnett.
Interpreter	Miss Williams.
Cryer of the Court	Miss Bradshaw.

Scene. A large Room in London, the Judge on the Bench in a long Scarlet Cloak, great Perriwig and Hat on, the Ladies of the Jury on his Right Hand, the Officers of the Court under him, the Prisoners opposite to him, and the Attorney General at his Left Hand.

Judge. Clerk of the Crown, read the Indictment against the Prisoners at the Bar.

Clerk. [reads] *Violente Andretti* and *Catharine Finch*, you both stand indicted for wickedly running away, and that you riotously and routously, with Clubs, Sticks, Stones, and Staves—

Att. Gen. Stop, Clerk of the Crown. Mr. Judge, I never heard such a Charge as this brought against any body here before.

Judge. I cannot help that, Mr. Attorney General, it is a complex Body of the Laws of the Land, and you will find it the Quintessence of Equity; therefore Clerk of the Crown proceed.

Clerk. [reads] With Sticks, Stones, and Staves, did by Appointment meet at the *Lebeck's Head* in the *Strand* the tenth Day of _____ and in the Year of _____

a great Number of young and old Rakehells, and did then and there, at the aforesaid Time and Place, wantonly, shamefully, and lasciviously, being prompted by cursed Avarice and Lucre of Gain, strip and expose your Legs and Thighs to the full View and strict Examination of all the young and old Letch-
ers,

ers, tumultuously assembled then and there, at the
afore said Time and Place, and did wilfully and
wickedly with Malice aforethought, and with evil
Intent and Meaning, endeavour to corrupt, entice,
and seduce the said Assembly, by exposing those
Parts to sight which, by the Custom and Modesty
of your Sex, ought to have been concealed: All
which Practices afore said are contrary to the Intent
and Meaning of the Laws and Constitution of this
House. What say you, guilty or not?

Cat. Finch. Not guilty.

Judge. Miss *Williams*, you have lived in *Italy*
some Years, pray explain this Charge to Miss *Vio-*
lente, as she does not understand *English*.

Miss *Williams* informed *Violente* of the Charge
aid against her, and then addressed the Court, gi-
ving them an Account of her Defence.

Miss *Williams.* *Violente* desires me to inform you
and the Court, that she was bred a Whore from
thirteen Years of Age, and has practised it ever
since, which is now full ten Years, till she was in-
troduced to this House, where she has been imposed
upon by Mrs. *Price*, who told her, that was the
business she was wanted for, and that she would
sooner lose her Life than bear either the Fraud or
confinement she is obliged to endure.

Judge. Miss *Williams*, pray recommend Virtue
to her, and the Happiness she enjoys here by ha-
ving a handsome Pension, besides good Living;
and tell her, Whoring is not agreeable to the Laws
of *England*, and that there are frequently painful
consequences attending the Practice of it, which
few or none escape from; that no Part of the hu-
man Species are so much despised before they are
thirty Years of Age, which they rarely live to at-
tain, and that they are continually subject to the
sicks and Buffetings of the worst Part of Mankind
during their Practice of it.

Miss *Williams* spoke to her, and informed the Judge, I have told her all you observed to me, but she says, that the Law-makers are her best Friends, as they never recommend Virtue to her; that she would only regard the Laws of Nature, and as her Person was her own she would do as she pleased with it, and thought neither Place or Pension agreeable if deprived of her Liberty.

Judge. Pray, Miss, let her know that her Acquaintances who resorted her, let their Distinction be ever so great, must be vicious, and as such would corrupt the World if they could; that in the way she was in her Character must be allowed to be notoriously infamous; that if she regards the Laws of Nature only, she ought to keep up to the Simplicity of them, that is, to restrain her sensual Inclinations, to go naked, to live upon Vegetables, &c. the Practice of which will incline her to more Chastity than ever she was yet disposed for, on the contrary, Luxury is an Incentive to Lust, and tend only to gratify her libidinous Desires, and if she does not conform to our Laws the Court will compel her.

Miss *Williams*, after interpreting to her what I had said, addressed the Court.

Miss *Williams*. She desires me to acquaint your Lordship, that as she has followed this Course of Life for ten Years, it has now become so habitual that she cannot refrain from pursuing it, let the Consequence be what it will.

Judge. Mr. Attorney General, I think the Italian Lady incorrigible, and must therefore commit her to your Care, and proceed to hear what the other Lady has to say for herself; then addressing myself to *Catharine*, I told her, it was in vain for her to deny the Facts she was charged with, and advised her to an immediate Acknowledgment of

her Crime, for delaying the Court might prove very prejudicial to her.

Cath. I don't deny going off and shewing my Legs, and perhaps a little more, for Money, which I wanted; and pray what Harm was there in that? What a Fancy it is to keep so many pretty Women here for no other Use but to look at, I am sure it is all but a meer Fancy.

Judge. The Passions and Actions of Mankind are governed more by Fancy than Reason; and, to prove my Assertion, do you think such a Number of People, and that at an extravagant Price, would assemble to see your Legs and your Companions, if they did not imagine them handsomer than those of the Women who drive Wheel-barrows about the Streets? What can this Oddness in our Nature be attributed to, but the Effects of Fancy: To love, rob, steal, murder, and betray, together with Jealousy and Avarice, are all but mere Fancies, I know nothing so extensive or dangerous to Soul and Body. I shall lay aside my judicial Power a little, to explain the Nature of Fancy, as you lay so trifling a Stress upon it; for you don't consider it has been your unhappy Guide all your Days past, till you came here, which proceeded from your Reason and not from your Fancy to relieve your Distresses. There are other kinds of Fancies, more airy and unaccountable than those I spoke of, which don't expect immediate Gratification; such as the chimerical Fanciers of Opinion, which have been the Cause of Devastations, Ravages, Massacres, Treasons, so horrid as to shock human Nature, who have either read or heard of them.

I shall give you an Instance of one, the famous *Caprioli*, Grand Vizir to the Emperor of the *Turks* and General of his Army, going to invade

the *Persian* Empire, consulted, according to Custom, the Musti or High Priest, to know how he should behave to the *Persian* Prisoners of War; the Musti answered, he was by no means to give one of them Quarters, that they were Hereticks, and to prove it they shaved their upper Lips, which ought not to be done on pain of Damnation.

Neither Reason, Fire, nor Sword has yet reconciled the different Fancies and Opinions of Mankind; the same Spirit of Discord and Animosity still subsist, and you may as well take a Fancy to cut my Throat because I like a Comedy better than a Tragedy; such a Provocation, I think, is as great as what enrages the World by their Fancies in Opinion, to be so ready to tear each other to Pieces; therefore, if you consider the universal Propensity we have to indulge our Fancies rather than Realities, you will not in the least be surprized at our worthy Patron's Fancy to keep new to look at what he loved in his Youth; you may as well censure an old infirm Gentleman, who keeps a Pack of Hounds and a fine Stable of Horses, and can enjoy neither.

Add to that, how Fancies are regarded and indulged by the Variety of Pets kept by Ladies, such as Monkeys, Baboons, Dogs, &c. I know a Lady who pays two hundred Pounds a Year to have her Birds taught to sing; but our Patron's Pets to look at, are the fairest Females he can possibly get of the human Kind; his Fancies are certainly more natural, for, though old and infirm, yet he shews his Taste by having a Collection of the greatest Beauties *England* affords, to gratify his Sight with. I believe you would fancy Love and Reverence, with all the Dangers attending them, rather than a calm Life under a small Restraint; you don't satisfy the Ladies of the Jury better than

you have yet done, you shall have your Fancy. Your Fellow-prisoner is ignorant of our Laws, Constitution, and Language, therefore an Object of our Mercy more than you, who are well acquainted with our Rules and Ordinances.

Att. Gen. Catharine, you were always troublesome and factious, and I am sure there will never be Peace or Quietness in this House while you are in it, for you are continually advising one or other of the young Ladies to Mutiny and Desertion: I often told you it would end thus, and as far as in our Power lies you ought to be punished; but the Ladies on the Jury are to consider your Guilt or Innocence, and to prevent Delay, the most Votes shall determine it presently.

Judge. Have you any thing to say for yourself, *Catharine*? if you have, this is your time.

Cath. I disown your Jurisdiction or Power, and will call you to an Account for it in a proper Place, if you proceed against me, Sir; but as to that wicked Woman, (pointing to the Attorney General) what Right has she to speak of my Vices, she has more herself than half her Sex, but she is angry with me now because I did not give her the Money I got abroad.

Judge. Your declaring against the Jurisdiction of this Court will avail you nothing, because no more is intended against you than to expel you from this House, which every Man who keeps Servants has a Right to do, when he thinks proper to discharge them out of his Service. No more remains for me to say till I have the Jury's Opinion. Ladies, you have heard the Charge against her, and her Defence, you are now to determine whether she be any longer fit for your Society, and accordingly declare you will bring in your Verdict.

The Jury having judiciously weighed the Charge against *Catharine*, the Foremost replied, when asked by the Court *Guilty or Not Guilty*, as follows: We have heard and considered her Case, and are unanimously of Opinion that she is not fit for any civil Society.

Judge. Ladies, you have acquitted yourselves with Honour. *Catharine*, you are, by their Verdict and my Sentence, for ever expelled this House; go now and seek your Bread where you please, the Doors shall be opened for you, and I request, Ladies, that none of you will correspond or converse with her for the future.

T H E
CONTINUATION
O F
CATHARINE'S HISTORY.

THE Court broke up, and *Catharine* quitted the House weeping, and afterwards became as common a Prostitute as the most abandoned in *London*. She was tried at the *Old Baily* for picking a Gentleman's Pocket of his Watch, but the Evidence against her not being positive she was acquitted.

Soon after this she went to her Sister, cloathed in Rags, who lived in *Long Acre*, and there met

her Mother; her Sister hated her on account of her Conduct and Morals, more than for her Ill-nature; but however she cloathed her, gave her Money, and soon after provided Work for her; the Clothes and Work she pledged or sold, but her Sister after redeemed the latter; tho' she would see her no more, yet she secured twenty Pounds a Year for her to live upon, provided she resided an hundred and fifty Miles from *London*; which Condition she did not comply with, but rather chose to expose herself as a common Whore in the Streets of *London*. By this unhappy Course of Life she contracted a Disorder that made her as rotten as human Flesh with Life could be; in this miserable Situation, she applied by Petition to get herself into the *Lock Hospital*, near *London*, where none are admitted but Women venereally infected, and where there are more Experiments made by the Faculty of Surgeons than in any other Hospital in or near *London*.

I hope the fair Reader will pardon my Indelicacy in giving a Description of this charitable Edifice: It is divided into little Wards or Rooms, for the Reception of the Female Votaries of *Venus*, the Consequence of which Worship is always attended with Foulness, and generally ends in Misery; here you behold the Nurses hurried about their expiring Patients, and rifling their miserable Boxes, with Sighs echoed from all Parts of it, intermixed with the Vows and Promises that first ruined them; here you see a Circle of young Surgeons, in barbarous Mirth telling each other the Pieces of Rottenness they had cut and slash'd from the tormented Patients; and may often observe the Remains of decayed Beauty hurried away in a Coffin: Their Funeral Procession is no more than the Porters who

carry them to the Church-Yard, where a large Hole is prepared for the Purpose, in which a Pile of Coffins is laid over one another, full of Objects of Charity only; when sufficiently filled, perhaps with eight or ten, they are then covered over with the loose Earth, and veiled from human Sight for ever; the unavoidable Stench proceeding from the Drugs, used here in such great Quantities, is insufferable to Strangers at first.

In this Place was the unhappy *Catharine* lodged, but Death would be put off no longer, for here she died in a Salvation: Her Face that had charmed so many before was now frightful to behold. I spoke to the Nurse that attended her, who told me the Conversation that passed between them, and assured me that she was the most penitent Person breathing, for whilst she was able to speak she was continually imploring God's Mercy and Pardon for her Usage to Father, Mother, Sister, Husband, and some Gentlemen she had brought to untimely Ends. Poor *Catharine* finish'd Life in this Manner, and was buried as mentioned before.

It may be useful to the judicious Reader to make a Comparison between the Lives and Conduct of these two Sisters, unfortunate *Catharine* and happy *Emilia*. I confess, if their Adventures had been helped by Fictions they would be more amusing, but as the Facts are true, they ought to be more affecting.

Catharine set out in the World with the Advantages of six thousand Pounds Fortune and a wealthy Husband; but she ever strayed from good Conduct, and was soon exposed to the World, after despising her Parents and using ill her virtuous Sister; she had not one Misfortune, tho' wretched she was, but the certain or probable Consequences that unavoidably attend such a Course of Life as she pursued.

On the other Hand, let us consider *Emilia*. Soon after her Sister's Marriage, her Father and Mother were ruin'd and her Fortune destroy'd by the Failure of an Uncle: Her rich Sister would do nothing for any of them, though her Husband was willing, which obliged *Emilia* to go to Service, and out of what she got by it maintained her Father first, and afterwards her Mother. She had some severe Trials of her Virtue and Faith; her Resignation in them was near equal to a suffering Martyr in the Cause of *Christ*: Her Courage, which rested upon Virtue, was always undaunted, and never dismayed; Her Integrity was not to be shaken: Truth, though very injurious to her Repose and Interest at the Time of telling it, she always chose before base and disguising Falshoods: She delighted in Acts of Humanity, Goodness, and Forgiveness, wholly attributing every Blessing she enjoyed and Deliverance she had to God; constant and fervent to her Hours of Prayer. She was crowned with Success, and gained the Love of all Degrees of People who knew her a Servant, till at last she became Dictatress of a Country, and then lived unenvied, and as much beloved as before.

By tracing all the Passages of her Life, I see but very little to be attributed to good Fortune, but all to her Virtue, Piety, and wise Conduct; those Excellencies ever were and ever will be rewarded in Proportion as they are possessed; bringing Comfort and Joy to the Heart and Mind, which no human Afflictions can affect. The Additions of Wealth and Honours to such a Greatness of Soul as this, are only like Ornaments to a beautiful Person, who before appeared lovely.

I was

I was as careful in my Observations upon Mankind for many Years, in the active Part of my Life, as I was capable of, and am positive, from my own Remarks, that the Virtuous are always rewarded, and often by unaccountable and unforeseen Means, whilst the Vicious are as surely disappointed; to explain this, I beg Leave to use a very vulgar Expression, which is, by some damned, unexpected Back-stroke, that either blasts us with the World, or inwardly corrodes our Hearts; and I will answer for it, that any young Lady who pursues the Conduct of either of these Sisters will meet with their Rewards adequate to the Paths they take.

I have no Right to be an Advocate for Virtue, Piety, or wise Conduct, I love them only for their own Sakes, but have no other Affinity with them, if I had, I should not thus be scribbling Facts for Bread which are ten or twenty Years old.

It may be some Satisfaction to you to know how my Acquaintance happened in *Newgate* with those unfortunate Men I have wrote of; to clear which I must inform you, as my Attendance upon the Ministry was well known, but not upon what Account. Persons under Sentence of Death are generally informed who are most likely to serve them, whether they can or no, and in those deplorable Circumstances they will apply to any Person.

For some Years there was scarcely a remarkable Criminal that did not send for me, especially the *Irish*; but I never was applied to till their Affairs were desperate, and seldom thought proper to concern myself about them; when I did, I never imitated any Application or Scheme practised before; I was suspected to contrive the Escape of some, and to deny it now, would not be believed by those of that Opinion, and to confess it, if it was so, would be imprudent.

What

What makes me so prolix upon this Subject is to satisfy several Gentlemen, who have pressed me to relate in this Work some Schemes I was charged with. *Cook, Brown, and Fitzgerald* undoubtedly applied to me, but not in the Law way; the two former I advised not to amuse themselves with Hopes of Pardon, or getting out till led to Execution. I thought *Fitzgerald* would have pursued my Advice, but he was led astray by Men of greater Consequence.

My Scheme, as to him, was calculated to serve the Publick as well as himself. I have before taken Notice, that he was bred in *France* and *Spain* some Years, both which Kingdoms we were then at War with; I advised him to apply to the Ministry, and offer his secret Services to them in either Kingdom, and to get some of his Friends to be Security for the Performance of any Trust reposed in him; that he might have it well certified in either Kingdom that he was under Sentence of Death in *Newgate* in *London*, out of which he escaped; that favouring his breaking out would answer Purposes better than a Pardon, because it would endear him to those he went to, and give no Offence to his Prosecutor, who I was informed endeavoured to save him after Conviction.

Opportunity was never fairer than at that Time, the Ministry being embarrassed for want of Agents to send to *France*, *Mr. Phillips*, their best one, being hung in *Paris* a Month before.

Whether this Scheme would take or no, his Fate could not be worse than it was. The Evening before his Execution I was prevailed upon to go to him, when his Friends despaired of Success for him; he then repented, but too late, not taking my Advice. Among my Acquaintances here I remarked, that Disobedience to Parents, Masters,

sters, and Mistresses, were generally the first and leading Causes to their Ruin and infamous Ends.

The next History I give you in this Work I take from *Newgate*, and must beg Pardon for the Lowness of my Subject, and concealing the Name, but the Facts will point him out ; yet I must first look back and see how Affairs are situated in the *Se-raglio*.

I laid all the late Proceedings before the Doctor, who greatly approved of them, and in particular my Discourse upon Fancy, being sensible my Intent was good in it to serve him ; but we were all greatly embarrassed how to keep Miss *Violente* within Bounds, and reconcile her to the Rules of the House.

As she now began to talk a little *English*, I advised that Mrs. *Price* should assist me in giving her some private Exhortations, which was agreed upon, and in a short time after being practised wonderfully composed her.

The Doctor told me he had a Request to make of me, I assured him I would grant it, before I even knew what it was, presuming he would ask me for nothing but what was in my Power ; he then said, he had begged a Pair of Colours for a Nephew of Mrs. *Price*'s, who, though often affronted, would never fight, and upon that account was frequently insulted by those who knew his Cowardice ; that Mrs. *Price* would introduce me to him, and that he would be much obliged to me if I could prevail upon him to attack some of them, and desired me to spirit him to it by offering to be his Second. I promised to use my Endeavours with him, but observed how hard it was to persuade a Man to fight who did not like it.

Mrs. *Price* soon after brought us acquainted and he judged the Reason. I often spoke to him about the Disgrace it was to a Man, especially

ally one who had a Commission in the Army, to be reputed a Coward; that the Danger was not near so great as was apprehended; that one in ten had not been killed in Duels who had fought them; that it would dub him a Man of Courage, and that after one Attack he might take Numbers of those by the Nose who were now ready to kick him. He replied, that none would recommend it to him but those who wished him out of the World, and positively declared, that he would neither fight with Sword or Pistol, because he knew nothing of either save the wearing a Sword, but that he was ready and willing to box with any of those who affronted him.

Finding it fruitless to urge him any more to fight, I asked him would he favour a Stratagem that might establish his Reputation as to Courage, and make him appear a fighting Man. He told me he would with all his Heart, and that he desired nothing more. I then told him I would resort the *Prince of Orange* Coffee-house for two or three Days, which was the House his want of Courage was most exposed in, that I would take no Notice of him there till I affronted him by snatching a News-paper out of his Hands, or some such trifling Insult, which he was to resent, and upon my not begging his Pardon, he was to whisper me, so as to be heard, and say something of six o'Clock in the Morning behind *Montague* House, &c. that we would meet and each have a Case of Pistols, which should only be charged with Powder, and to exchange Fire Arms upon the Ground, which is sometimes done for fear they should be charged with Slugs or chew'd Balls, desiring him to make it appear as a most desperate Duel, and when we had discharged our Pistols, then to engage furiously Sword in Hand, agreeing to let him gain the Victory.

Ir

In this Coffee-house used to assemble the greatest Bravadoes in *London*; I fashioned my Dress in Conformity to other fighting Gentlemen, who resorted there, and really had from my Hat to my Shoe, the Appearance of a Man ready for Battle; me Pupil acted his Part extraordinary well; the Insult I gave him was treading on his Foot, upon which, he says, 'Sblood, Sir, you have almost lamed me. I rudely, replied, with an ill-natur'd Grin at him, damn your Foot, Sir, and you too, why did not you keep it out of my Way? I want to speak to you, Sir, says he, as soon as you please, says I, if 'tis Satisfaction you desire.

Let sober and reasonable Men think as they will, in public Places of this Sort, there is a great deal of Notice taken, and Form observed, when there is an Intent to murder a Man with some Decency, for their Amusement; nor is the bad Manners or Rudeness of the Offender, the Matter regarded by them, but the Performance of every requisite Punctilio, before you draw a Sword or fire a Pistol, 'tis that alone appears worthy of their Examination.

To proceed; he gave me the Whisper before-mentioned; I directly made him a formal Bow, and thanked him for the Invitation, which gained me Respect from those who had observed the Affair.

We met this Evening at Mrs. Price's, who knew and approved of what we were going about; there we settled the Preliminaries for the Battle, and engaged two Coaches to attend us early the next Morning.

I went at the Hour appointed, and found my young Hero on the Ground ready to receive me; each of us had a Second, who knew nothing of our Agreement. He asked me upon Honour, if my Balls were fair, and such as Gentlemen ought to

to use? My Second answered, let them exchange their Arms, which was instantly agreed upon. They were all charged by our Seconds, in our Lodgings, but we both took an Opportunity to take the Balls out. As the Injuries done and received were very great, we insisted to be near each other when we fired, which our Seconds readily agreed to. At about six Yards Distance we turn'd Back to Back, and our Seconds withdrew; then we wheeled about with a becoming Grace, and thundered our Pistols almost in the Faces of one another; his second Shot brought me down, and that with great Effusion of Blood, which was prepared in a Bladder I had for that Purpose, and which upon my Fall I immediately burst upon myself. My Clothes were loose in the Engagement, but they buttoned them upon me, and both the Seconds and my Antagonist helped me to my Coach. I was drove to Mrs. *Price's*, like a Player slain upon the Stage, who immediately recovers behind the Scenes, so it was with me, when I got to her, and shewed her the Use I had made of the Blood she provided for me. I fully related our Heroism to her; she immediately sent and had it inserted in the News-papers, that Ensign *L——* and Captain *B——*, fought a Duel, at the Back of *Montague-House*, where the latter was mortally wounded. The D——r and Mrs. *Price* presented me with upwards of an hundred Guineas for this Affair, and it is inconceivable the Service it did the Ensign afterwards, for he was not only looked upon as a Man of Courage, but those Gentlemen who before affronted him, made him now a Judge of the Laws of Duelling. Where he was before despised for want of Courage and Knowledge in that noble Science, he was now courted to be a Second to others. Words and Syllables were laid before him, to know if they bore any Construction,

Construction, Intent, or Meaning, that might be challengeable; but he generally made a bad Use of this Power and Influence, when scrupulously nice, considering Words and Cases relative to Chivalry, he commonly concluded his Judgment, by saying publicly, Damn me, were it my Case, if I would not fight him. He was in every other Respect, but his Vanity this Way, a very good young Man.

Never was the D——r more pleased with me than for making the Seraglio agreeable to Miss *Violente*, for he liked her exceedingly. Matters being thus far settled in the Seraglio, I shall now proceed with the Narrative promised before.

Elinor Evans, upon various Indictments was at the *Old Baily* found guilty, and received Sentence of Death; she pleading Pregnancy, a Jury of Matrons were impannelled, who found her quick with Child; her Sentence was thereupon respited till a Month after Delivery, and that time elapsing, it was changed into Transportation for Life.

Elinor was safely delivered of a Son in *Newgate*, and soon after she was sent to the Plantations. The Child was given to a proper Nurse, provided at the Expence of the Publick, for Children born in a Goal in *England* are not reared by the Parish, as they are thought too great an Inconvenience. He was baptized, and called *William*, to which, for Shortness, I shall add *Gate*, to shew we regard Custom, that is, that every one must have two Names, a Christian and a Sirname, for Distinction Sake.

As I am at a Loss for any further Introduction, I must therefore go directly on with the History.

THE



T H E
H I S T O R Y
O F
WILLIAM GATE.

HE was kept at Nurse till five Years of Age, and there taught his Letters; he was also well used, and taken Care of, then according to Custom, and his Right by the Circumstances of his Birth, was sent to School, and boarded with many others of his own Degree, under the Care of a proper Master, who taught him to read, write and cast Accounts very well, which was all the Learning designed for him.

Had *William* been the Son of a Man of Fortune, it would have been often said he was a fine Boy; but those Children were never complimented, so they were done Justice by as to their Good and Learning, it was as much as was expected.

Mr. *Landers* the School-master, was an honest, moral, Man, and fulfilled the Trust the Publick

lick had reposed in him, with Integrity and Honour, for which he was as well qualified as any Man in *England*. His School was worth to him near a hundred Pounds a Year, which he lived upon with Frugality and Carefulness; but had an abandoned Son, that he and Wife doated upon; who had kept them since he grew up extremely poor, but never so as to have the Children neglected.

William, our present Subject, was one of the finest Boys in the World, and at nine Years of Age, so far exceeded the other Boys in his Learning, as to be appointed by Mr. *Landers*, his assistant to teach them. Notwithstanding the extraordinary Affection he had for his Son, *William* possessed a great Share of his Love. The first natural Excellence taken Notice of in him, was, singing the Psalms, which charmed the hearing of those who delighted in Church Musick, and one of the Governors of this School who was captivated with his Pipe, ordered him to be taught to sing at his own Expence, which he took with as much Ease, as any other of his Instructions, that is as fast as it was laid before him, and in the mean time neglected no other Part of his Learning.

At eleven Years of Age, to hear him sing would soften a cruel, morose, or avaricious Disposition for the Time. The Governors of this School had a State Room in it, to assemble upon the Business of the Place, and always distinguished *William* by their speaking to him, who had uncommon Sense for his Years. They would frequently order him to sing, as he was their own, and used often to give him Half a Crown, to encourage his Genius; but then would bring him afterwards to an Account for the Money, to know in what Manner he had laid out the little Perquisites he made. He always gave them to his Master, whose Distress occasions

occasioned by his graceless Son, he was as sensible of as himself. The finest Fruit could not tempt him to lay out one Penny, that he thought would be serviceable to his Master. The only Recreation he took Delight in, was, after School to walk with him in the Fields, which was as agreeable to his Master as himself; and at these Seasons of Leisure, he would often wait for *William* at the Door, saying, *William*, I am ready; *William* generally hurried for his Bonnet, or some other little Necessary requisite, would hastily answer, Sir, Sir, I will come to you in an Instant, and would soon be with him, rubbing and scrubbing his little Things as he went along, to appear the better in his Sight. In these Walks, *William* used to give the greatest Indications of his Youth, by his joyous Gambols about his Master's Heels, running before and behind him, and sometimes by sudden impulses, leaping where he might walk it.

In these innocent Sports, which are common with Boys of his Years, his Master indulged him, wisely knowing the Excess of them would soon abate by the Fatigue, and then he could enjoy *William's* Company better, than when his Thoughts were rambling upon those Exercises. Whenever they came to a convenient Solitude, they would seat themselves, and his Master would desire him to sing his favourite Songs, which were, *Genius of England*, and Britons *strike home*, &c. *William* at this Time, besides the Harmony of his Voice, enter'd into the Spirit and Meaning of every Song he chanted; his Master transported with Pleasure, would humour his Songs with his Hands, and every now and then in Raptures chime in with his own course Voice.

Times thus enjoyed were the happiest Part of *Mr. Landers's* Life, for ten Years before, but this like all exquisite Happiness had its Dangers. These children like the *Lacedemonians* of old, were the

276 BRADSTREET's LIVES.

Property of the Commonwealth, and were generally ordered away by the Governors, to some Trade or Business at the Age of about thirteen. They know of no Parents but their Country, and consequently have none to grieve or rejoice at their good or ill Fortune, when entering the World.

After being thus provided for, we may suppose that they have neither Friends or Relations, only God and their Virtue to rely upon, which is full sufficient, if they are so happy as to chuse his Friendship.

The Master of this School for the last Year is obliged to explain to them the Trades most useful to the Publick, and honestly to state the different Advantages and Disadvantages of them, in order to give them a proper Idea of that Occupation that might be most agreeable to their respective Genius's; and at a proper Time, an Apprentice Fee is given with them, out of the Fund appropriated for their Use. The Master too continually puts them in mind of their Obligations to their Country, recommending Gratitude to them, if ever it is in their Power, by adding to the Fund that took Care of them, when deserted and forlorn.

Of all Sets or Institutions of Men I have ever read or knew of, they are the most grateful; which may be seen by a List of their Gifts to this Fund, from time to time, and which are now near sufficient to support it; but the Formation of their Minds seem to change with the Times. Originally, the love of Arms was recommended to them; and they were, when Occasion required it, remarkably brave, but in Proportion as Commerce and Riches arose, Valour and a martial Spirit declined; the love of God and the acquisition of Wealth, being now what is wholly recommended to them.

The most famed Sea Captains *Cromwell* had, were educated in these Sort of Nurseries; and 'tis said, that Sir *Cloudestly Shovel* was brought up in this very School. It is out of all Manner of Doubt, that considering their Numbers and Opportunities, *England* has none to compare with them for War or Trade.

But to return from the Fields to our School: When *William* was twelve Years of Age, Mr. *Landers*, his Master, might go where he pleased. for *William* took as good Care at home as if he were present, and knew the Discipline of it as well.

The Governors by every Month's Acquaintance, liked *William* better and better, and used to speak to him of serious Matters relating to the School; his Friend among them, who had him taught to sing, publickly asked him, what he had done with the last Half Crown they gave him, saying, that his Master had told them he gave him four, but pray, as you got five, what is become of the fifth? They were informed before by the Master what he did with it, but insisted now upon his accounting for it; *William* knew nothing of Falshood, and told them, he had the Silver in his Hand; that as he found they were going, he ran down to order Coaches to the Door, in the Hurry of which a poor Woman, who had brought a Basket full of Eggs from *London* to sell, had them all thrown down and broke; she crying, declared, she had no more in the World to support herself and two Children, but that Stock of Eggs. I desired her to be comforted, till I spoke to my Master, who was a very good Man; I went to him, and giving him four Half Crowns, I shewed him the other, telling him, the Misfortune the Woman had met

with, with her Eggs, and humbly requested, that he would permit me to relieve her Distresses with the Half Crown I then had in my Hand; he replied, do so, my dear Child; pray go and give it her this Minute, which I instantly did, to the great Joy of the poor Woman. *Billy*, says the Governor, did you not repent giving your Half Crown to her since? I did not indeed, Sir, replied he, but always when I think of it, it gives me the greatest Pleasure; why so, replies the Governor? Because, says he, I am sure God will love me for it, as it was the first good Act I ever had in my Power, and I made use of the Opportunity, as his Servant ought to do. The Gentleman who was a very good Man, addressed his Brethren, saying, what this Boy has done is a Shock to me, I saw the Accident happen, which was occasioned by your Coach or mine, pointing to one of the Gentlemen, yet I was Brute enough to leave the poor Creature to her Distresses and Cries, and hastily drove off. *Billy*, says the Governor, do you see that Woman often? I generally see her once a Week says he, and she obliges me to take an Egg as a Present from her for relieving her. The Governor then took a Guinea out of his Pocket, and ordered *Billy* to give it to his Master for the poor Woman's Use, when she came next, and then said to him, prepare yourself well for the Sea Service, as that is the Business I would recommend to you, and I will give you twenty Pounds for a Venture, when you set off to encourage you.

The Gentlemen were all greatly pleased with the Manner *Billy* had laid out his Half Crown, foreseeing if he lived, he would come to something more than ordinary. Never was Boy of his Kind distinguished by his Superiors more than he, his Governors generally had him with them, when assembled and Business over, and ordered Mr

Lander

Landers to get him the best Histories to read ; also, to have him well versed in Geography. He applied himself so assiduously, that in less than a Twelvemonth after, he made a surprising Proficiency.

He was now advanced in his thirteenth Year, and had acquired as much Learning as was in his Master's Power to teach him.

Mr. *Landers* seldom regretted the Loss of a Boy's leaving him, as Custom had made it habitual to him, but it was not so when parting with *William*, the Thought of which, he nor his Wife could bear.

This was the Danger I before hinted at, for you could scarcely find a Youth that was five or six Years older than he have more Sense. Mr. *Landers* was seized with the Palsy, and not able to take Care of his School, which he had attended with Diligence for near forty Years, but was now confined to his Bed, and *William* was obliged to take care of the School, till the next Monthly Meeting of the Governors.

The Night before they assembled, his Wife, Son, and *William* were with him, all in Grief and Despair for his apparent Dissolution, and the Loss of the Benefit of the School, which they were afraid would be given to some Body better able to take Care of it in Case he even survived.

Mrs. *Landers* overwhelmed with Grief, stood weeping by his Side ; my Dear, says he, the Pain my Illness gives me, torments me less than the Apprehensions of your future Distress. We enjoyed for about fifteen Years a Tranquillity equal to any People in our Station, but for these ten Years past, our Lives have been almost one continual Series of Afflictions, brought upon us by our darling Child. Few in this Life are without

their Troubles, but mine admits of little Alleviation, brought upon me by the Hand that ought to have been my Comfort and Support, when divine Providence thought convenient to chastise me.

'Twas he plundered us, that ought to have been our Defender, at the Hazard of his Life; instead of that, it has been his Delight to ruin us. Oh! Son *John*, the Stabs you have given my Heart and Fortune, I forgive from my Soul, but as they came from a darling and only Son, it makes the Pain of them unsufferable, and gives you an Opportunity of seeing a Father and Mother bowed down by Distresses and Troubles, almost to the Grave; my Illness now, I look upon as a Gift from Providence, to release me soon from all Afflictions; here is your Account fairly stated by me, in the Course of ten Years past to Doctors, wounding and maiming, Riots, Trials against you for Felonies, besides various other Articles, comes in all to above seven hundred and fifty Pounds. Oh! had I half that Sum to leave your distressed Mother, I could resign my Breath in Peace.

William, my Dear, you have been my greatest Comfort for some Years past, and God I hope will reward you for it; we shall be ruined for ever if the School be taken from us To-morrow; tell them, my Dear, you will mind it for me, they know you are capable of it, and let them know what I merit from my Country, that a Wind does not blow but some one or other bred under me sails by it, that there are above five hundred of my Scholars now serving their King and Country aboard the Fleet. *Billy* we are undone if you dont prevail; your Elocution is very perswasive, use the Force of it To-morrow.

If we pray to God, says *William*, for Success, I believe we need not fear it; if you always retain that Way of thinking, says Mr. *Landers*, your Works

Works cannot fail meeting with a Crown of Glory.

Next Day the Governors assembled, to elect a new Master, and to dispose of *William*, and the other Boys ripened by Age for Business. Three Candidates appeared for the School, and *William* was ordered to lay the Accounts of the School before them, which he had before prepared with the greatest Regularity. When they were thoroughly examined and approved of, *William* was then asked, what Trade or Business he would choose? He replied, with Tears in his Eyes: May it please your Honours, if you send me away now, I shall go dismayed and broken hearted, to leave my poor Master in his distressed Condition. He has commanded me to acquaint your Honours, that he has reared the bravest Sailors you have, who are perhaps this Minute engaged in Battle against your Enemies, besides having a Number of his Scholars in the Merchants Service, that he is almost wore out in the Service of his Country, together with Sickness and Affliction; these Services, he desired me to say, your Honours are acquainted with, and humbly beseeches you to continue the School to him, and to permit me to be Usher under him, and if I am so happy, as to be thought qualified by your Honours, you may rely upon my Diligence, to use my utmost Endeavours in forming the Manners of the Youths committed to my Care, virtuously and religiously, which I know nothing can be more pleasing to your Honours.

William after this Speech, was ordered to withdraw; he went directly and gave an Account to his Master and Mistress of what he had said to the Governors, but that he could not tell what Effects it might have upon them.

Governors

Governors of these Schools are always reputed virtuous rich Men, and generally at their Demise leave handsome Legacies to those useful Seminars.

William was now called in to them again and the President told him, that they had taken into consideration Mr. *Landers's* Case, and were very sorry his Necessities were so great; but added, that they were chiefly brought upon him by his Son, that ought to have been hanged seven Years ago, that the Publick were greatly concerned in the due Regulations of these Schools. And as for him, who was a promising hopeful Youth, he ought to lose no time. These weighty Reasons made them of Opinion, that the School should be given to another, and he to be provided for otherways.

Upon this Judgment, *William* appeared greatly dejected, and sorrowfully said to the Gentlemen, I am greatly disappointed. The President asked him, what he was disappointed in, saying, did we promise to grant your Request? No, please your Honours, says he, but last Night my afflicted Master, after he instructed me what to say to your Honours, I was dubious of my Endeavours, and advised him to pray for my Success, which I am sure he did; and as to myself I prayed with all the Fervour possible to God, to inspire your Hearts with Pity, for your old and virtuous Servant, and I relied upon it. I thank your Honours, for the Regard you have for my Time; a Year or two in all Probability will set my Master above all human Requests, which Time I can never lay out more virtuously, than in succouring him who always loved me; if God should bless me with a long Life, that short Time will be but a small Offering to him that has taken such Care of me.

The

The Governors seemed affected by his good Nature and Gratitude, when *William*, as if he had known his Men, artfully addressed them, saying, your Honours used to hear me sing, I now request Leave to give you a Psalm or two, which they indulged him in, and he happily chose out of *David*, the most applicable Verses for his Purpose, to this Assembly, who were great Lovers of Church Musick. The Power of Harmony is effectual upon Minds suspended between Mercy and Justice, and soon gives the Ballance to the former. In short, his Voice was so melodious, that they really seemed charmed with him.

Upon this, the President said, *Billy*, you know our Weakness too well, and has attacked it, therefore withdraw. In a few Minutes he was called in again, and told, that his firm Reliance upon his Creator, and telling them the simple Truth, which they had no Reason to doubt, from every Step of his Conduct was what had moved them to compassionate his Master's present Circumstances, and that they determined the School should continue as it was, till Cause to the contrary appeared, desiring him to tell the Candidates their Resolutions, and that they need not apply any more, till they saw it advertised again, and when you have done this return to us.

He immediately informed Mr. *Landers* of his Success, dispatched away those Solicitors for his Place, and then returned to the Governors. The President gave him twenty Guineas, saying, this is a Contribution of our own for you, and must be laid out in Changes of Clothes, that you may appear more respectable among the Boys, for we believe you would serve your Master if he gave you no Clothes for seven Years; let your grateful Returns to us be shewn only in the Continuance of your Care, and the Love and Honour of God, which will continue this Assembly your Friends. Now

William

William give us Britons strike home ; after he had sung it, and two or three other favourite Songs, they broke up.

None was more rejoiced at the Proceedings of this Day than *William*, who was embraced by Mr. and Mrs. *Landers* as their Guardian Angel ; notwithstanding the Love they had for him, and that their very Existence in a great measure depended upon him, which he knew, he never assumed more than formerly, and his greatest Pleasure now seemed to be to have Mr. *Landers* in an armed Chair in the School with him.

The Pain and Uneasiness of his Disorder greatly abating, he was seldom easy out of the sight of his beloved *William*, but would be seated on a high Chair, like an old august Monarch in the midst of his Subjects, with his faithful Prime Minister, *William*, close by him.

In this Manner they went on for three or four Months, when his Son broke open a Trunk and took out of it seven Pounds, that was to support the Boys a few Days, which greatly distressed them, and reduced them to the Necessity of pawning some of *William*'s Clothes and other Things to make up the Money.

As this wicked Son was but a low and petty Thief, I shall only observe, that the seven Pounds did not last him a Week, for before that Time elapsed he was committed to *Newgate* for stealing Linen, and soon after transported, but died in his Passage, to the great Comfort of his Father and Mother, as he was entirely incorrigible.

William would hear of no Wages from his Master, only desiring that he would provide for him as he thought proper, never telling him he wanted any thing. To do Mr. *Landers* Justice, he required no Hints that way, being himself always early enough.

In about seven Months the President came to Mr. *Landers*, who was now pretty free from Pain but very weak, and ordered those that were with him to withdraw. He then advised him to prepare one or two of the Boys under him for the same Purpose he had *William*, saying, he could not in Justice be left longer with him, though he did not doubt but it would be a great Uneasiness to part with him, yet the Boy's Interest must be consulted. He thanked his Honour for his extraordinary Indulgence to take another in his room; and after he was gone, with infinite Grief and Concern told *William* of it, who replied, Thank God, you can bear our Separation now better than before, and wherever they send me I will correspond with you if I can, but let me not now lose a Minute that may be of Service to you, to find among the Boys one that may suit your Purpose; they both fixed upon one that *William* had surprisingly fitted for the intended Use.

In thirteen Months after the first of his Illness, Mr. *Landers* found himself Master of forty Pounds, out of Debt, and in a fairer way than ever of saving Money.

William was now entering his fifteenth Year, and expected to hear something new in relation to himself.

At the next monthly Meeting his Clothes made him appear a lovely Youth. When the Gentlemen met, they all returned him Thanks for being the Cause of keeping Mr. *Landers*, who with Assistance was able to mind the School, and that they had so deep a Sense of his Virtue, Gratitude, and Loss of Time in discharging the Trust reposed in him, they would not put him quite upon the footing of other Boys, but would themselves contribute to help him in any Business he had an Inclination to follow. He modestly replied, that he did

did not know what Business to chuse, that he had never experienced any Persons Friendship but their Honours and his Master's, and that he now humbly requested they would advise him what to take to. Are you satisfied, says the President, to write for me at home? I am willing, says *William*, with Joy appearing in every Look, to do any thing in my Power to serve your Honour. You will see me no more as one of your Governors here, says the President, at home I am only a Merchant, and have no other than the common Appellation of Sir; I have no farther Commands for you at present till I see you To-morrow at my House.

The Gentlemen all smiled at the President's Conversation with *William*; he desired to know their Reasons; they told him, they imagined he had a Mind to take the Lad to himself, and that each of them had the same Inclination. *William* was at this time gone from them, but was called in again by the President's Orders, and generously addressed them, saying, Here is the Boy, I foresee by his Morals he will make any Master happy who gets him, and I know nothing that contributes more to our Ease and Fortune than faithful Servants; I am sure he will be one, and I will be Bail for his Integrity to any of you that pleases to take him. *William*, I release you from your Promise of coming to me To-morrow; every Gentleman here has a Mind for you, and no Compliment must be paid to me on account of my being President, which is an Honour the present Company have bestowed upon me, each Gentleman here being as worthy of the Honour of it as myself.

They all agreed that he acted both with Justice and Discretion; then the Question was put who should have him, and how to determine it, some proposed to cast Lots for him, but the President declared against it, as it would look like Slavery, adding,

adding, that it was proper to let him have the Liberty intended by the Constitution, and what the School intitled him to, which was, to chuse for himself.

This Propofal was generally agreed to, on Condition that each Gentleman should first converse with him in private, after which he was to take hold of the Gentleman's Skirts he intended to live with and bow to him.

'Tis observable, there was scarce a Man among them who would have taken five hundred Pounds Apprentice Fee with a Gentleman's Son, and it is probable those in a low, groveling way of Trade, cannot think there is so great a Difference in the Value of Boys; but those are Gentlemen who live like Princes by Trade and Commerce, understand the Interests of the Kingdoms, States, and Empires of the World, as well as those bred at *Versailles* or St. *James's*, and upon many Occasions in the Secrets of a Ministry. The greatest Officers of State under the Crown are in Danger if declared against by the first Citizens of *London*, their Example being commonly followed by the rest, and afterwards by all the Cities and Towns in *England*; nor will they stir upon the most trifling Affair until they know how their Brethren in *London* are affected.

Judge then what must be thought of this Boy, when Men so considerable disputed who should have him; be not surprized that they who understood the Value of human Minds so well, and eclipsed the World in Trade, should vie with each other to gain so promising a Genius; but I am afraid there are few such Men as these now, who would give this Lad five Pounds a Year extraordinary Wages, did they even know his Disposition.

The

The usual Fee given with these Boys is twenty or thirty Pounds; there is no taking of one from these Schools but to make an Apprentice of him, and when out of his Time he may dispose of himself as he pleases.

I don't know a second Instance of any of these Children getting into so high a Service in the Beginning; but had *William* been actuated by the Quintessence of Policy, he could not have captivated these Gentlemen more effectually than by relieving the Woman who broke her Eggs. His strict Adherence to his Master, and regular Behaviour all the time of his being at that School, shews that Virtue will make its own way, and will be rewarded when it is least expected. However, there was none of these Gentlemen loved him to that excessive Folly as to lose an Apprentice Fee for him, but they really thought him worth the Money.

William was now spoke to in private by each of the Gentlemen, and then ordered to fix upon his Master. He first made his Conditions, that as he could chuse but one, he beseeched the rest not to take it ill of him, which they all upon Honour promised; he likewise requested that none of them should ever reveal the Offers they made him, and that nothing should enhance his Value to the Master he chose but his future Services, to which they also agreed; he then said, My Love for this Gentleman, taking hold of the President's Skirts, points him out to me, though he did not promise me any thing. The President never seem'd better pleased, and the Gentlemen wished him Joy.

He bid *William* go and dispose of himself as he pleased that Day, and to be with him the next, which he assured him he would.

The Master *William* had fixed upon greatly rejoiced Mr. and Mrs. *Landers*, who advised him, like a Father and Mother, still to be thankful to God for every Thing, and not to pride himself upon his own Merit; particularly his old Master often told him, God is now rewarding you, Child, for the Care you took of me, this is but the Beginning, but if you keep stedfast to your Principles you will rise to Fortune and Preferment. My Dear, says *Landers* to his Wife, put twenty Guineas into your Pocket, and take *William* out with you, and bring him home to me dressed as you know he ought to be, my Child must not go bare among Gentlemen whilst I have Money locked up. You must excuse me, Sir, says *William*, I have now got another Master, and dare not receive any thing of Consequence from you without consulting him; but I expect a Present from you infinitely more valuable to me, that is, both your Blessings and Remembrance of me in your Prayers, that I may behave dutifully to my Master, and keep my Heart in the Fear and Love of God; in the next Place, I request you may both give me Leave to look upon you as my natural Father and Mother, likewise to share with you in your Adversity and Prosperity; and as my Master knows I love you as my Parents, I hope he will indulge me so far as to let me come and see you when I can be spared from his Service. My Dear, says Mr. *Landers*, I have looked upon you for some time past as my own Child, and as an only one you shall be used by us; we have already agreed that whatever we leave behind us, when our Funeral Expences are paid, shall be yours; and in the mean time I desire you would take what your Occasions may require, as I would have you better dressed. *William* replied, Sir, you know my Master is a Man of Sense and Goodness, he saw my present Dress, which he knew to be

U

my

my best, but gave no Orders to have it changed, which makes me think he had some Reason for this Conduct, and if so it would be unwise and cruel in me to disappoint his Intentions, though I may not be blameable for so doing. I think, Sir, with Submission to you, as I gained your Love and Esteem, it would be prudent in me to pursue the same Methods with him, which will be the only way to confirm him my Friend. I never told you I wanted any thing, yet you were always profuse upon me; nor shall I let him know any of my Necessities till he takes Notice of them, and as I look upon him to be a Judge of those Affairs, I shall endeavour to dress myself agreeable to his Direction, and make it a Merit never to disoblige him, except occasioned by Ignorance; but I would wish to go as clean to him as possible. You shall, my Dear, put on one of my *Sunday* Shirts, and take another in your Pocket, says Mr. *Landers*. I am greatly obliged to you, says he, for any thing of yours that will fit me, but insist you are at no other Expence. *William* after this went to making Pens for Mr. *Landers* till he had compleated a good Stock for him.

The next Morning he washed himself, and put on clean Things from Head to Foot; after getting many Blessings and half a Crown in his Pocket, he left them all in Tears, and went to Mr. *Freeman* his Master. He was so ignorant that when he came to the House he did not know whether it was proper for him to knock at the Door; hesitating a little, he determined to hover opposite the Windows till his Master came out, or till he saw some of the Servants who used to attend him at the School. His Master presently saw him from a Window, and calling a Footman, who knew him, said, There is *William* in the Street, who I believe is afraid to knock at the Door, go and bring him

him in; accordingly the Footman went, and introduced him into a noble House in *Broad-street* near *Moorfields*, but he was extremely shy of every Person he saw till he came to his Master, who said to him, *William*, you ought to have knocked at the Door, you should not be so timorous whilst you are honest; you must get new Clothes To-day or To-morrow, for I shall not desire you to do any Business till you are acquainted with the Family; I have here your Indentures ready drawn, pray read them; he accordingly did, and sign'd them in the Presence of some Witnesses. Mr. *Freeman* asked him to whom he would give them to keep; he replied, that he thought no Person so proper as himself. What Breakfast, says his Master, do you like? He told him Bread and Milk, as he had been always used to it. He then desired he might have something to do, as he could not but appear very awkward among Strangers. I will give you enough to do in proper Time, says his Master, but you must go out To-day with the Person I shall appoint to get you Clothes. He accordingly went with the Person his Master had ordered, who paid out fifteen Pounds upon him before three o'Clock, and brought him home as well dressed as any Clerk need be in a plain Suit of Clothes.

For the better understanding of his History hereafter, I think it necessary to give you some Account of this Family.

Mr. *Freeman* was about forty Years of Age, and his Wife near the same; his Children were two Daughters, one about eighteen the other nineteen Years old; he had two Clerks, one of which had above an hundred thousand Pounds to receive when out of his Time, the other had nothing but the Merchants Service to rely upon. Never was Man in Trade more distressed by the Neglect of his Clerks, who did not answer his Correspondents.

dents regularly, and though he had made many Changes, yet he still suffered. His Business almost exceeded that of a Secretary of State, the Postage of his Letters some Mails declining to ten Pounds, which Sum may be thought incredible by Persons who are unacquainted with an extensive Trade.

William wrote a fine Hand, and understood the Theory of Accounts better than any Clerk he had ever employed, and when these Mails arrived, he would frequently take up their Time a whole Week to answer his Advices, and they would often impose upon him by telling him they were all answered, when they had omitted a great many. To train up *William* to this essential Part of Intelligence was his first Care, which Mr. *Freeman* did himself, by laying old Letters before him of no great Signification, and directing him to write Answers to them.

When he was with Mr. *Landers*, he used to write Letters, by his Permission, for those who could not do it themselves, in which he used to introduce many pedantic Flourishes, which were very pleasing to those who employed him, but he was told by his Master that he must carefully avoid them, as no way requisite in Trade, which was a little Disappointment to his flowing Genius. He was as desirous to learn as any Apprentice in London, and took it so fast that it delighted Mr. *Freeman* to spend an Hour or two every Day to instruct him.

In four Months time he fitted him for this Party which is generally the last with other Clerks, because without a Knowledge of Trade they don't know what Answers to give.

William being thoroughly acquainted with the Business in two Years, saved his Master a great deal of Trouble; his Correspondents were so pleas-

fed, that they severally requested to be answered by his Clerk *William*. He was so intent to enrich his Master and to make him happy, that when a large Parcel of Letters came in he would sit up Day and Night answering his Advices, till actually taken out of the Room by his Master and forced to Bed, where he would often be heard talking when asleep of his Business; Victuals would even seem tasteless to him when in a Hurry, tho' he eat at the Table he wrote, and if not brought to him, would faint before he would call for any.

Mr. *Freeman* one Day, by Chance, discovered that he was forgot both at Breakfast and Dinner, occasioned by the Number of Servants, who severally pleaded as Excuse that they thought he had been served by one or other of them, but happen'd to be neglected by all; he was never known to be in a greater Passion with all his Family than upon this Account, Part of which fell upon *William*, to whom he came in the Height of it, and said, Sir, you use me very ill thus to starve yourself in my House, it is what I will not suffer.

Poor *William*, who had been up a Night and two Days, dispatching Business to the utmost of his Ability, having in that time wrote an incredible Number of Letters, was frightened and astonished at his Master's Behaviour, and standing up in the greatest Confusion, said to him, Don't seem displeased with me, Sir, if you do, it is worse than Death to me. Mr. *Freeman* could no longer contain himself from so dear and valuable an Apprentice, but taking him in his Arms, said, Dear *William*, I was only angry with you for suffering the Servants to neglect you; I understand you have not broke your Fast To-day, what shall we do with you? When there is a Glut of Business you cannot go to your regular Meals, and their Carelessness will let you perish unknown to me, and

that by your own Indifference. I am persuaded you value me, if you do, it shews no Discretion in you to give me Uneasiness, which it certainly must when I see you neglect yourself. I am fully sensible, by your indefatigable Care and Capacity, that you have within these two Years happily retrieved my Affairs, which were, by the Faults of other Clerks, confounded and perplexed, therefore go smoothly on in your Method and Application. From these Reasons, you may judge the Esteem I ought to have for one who has so greatly contributed to my Ease and Fortune, admit I had neither Love nor Gratitude in me. How will the Loss of you affect me, which must be the Case if you fast too long and write Night and Day without proper Refreshment, it will certainly bring on such Disorders as may endanger your Life. Your Time, continued he, will be out in less than five Years, the Thoughts of the want of you then, though at a Distance so remote, is, I assure you, an Affliction to me. Don't be uneasy, replied *William*, about my leaving you, for I will indent with you for Life, without any other Consideration but the Pleasure of serving you. Say no more, my dear *William*, says Mr. *Freeman*, your Goodness and Excellence quite overcomes me; he then called for something for him to eat, and stay'd with him till he had made a comfortable Meal; but as to his other Clerks, they were an Incumbrance rather than a Help to him.

William having sometimes a little Leisure, employed it in learning *French* and reading *Lilly's Grammar*; his Master too, when Business was not very urgent, indulged him to dine at his own Table with his other Clerks, and often ordered him to meet him at a Coffee-house, the *Exchange*, or a Tavern of an Afternoon, the better to give him an Opportunity of knowing Trade and seeing the World,

of which he was extremely observant: He would at these convenient Times often visit his dear old Master and Mistress, who were now growing very rich; they would tell him all they had was for him, and that they loved him more than all the World.

He was always kept genteelly dressed by Mr. *Freeman*, who allowed him now thirty Pounds a Year, which he was no way accountable for. Never was Family more sensible of the Value and Worth of any Person than Mr. *Freeman's* was of *William*, now eighteen Years of Age.

His Master attended the School from whence he took him, as usual, where being asked by one of his Brethren how he liked his Apprentice *William*, replied, I declare, upon my Word, that my Fortune is now twenty thousand Pounds better than the Day he came to me, which I attribute solely to his Care and Assiduity, and the Happiness and Comfort I enjoy by his Means is worth ten times more to me. There is something I know in relation to him, says the Gentleman, and it is a Pity to conceal it from you; and calling him aside told him, that *Swash*, the *Jew*, had offer'd *William* eight hundred Guineas ready Money to betray some of his Correspondents Letters to him, but that he had rejected it; this was near fourteen Months ago, at the time the *Algerines* took your Ship, said to be worth thirty thousand Pounds; *Freeman* you were then in Danger, but we may now speak of it freely, as I know all is over; and I think your Boy is an Angel for thus managing the *Jew*, not only in refusing his Bribe, but at the same time declaring you were as safe, for what you owed, as the Bank of *England*, notwithstanding the Loss of that Ship; your other Clerks were applied to, and I believe might have been worked upon, but *William* had the Letters safe in his Custody, and you

had, in a short time after, the good Fortune to ransom your Ship for less than a sixth Part of its Value.

You surprize me, says Mr. *Freeman*, for there was at that time a Demand of forty thousand Pounds upon me from *Aleppo*, and though I was worth considerably more than would have paid my Debts, yet it would certainly have greatly embarrassed me; but there is now a Ballance of twenty thousand Pounds due to me from thence: *William*, I assure you, never told me of it, which I admire at. The Gentleman replied, Don't wonder at it, for he was enjoined to Secresy, and served you better without your Knowledge; I will tell you this Evening more particularly of the Affair, and how I happened to know it, but desire you will not mention it to him till I am present, which was agreed upon.

William coming to his Master upon some Business to the School, all the Gentlemen present were glad to see him. After paying his proper Respects to Mr. and Mrs. *Landers*, he was taken home by his Master in his Coach, who made him a Present of five State Lottery Tickets, which cost upwards of fifty Pounds.

The Gentleman that had spoke of the Bribe, offered to *William* by *Swash*, came to Mr. *Freeman*'s this Afternoon, and when together he asked him how he managed the *Jew*; *William* did not care to answer the Question till his Master spoke to him, and told him he knew the Affair, but was surpriz'd he had kept it a Secret from him. Sir, says he, to be sure I was greatly to blame, but I wish I could have kept it for ever from your Knowledge, as my Reasons for concealing it related more immediately to me than yourself; but I used my utmost Endeavours to serve you effectually with all the Faith and Integrity I was Master of, and am sorry you

now

now oblige me to tell it you. Let me hear it before my Friend, says Mr. *Freeman*; upon which he proceeded thus.

Mr. *Pride*, your Clerk, had no less than a Design to ruin you, that he might fall into all your Trade and Business, this I inferred from his Insinuations to Mr. *Swash*, who had greater Demands upon you than all the World besides; he got the other Clerk to join him in it, and prevailed upon me to go to the *Boar's-head* in *Cannon-street*, where Mr. *Swash* met us, and offered me eight hundred Guineas to let him see how your Accounts stood; when they thought themselves sure of me, they declared to him that your Affairs were quite desperate, which I believe they took Pains to make so; I seemed to wish for the Money, and brought by Degrees a Number of favourable Letters to them, but concealed those of any dangerous Consequence; they asked me for Letters from some particular Correspondents, which I had, but denied it to them, and promised as soon as they came to my Hands they should have the Perusal of them; I thus amused them till your Ship was released, which I expected soon would be done, and when your Affairs were safe, I spoke with more Freedom to Mr. *Swash*, in the Presence of your Clerks, saying, it was a Shame for a Gentleman to endeavour to corrupt me as he attempted, and that you were as solvent as the Bank of *England* for what you owed; then addressing myself to the Clerks, told them that they had acted basely and treacherously to you, who was the best of Men, thus to endeavour to ruin you by declaring you insolvent; they were both attacking me when that worthy Gentleman came in, whom I knew to have a Friendship for you equal to a Brother; I told him the Affair from the Beginning, and he promised, which I believe he would perform, that if *Swash* stirred against

against you he would, with his whole Fortune, if requisite, defend your Credit; the Money I was to get, I believe, was the Property of Mr. *Pride* the Clerk. When that Gentleman had composed them a little, they seemed to be conscious of their Villainy, and importuned me to keep it secret; Mr. *Pride* offered me a Present of three hundred Guineas to do it, which I refused, but your Friend desiring me to say nothing of the Matter, I agreed upon Condition that they quitted your House and Service, which they promised to comply with, but afterwards behaved in such a Manner as made you glad to part with them, which I advised you to do. Sir, pray resent it not now, but thank God for your Deliverance and happy Circumstances, which I declare, to my own certain Knowledge, are considerably better than seventy thousand Pounds, after paying all Demands, together with as fine a Trade as any *Turkey* Merchant can have; and further, I can assure you, that at these Meetings I never absented half an Hour.

I mistrusted them Fellows, says Mr. *Freeman*, and that was the Reason I stopped my Letters from being read by them; and I am perswaded if they had had the Conduct of my Affairs six Months longer I should have been ruined by them. You certainly would, replied the Gentleman, in half the time.

All the Fortune I have, says Mr. *Freeman*, the very Bread my Family eats, *William*, we are obliged to you for. He replied, I never intended, as the Danger was over, that you should ever hear of it, and indeed, Sir, I think I did no more than any honest Servant ought to do.

Mr. *Freeman* says to his Friend, I think it would be adviseable to have these Villains prosecuted for assaulting my Apprentice; in my Opinion they ought to be exposed. If they are, replied the Gentleman, I can prove enough of the Affair to con-

vict

vict them. Honour'd Master, says *William*, you and I were out of their Power, when I gave them my Word, in the Presence of God, if they left you I would never appear against them; I love you, Sir, because I think your Example, if well imitated, is the Standard of Virtue and Truth; your Conquest is complete over them, they are in Confusion by Disappointment, you are in Affluence and Happiness, all which Blessings I have a full Share of by the Pleasure I take in helping you to acquire them, which Happiness I never more can enjoy if you oblige me to break my Word so solemnly given: It is certain, if you insist upon it I must comply, and will afterwards continue dutifully to serve you to the utmost of my Power, but I beseech you not to urge it, and let my Heart be your Servant as well as my Hands. I did not, says Mr. *Freeman*, mean to do it against your Will. So the Affair subsided here, though Mr. *Freeman* and his Friend had a great Inclination to carry on the Prosecution, but his austere Virtue prevented it.

It may be remarked by some, that for one in his Condition he presumed too much, but I shall answer such Objections, and lay Virtue for a little aside.

William's Merits in the mercantile way were well known and admired, and it is certain that he, or any other Clerk in a *Turkey* Merchant's Service, if they act with Diligence and Integrity, generally make their Fortunes, if not worth a Shilling, before they are out of their Time; and in this Case, the Master has a greater Dependance upon his Servant than the Servant upon him; but, with my Consent, none shall judge of *William* but the Virtuous.

Mr. *Freeman* was now so charmed with his Apprenticeship that he could not well bear being out of his Company; he would sit with him in the Compting-house

ting-house and help him to dispatch the Business; and what was more extraordinary, though a Man of Spirit, Sense, and Fortune, he feared him as much as he loved him.

When the Vicious read this they may say he acted like a Fool; the Reason is, it is not in their Power to account for it; but I am now going to mention an Affair that will create a little Respect for him among them, tho' they never get a Shilling by him.

He was one Day very busy in the Compting-House, when about one o'Clock his Master came to him, and wished him Joy; he desired to know of what? One of your Tickets, says he, was drawn this Day at a Quarter past Twelve o'Clock, a Prize of five thousand Pounds. *William* first returned Thanks to his Creator and then to his Master, saying, this I believe is Payment for the Half Crown I gave the poor Woman to buy more Eggs with; *Mr. Freeman* replied, it is so, and you will as certainly be repaid for the good Services you have done both old *Landers* and myself. Indeed, Sir, says he, I believe it, and am sorry for it, because the certainty of a Return in a great Measure lessens the Merit of the Action. I hope you will allow, replied *Mr. Freeman*, there are no Gratifications like it; I grant you that, said he, for generally when we do a good Action we have such an inward Satisfaction and Comfort in Mind, that it sufficiently repays us. However, I shall do what is customary upon those Occasions, but must desire your Advice in it; that is, how to order a handsome Entertainment, and who to have to partake of it, as I have no Friends but those of your Election, I propose, added he, to have what is very genteel. *Mr. Freeman* approving of his Notion, *William* put him in mind, that in three Days there was to be a Meeting of the Governors at the School,

School, and that it would indulge his Inclinations greatly to dine in the State Room, where all his worthy Friends would be assembled; adding, he would entertain at the same time, his Master, Mistress, and all the Boys of the School, and that as he was so good as to take the Trouble of it upon himself not to be sparing, as it was the first Dinner he ever paid for.

Mr. *Freeman* replied, your Request shall in every Respect be complied with, the Boys, together with old *Landers* and his Wife shall want for nothing; and to shew you the Value I have for you, I shall engage some particular Friends upon Change this Day to dine with us there.

But *William*, says Mr. *Freeman*, how do you intend to dispose of your Money? Sir, says he, if you have Occasion for it, pray employ it in Trade, or keep it till you want it; you know, says his Master, I have no Occasion for it, nor will I upon any Account be concerned with it; then I will keep it in the Stocks where it is, says he, for they are now high, and will bring me in at least two hundred a Year.

He then desired *William* to go with him to Change, but he begged to be excused, saying, he had a great deal to do, and could have no manner of Enjoyment till his Business was finished. 'Tis observable, that he was now more remarkably humble, if possible, to his Master, after getting this Prize than before.

The Day appointed for the Meeting at the School being come, *William* went with Mr. *Freeman*, where he found his dear Master, his Mistress, and all the Boys dressed, as if prepared for a high Festival. He first presented his Master and Mistress with each a Gold Watch, caressing them most affectionately. To all the Boys whom Mr. *Landers* informed him merited Praise, he gave Presents

Presents to, telling them, that he was a late Instance how Boys, minding their Duty, and adhering to the Principles of Virtue would be rewarded, which publick Admonition greatly contributed to the future greatness of some of those forlorn Orphans.

Never was a select Company of Friends better pleased with the Giver of a Feast; there was not a Man in lower Circumstances than his Master, the President, among them, yet I believe, tho' their Riches were so great, they would have been glad to have changed their Condition, if possible, for *William's* intrinsic Perfection of Mind.

The chearful Bottle and *William's* melodious Voice made all harmonious here; by Wine Friendships are often contracted, and by it are occasioned sometimes such Breaches between the best of Friends as are seldom forgot after, which was *William's* Case upon this Occasion.

In the midst of a Song which seemed in particular to charm the Company, a Gentleman interrupted him, and would not permit him to go on with it, by suddenly standing up as well as he could, and telling him, he wanted to speak to him; the Company having a Value for him, attributed this Rudeness to his Drink. *William* assisted him by the Arm till they were retired, and then the Gentleman took him by the Hand, and said to him, I know and so do you that Miss *Nancy Freeman*, your Master's Daughter, is in Love with you; she is older than you some Years to my Knowledge, nor is he able to spare a Fortune out of Trade for you; he is both a proud Man, and always has lived as high as his Means would permit him; I have a Girl ready for you, and ten thousand Pounds at your Service; let us live together, my Boy, and by G---d, you shall go to Bed every Night drunk.

Sir,

Sir, I am an Apprentice, says he, and cannot marry without my Master's Consent, till my Time is expired; but I thank you for the great Honour you proposed to me.

As to Miss *Freeman*, I assure you, Sir, I believe you mistake what you said in Respect to her, for I never perceived any thing like it. I know better, replies he, but I shall speak to you another time about it.

The Company impatiently calling them, they returned; and *William* being somewhat perplexed, they presently broke up. As they were going home in the Coach, Mr. *Freeman* asked him, what Business Mr. *Doncree* had with him in private; he replied evasively, saying, he was drunk, and that he could scarcely understand what he said; Mr. *Freeman* replied, he is generally so, and notwithstanding does Business with more Art and Success than any other Man I know, so I desire you would tell me what he said, for he never called a Man aside drunk or sober, that he had not some Design upon. Pray tell me, did he mention my Name to you? Sir, says *William*, I beseech you don't insist upon it, for he embarrassed me so oddly, that I cannot mention it, and you know there is nothing more severe, than that a drunken Man's Words should affect a sober Person, or make him accountable for what he says. There is nothing more common, says Mr. *Freeman*, but if you will not be communicative to me as a Friend, I insist upon your telling me, as your Master I have a Right to know your Secrets.

Sir, replied *William*, the Malignity and Poison of his Tongue was such, as were I to repeat it to you, I should for ever lose your Friendship, which has made me so happy, tho' he said nothing base or indifferent of you, and I believe will forget it all

all by To-morrow. Let it be what it will, says Mr. *Freeman*, I give you my Word, I will not be displeased with you, so let me know at once; as you have given me your Promise, says *William*, not to be displeased, I will inform you; after we went aside, he told me your Daughter, Miss *Nancy*, was in love with me, and that you were not able to spare a Fortune out of Trade for her; then invited me to his own Daughter, saying he would give me ten thousand Pounds with her; I replied, that as I was an Apprentice, I could not marry, and that Miss *Nancy*, I was sure, had not the least Regard, but perfectly indifferent about me, which I declare to the best of my Knowledge is true. His Daughters are his Baits to gain his Ends, says Mr. *Freeman*, which he often accomplishes by their Means; he has invited twenty to my Knowledge to court them, till his Business was done, and then shook them off; and his Design in speaking of my Daughter to you in the Manner he did, was to oblige you to Secrecy; I am persuaded his Intentions were only to separate us; but did he say he would speak to you any more of it? *William*, replied, he did, Sir, but I believe he will forget it by To-morrow; depend upon it, says Mr. *Freeman*, he will speak to you of it again when drunk.

They presently got home, but what Mr. *Doncree* had said to *William* in Respect to Miss *Nancy*, he could not get out of his Head, for recollecting her frequent Desires to hear him sing, and obeying her Father so carefully, when desired to see that he was not neglected by the Servants, and coming ten Times a Day to look if they did their Duty, by laying what was good and sufficient before him, these Circumstances, together with the Assertions of a drunken Man, who knew very little of her,

were

were but trivial Matters to make him believe it, for *William* was very easy as to any Thoughts of Womankind.

About this Time died Mrs. *Freeman* of a lingering Disorder, soon after which, his Master got two honest Clerks under him, to facilitate the Business, that he might enjoy his Liberty the more, and as he kept a Horse, might indulge himself now and then in the Country.

He was now twenty Years of Age, with a Mind uncorrupted by the Follies of the World, when Mr. *Freeman* ordered him to make an Estimate of all he was worth, which he did very exactly, and his Fortune amounted to eighty two thousand Pounds, having lived for Years past very genteelly. He settled fifteen thousand Pounds upon each of his Daughters, for marriage Portions, which were positively put out of his own Power, provided they married with his Consent, declaring he was determined to marry very soon himself, but first did this to secure them both.

He soon after paid his Respects to a very beautiful young Lady, who had not two thousand Pounds Fortune; he was well acquainted with her in London, but she retired to her Father's, a snug Farmer in *Huntingdonshire*. After this, settling all his Affairs at home, he took *William*, and one servant with him, and went to wait upon her in the Country, where he was expected by her Parents. On the Road, Mr. *Freeman* was robbed of all the Money he had, in the Presence of *William* and his Servant, by a single Highwayman. *William* saved thirty seven Guineas in a side Pocket, which he told Mr. *Freeman* of, who lost it.

In two Hours after this Disaster, he had the Pleasure of paying his Respects to the young Lady, who introduced him to her Parents, who appeared greatly rejoiced at such a Match. Mr. *Freeman* told them of the Robbery, but *William* in his own Vindication said, that he had no Fire-arms, tho' the Servant had, and for the Future he would never ride without them.

Mr. *Stennis*, which was the Farmer's Name, repeated to them several frightful Stories of a Gang of House-breakers, Murderers and Robbers, that infested the Country, and believed it was some of them that had attacked him.

Notwithstanding the Solitude of the Place, Mr. *Freeman* was never observed to be more chearful than here, when in Company with this charming young Lady, to whom he was to be married in a few Days, and used to sit up late with her and her Sister.

The fifth Night of their being there, about twelve o'Clock, the Street Door was instantly knocked in with Sledges, without the least Alarm given before, and immediately after rushed in five armed and masked Ruffians, where Mr. *Freeman* and the young Ladies were, who made an Out-cry of Murder, but were silenced by being knocked down. This dreadful Uproar alarmed the House, and particularly *William*, who lay near the Parlour where they were; he instantly got up, suspecting the Cause from what he had heard, and half dressed put all the Gold and Silver he had into a loose Paper, and with a Case of Pistols and a Hangar, which the Servant rode with, came out and scattered the Money among them, which they eagerly grappling at, he instantly shot two of them, and ran three of them thorough the Body, besides wounding the sixth, who got off. He then put

ting out all the Lights, the rest of the Family crept into Holes, and other recluse Places in the House to conceal themselves, till he called to them all to come to the Parlour, but to bring no Lights, saying, that he desired to speak to them. The House was still besieged by the Robbers, who would not venture in tho' the Street Door was open.

By this Time, Mr. *Stennis* and his Servants joined him in the Parlour, where they could scarcely stir for the dead and wounded Bodies who lay on the Floor, among whom was Mr. *Freeman* weltering in his Blood. *William* knew him by his Voice, and had him taken up and laid in the Bed he had just got out of. The young Ladies when they recovered their Fright a little, cram'd themselves into a Corner, hoping the Darknefs would conceal them, whilst the Danger continued; but had *William* staid ten Minutes longer they would in all Probability have been ravished, but they were happily rescued in time. When they heard their Father's Voice and *William's*, and understood there was a Probability of their being safe, they as well as they could in the Dark, found their Way to them, and were by *William's* Directions sent both into the same Room where Mr. *Freeman* was. There being a continual Firing at the Windows by those without, *William* desired Silence within. One of the wounded Robbers recovering his Spirits so as to be able to sit up, which Mr. *Stennis's* Servant felt, *William* bid the Servant take Care of him, which he did by stabbing him with a Knife, upon which he groaned as if in the Agonies of Death.

William kept a strict Watch at the Windows, and could sometimes see a few of those without, but they could not possibly see him; watching narrowly for some time, he thought he perceived one

of them come very close to the Window, and instantly firing his Pistol shot him, which they were all sensible of, by hearing him cry out, he was killed.

After this they neither saw nor heard any thing of them till break of Day. Inconceivable was the Horror of Blood and Slaughter on the Parlour Floor the Morning's Light presented to their View. The Man he last shot without, was agonizing in the Pangs of Death, within six Foot of where he fell.

Mr. *Freeman* was cruelly wounded in the Shoulder and Throat, which they thought they had cut, as it afterwards appeared. He was attended by the best Surgeons that could be provided for him, and the whole Country came this Day to see the Havock *William* had made among this dreadful Gang, who soon after apprehended the rest of them.

I confess the Improbability for one Man to do so much Execution against such Numbers, therefore it is incumbent upon me to give my Authority for this Fact, which happened in the Reign of Queen *Anne*. *William* was alive within these seven Years past, for I saw him, and I hope he is still so.

This is recorded of him in the School he was bred in, where they always register their Heroes, and Prints were struck of him, to commemorate his Gallantry.

Nor is this Affair more extraordinary, than what was performed by a poor simple Country Boy, not fifteen Years old, within these sixteen Years in the County of *Galway*. Pardon me for this Digression, as it is a little similar to my Story, and am sorry I have not the Boy's Name to do him the more Honour, but to the best of my Information he was

Servant

Servant to a Farmer in easy Circumstances, whose House was broke open by a cruel Gang oof Robbers, who would have murdered all they met. Firing first against the Windows, it alarmed the Family, and made them extinguish their Lights; the Thieves afterwards broke in, and seized all the Persons they found, torturing them extremely, to oblige them to discover where their Money and valuable Effects were.

Among their wretched Captives they took the Mistress of the House, and was dragging her to the Kitchen Fire to lay her on it, in hopes to extort a full Confession from her. Whilst they were lighting a Candle in order to commit their Murders and Rapine with the more Regularity, and having the Mistress close down at the Fire, a Boy being unobserved in a Hole near them, at this juncture popped out, and stabbed the Fellow who was lighting the Candle to the Heart, and then skulked into his Hole again; presently another took the Candle and he served him in the same Manner. In short, he killed four or five of them, delivered his Master, Mistress, and all in the House from the most barbarous Cruelties and Outrages, which would otherwise have been committed upon them. By this Means he broke the Gang, and the Remainder of them was soon after apprehended and executed.

Whoever doubts this Fact, I must refer them to any Gentleman who has served this County upon the Grand Jury for sixteen Years past. By all I can find this heroic Act, is already almost forgot, and no Part of it thought of with regard to the Boy but the usefulness of it. Had it been done among the old *Romans*, or the States of *Greece*, he would justly be ranked with their greatest Heroes,

and his Birth Place contended for; but he is now passed by unnoticed, as *Dryden* expresses it,

Like a Rose in a Forest, there blooms and dies.

I am sorry to hear this heroic Boy was not taken Care of, which is a Scandal to the Publick who knew his Merits, and ought to have taken him that Time under their particular Protection, as he would certainly have made a useful Member to Society, and by a voluntary Subscription have had him provided for; he would have made a Figure in the Annals of Fame, and have been an Honour to them and their Country, equal to the most renowned Hero of Antiquity.

Some worthy Gentlemen upon the Grand Jury at that Time, applied to the Judge upon the Bench to have him rewarded, but I was informed he made Answer, that there was no Law for it; However afterwards there was a Collection of Money made up for him among the good Men at the Assizes. I assure you I will add my Mite to him in my next, for the Honour of my Country, which is more particularly to record him, when I am better informed as to his Name, and other Incidents of his Life.

There was some providential Circumstances attending the Atchievements of this Boy and *William's* Adventures. The Boy for some Time before had saved the few Halfpence that had been given him, and the Day before this Affair happened, finding himself worth Sixpence, it enabled him to buy a Knife, such as the Commonalty are fond of, for Ornament and Use; with this very Knife which he bought the Day before, he did the happy Execution.

But

But to return ; *William* by the Highwayman's robbing Mr. *Freeman*, discovered the Cowardice of the Servant who had Fire-arms, which he afterwards took from him and kept them himself, which he bravely made use of, as has been before related.

Upon this Occasion the *English* shewed their greatness of Soul, by the Sense of Honour and Gratitude they had for such Heroism. There was prepared for *William* the Day he was out of his Time, Presents of thirteen Copies from thirteen different Towns of his Freedom, for his Conduct, Service and Valour at Mr. *Stennis's* House, besides acquiring the Honour, Love and Admiration of all that knew him.

Mr. *Freeman* with great Difficulty recovered in a Month, but *William's* Business obliged him to return to *London*, where he was tired with the Compliments he received on Change and elsewhere for his late Adventure in the Country, which was published a considerable Time before in all the Newspapers, Mr. and Mrs. *Landers* making no Secret of it to those they were acquainted with, whom *William* soon after his Arrival paid his Respects to, and dined with, to their great Joy and Comfort. They were as inquisitive about this Affair as the young Ladies at home, who were perpetually asking him about it, and their new Mamma that was to be.

William tho' a Novice as to the Affairs of Love, thought Miss *Nancy* had some Regard more than ordinary for him at this time, judging so from her keeping close at home when he was there, and acquainting him with every Person that had enquired for him in his Absence, together with her appearing dull always when he was going abroad, and pleased when he returned. He feared her growing Passion, as he was not disposed for Love, and shunned all Opportunities of her being in

private with her ; but Miss *Nancy* was too far gone to keep within Bounds, and if ever poor young Lady was excused for loving Virtue, and a fine Man, she certainly ought to be. Her Passion was not sudden, but proceeded from an early Dawn of the Excellencies of his Person and Conduct, but she kept it down by her Reason, till his late Exploit blew it into a rising and a irresistible Flame, and left her only Mistress of such Prudence as Love dictates.

She made her Sister her Confident, and when she heard her Dada was married, and would soon come to Town with his Wife, *William* and they being at Dinner, when the Cloth was taken away, her Sister retired, and left *Nancy* with him ; he was for going, but she desired him to sit down, which he did, and spoke to him as follows.

Sir, my Reason has in vain struggled with my Passion to conceal the Love I have for you, and I am not able by the Force of it to keep it secret any longer, therefore shall commit myself to the Protection of your Honour and Virtue, but must assure you I shall be for ever miserable, if you look upon me any longer with Indifference. I confess I have broke thorough the Rules of Decency laid down by my Sex, by making the first Application, but I know you are too just to censure a tortured Heart, for honestly explaining its Condition, to the only Person in the World that can ease it. Dear *William*, this Declaration does not proceed from any Levity, for yourself is a sufficient Judge of my Conduct for Years past, and had not your Excellencies been superior to other Men, I should still have been safe. You lately rescued a Family out of the Hands of Murderers, the remembrance of which chills my Blood when I think of your Danger, their Condition as being sudden, and which is now over, was more sufferable than mine
who

who have a continual Pain, and by new Discoveries of you grows more intolerable. I have a better Claim to your Assistance than they had, for the Wounds my Heart complains of were given by yourself, therefore, Honour, Justice and Virtue call upon you to heal them.

Madam, replies *William*, I am very sorry to hear this Declaration of yours, as I never had the least Notion of it, but I can assure you I have as much Honour and Esteem for you and all your Family as possible, so much that had you the World's Wealth, and all the Excellence and Charms of Woman-kind in yourself, I would not steal you from a Father I am so much obliged to. Give me Leave, Madam, to tell you as much as I know of myself, I came a Vagabond into the World, my Mother who was transported, and brought me forth in *Newgate*, could not account for me; I was nursed and educated by publick Charity, and then taken friendly Notice of by your worthy Father, who brought me Step by Step to what I am; consider what base Ingratitude it would be in me to rob him of his Child. Now, Madam, I have laid my Pedigree and Obligations to your Father before you, to shew the Scandal of such an Alliance, and the Impossibility for me to comply, if you don't suppose me to be the most abandoned Villain alive.

Miss in Tears replied, Sir, you are not accountable for your Birth, I think the same Nature is common to all Men. You seem to lay a great Stress upon Gratitude, if so, there is some to me, how carefully did I attend you, when negligent of yourself as to Food, and kindly used to beseech you to take it; nay, I have forced it upon you, then was my Passion in its Infancy, stealing like a treacherous Professor of Friendship upon me, by charming Insinuations till fully in his Power,
he

he then betrays and robs me of my Quiet for ever.

William, let not your humble Thoughts concerning your Birth fall heavy upon me, who loves you to Distraction; for Shame, have Gratitude and Generosity to me, nor do I think my Father would oppose it much, because he often confesses his Obligations are abundantly greater to you than yours are to him, and with Pride observes, he foresaw what your Conduct would be, which made it his Interest to take you. Were not all your Governors as anxious for you as he? Providence seems to design that you should be admired; therefore among the Number of your Excellencies, have Compassion.

Madam, replied *William*, I am sorry to hear such a Confession from you, as I am certain your Father would never consent to it, nor dare I propose it to him, nor desire any other Person to do it. I have very little Sensation of that rising Passion called Love, only what is common to human Nature, and when I happen to read of it, I regard it as fictitious, and not worth the Perusal, and would advise you to do the same. To help your Judgment, consider my Beginning and setting out in the World, which I hope will create such an Indifference as to effectually destroy your Notions of me. I never as yet have had a particular Regard for any Woman, nor do I intend it, but all the Offices of Friendship I am capable of performing, for you or your Sister, you may command.

Thus ended their Conversation for this time, but not to the Satisfaction of Miss *Nancy*, who seized every Opportunity afterwards to gain his Affection, but he continued inflexible, which proceeded from his austere Virtue and Honour.

A few Days after Mr. *Freeman* and his Bride came home, and found by the happy Order his Affairs

Affairs were in, that *William* had been as careful of them as ever. *Mrs. Freeman* was a very fine Woman, about nineteen Years of Age, and was very fond of the young Ladies. She discovered in about three Months the Love *Miss Nancy* had for *William*, for whom she had the greatest Esteem on account of his couragious Behaviour in the Country. She told *Mr. Freeman* of it, and sincerely recommended *William*, as a happy Match for his Daughter. In all other Respects her Power was absolute over him, but he could not be prevailed upon in this material Affair to consent to it, which they attributed to his Pride, now wallowing in Riches.

Miss Nancy told *William* of her Mother-in-law's Goodness, together with her Father's Obstinacy; then and not before she began to give up all Hopes of Success, and urged him no more upon a Subject that seemed so indifferent to him, but left it to Time; making him however promise that whilst she lived to marry no other Person without her Consent, which he agreed to.

William was too penetrating not to observe *Mr. Freeman's* Coolness to him, who was by Degrees withdrawing Matters of the greatest Trust out of his Hands, and not content with that, he advised him to go as his Supercargo upon a trading Voyage; *William* said it was probable he would want him more at home, but however he was willing to acquiesce in all his Commands. *Mr. Freeman* commended him for his Obedience, but enjoined him to Secresy.

In the mean time, he sent the young Ladies to *Mr. Stennis's* in *Huntingdonshire*, not scrupling to tell them that *William* should in a few Days go to them to bring them home. When they were gone, he ordered him to prepare every Necessary requisite for so long a Voyage, which he did, and left

left his Securities in the Hands of his dear Mr. *Landers* for five thousand Pounds which he had in the Stocks; desiring, if he or his Wife wanted before he returned, to take as much of it as they had Occasion for, and to receive the Interest of it when due, promising to write to him every Opportunity.

The Ship was called the *Sea Nymph*, a fine large well accommodated Vessel, and ready to sail, which only gave him time to take Leave of his Friends, and go on board. He had still more Indulgence from Mr. *Freeman* than was common by giving him Leave when the Ship staid in any Port and was safe, to see the Curiosities of that Place, and those near it, which he knew he would be extremely fond of.

In a few Days they set Sail, and proceeded safe to *Gibraltar*, where they staid some little Time, from thence to *Portmahon* in *Minorca*, and after prosperously sailing between the Islands of *Sardinia* and *Corfica*, they arrived at *Naples*, where they staid about a Month upon Business and to rest. During which Time he went to see *Rome*, that Eternal City, as *Ammianus* the Historian calls it. Here he wrote a Sort of Journal, and some Remarks to Mr. *Landers*, as follows.

Rome.

Honoured Sir,

Since I saw you till I came to *Naples*, nothing material has happened, and now I am here I have little to acquaint you with, but what you have heard of before. The incomprehensible Greatness and Power of this City formerly, has been so sufficiently treated of by many famed Authors, that it is impossible for me, tho' upon the Spot, to give you

you any Sort of Account but what has been already wrote. Its august and venerable Ruins in all Ages since its Declension, having been the Admiration of every curious Beholder. However to say something of it, I think with others who have seen it, that *Rome* is worthy of that Praise which every one bestows on it.

I shall only here mention to you a little of its former Splendor, and then pursue Step by Step the last Historian that wrote upon the Subject.

At a Time when all forsook her, *Magnentius* the Usurper was defeated, and killed himself in *Italy*, *Constantius* the Emperor took a Progress to *Rome*, to celebrate his Victory there, which was by a fatal Policy abandoned by *Constantine* the Great, who fixed his Imperial Residence at *Bizantium* now, after him called *Constantinople*.

As *Constantius* approached *Rome* he was met by the Senate and most of the People; so great was the Confluence, that he thought the whole World were there assembled together; he made his Entry in a golden Chariot, adorned with such a Multitude of sparkling Gems, that it rivall'd the Lustre of the Sun; the Dragons embroidered upon Purple wantoning in the Air about him, curling their Heads from the Ends of their Staves, that glitter'd with oriental Pearl and precious Stones, and when they waved too and fro in the Air, they seemed alive by their Hissings, and the Tortosity of their Tails.

When he came to the *Rostrum* he was amazed at the Sight of the Forum, that Demonstration of the antient Power of the Inhabitants. He was wonderfully delighted with the Place, tho' his Father and he had abandoned it, which pressed its Fate and Ruin; but what he most admired was the Temple of *Jupiter Tarpeius*, the publick Baths, the Amphitheatre, the Pantheon, *Pompey's Theatre*,

tre, and other stupendous Works and Ornaments. He was so astonished with what he beheld, that he complained of Fame, which either thorough Weakness or Malice, had given but a lame imperfect Account of what related to *Rome*, tho' in other Matters she constantly exceeds the Truth.

Most Historians agree, that this was the greatest City and People that ever existed, and continued so whilst moral Virtue was regarded, but when that becomes unfashionable, and insinuating Luxury, that Bane to a Commonwealth, rears his pernicious Head, attended with its usual Train of Vices, of which none are of such dangerous Consequences to the Publick as Bribery, Corruption, and debasing the Courage of their Soldiers, which is a dernier Resort, and most to be depended upon by any State or Empire of the World in extreme Danger, both as to enforcing their own Laws, and resisting foreign Enemies; then other Vices make their usual Havock among the Individuals, and prepare them for Slavery.

The first Fruits of this lovely Poison, was an universal and insatiable Desire of Riches, to purchase those supposed Pleasures which were scarcely known in *Rome*, before the Introduction of Luxury. Those in Power were now mostly charmed with it, and gave Examples of their Corruption to all in subordinate Degrees under them; till at length it distempered the Minds of the whole; then the selling and buying Civil and Military Employments became common, every Man according to his Opportunity stabbing his Country to serve himself, till they quite murdered it, which the united Force before of Humankind could not do.

In this universal State of Corruption, the Priesthood and Empire were exposed to Sale, and purchased from the insolent Army by *Julian* a Lawyer, but he found to his Cost he was not qualified for the Majesty of it.

The Case of *Jugurtha* was one of the earliest as well as one of the most flagrant Instances of decay'd *Roman* Honour and Virtue. He was bred under *Scipio* the Consul, some Time in the Army, and behaved well whilst with him; he afterwards went home to his own Country *Numidia*, and was there provided magnificently for by the *Romans*, but he barbarously murdered his nearest Kindred, who were under their Protection, for which he was brought to Tryal before the *Roman* Senate, but by the Charms of his Gold among some of them, he was acquitted.

When returning home, he looked back upon *Rome*, and said, with a prophetick Spirit, Unhappy *Rome*, you are now ready for Sale was there a Purchaser for thee.

After this Period, *Marius* and *Scylla* contended with a vast Effusion of *Roman* Blood, who should enslave their Country.

After them, three of the most powerful of the Commonwealth conspired against it, which were *Pompey* the Great, *Julius Caesar*, and *Crassus*; the former two were actuated by Ambition and Glory, the latter by base Avarice; they all came to unhappy Ends, but for ever deprived their Country of its invaluable Liberty. The last who breathed a *Roman* Spirit were *Brutus* and *Cassius*, but they were defeated at *Phillippi*, together with *Cato*, who before killed himself in *Utica*, rather than to behold the Usurpation of *Caesar*.

After them we hear nothing remarkable of these great People, but what relates to the Ambition, Glory, Vices or Virtues of their Emperors, who for a time held

held the Senate in great Respect, and invested some Power in their Hands, who before had the Disposal of Kingdoms and States; but alas! they were now so enervated, that there was not an old *Roman* among them.

There never were greater Cruelties committed, than whilst the Shadow rather than Power of the Senate remained, particularly under *Nero* and *Caligula*, who whilst wantonly committing the most barbarous Murders and Outrages, were most affectionately addressed by the depending Senate; who severally had some one Thing or other to request from them, and therefore approved of all their Iniquities, till it affected themselves.

In short, by their continual petitioning, together with the Desire those in Power had for accumulating Wealth and Interest with the Senate, all the high Places in the Temples, Courts of Justice, Council of State, and Offices in the Army were filled with those of Senatorian Birth, or by those who could pay most Money for such Places.

Of all these Evils, which are the infallible fore-runners of approaching Dissolution, none of them are so fatal in their Consequences, as giving Power or Commissions to Persons in the Army, whose Merits are not known; the Ignorance, Corruption and Vices of the other Stations fall only upon Particulars, but the Corruption or Desertion of an Army, by the Example of effeminate or cowardly Officers, in the Time of Necessity falls upon all, like a universal Conflagration; that such Times more or less, as the People are happy and inviting have come to pass. All Ages and Places already demonstrate it, and I am afraid will ever continue so, whilst Mankind covets their Neighbour's Property.

The

The *Roman* Armies were dreaded by the World, when headed by Men of approved Virtue, Conduct, and Courage. In those Days Liberty and Glory were beloved, preferable to all other Things, and it was scarcely ever known that a Commander gave as much as the lowest Commission in the Army to a Person, whose Valour did not recommend him, without regard to his Birth or Fortune. Whilst this Part of Discipline was regarded, their Constancy to their Country was invincible, being always a sure Defence against the Insults of their Neighbours, carrying Vengeance with them wherever they were pointed at.

This was the Case of the antient *Romans* for many Ages, till they forced their Religion, Laws, and Government almost upon the known World; but in the succeeding Ages of Luxury, when Youths were placed at the head of Legions, who had not one Qualification to boast of but their happy Births or Fortune, then the Legionary Soldiers could pass the Word from one to another thorough the Ranks, to know how this or that Officer got his Commission, and were always answered, by Birth or Money, which made them despair of ever raising themselves by Merit, as they wanted those essential Advantages; and seeing many of their Brother Soldiers grown grey in the Service, who had often before fought their Country's Battles with Success, to view themselves shamefully neglected by their Generals, made them reasonably think no Courage could be of Service to them, without the beforementioned Requisites, seeming rather to be Slaves than Soldiers.

Their Miseries did not stop here; having neither their Country nor powerful Friend to interpose for them, the Spirit and Rapaciousness of the Times were such, that the Tribunes of those Legions who were highly paid out of the Revenue of the

Y

State.

State, made the Cavalry pay, according to the best Calculation I can make of *Roman* Coin, sixpence a Day of our Money, for two Years for their *Tunica* or Coat, which amounted to eighteen Pounds each Coat, which might be bought for less than fifty Shillings, and all other Extortions in Proportion from a whole Legion amounted to a very great Sum in a Year.

Those Villanies were practiced in sight of their Emperors and Senate, the latter being more to blame who gave the Taxes, than the former, for not applying the Monies raised this Way to better Purposes. An Army thus used, without any Prospect of Encouragement, will have no martial Ardour, and a People ought to have no Reliance upon them, unless it be to engage an Army as corrupt as themselves.

When the *Roman* Empire began to totter, their Armies were thus modelled; the Reputation of their Ancestors for Arms, kept the barbarous Nations near their Boundaries in Awe for a few Generations, till by Degrees they discovered their Degeneracy, which made the *Romans* then in their Turn, sensibly feel the Weight of Barbarian Arms. Their Conduct at home and abroad was now as bad as it was excellent before; they were obliged to apply to their Neighbours for Succour against their Enemies.

Alarick the *Goth*, at the Head of an Army of his Countrymen, by Invitation came to assist *Theodosius*, but thinking that he did not sufficiently reward him for his Services, he attacked and destroyed the Countries he came to relieve. *Rome* never had more Inhabitants in it than when he besieged it, but there was not a Soldier among them which the Barbarian and his Army was well acquainted with.

The

The Women of it formerly would have made a better Defence than the Men did now, occasioned only by changing their Virtues for their Vices. *Alarick* took and sacked it on the twenty fourth of *August*, in the Year of Christ, four hundred and ten.

That City which for so many Ages triumphed over the World, and enriched herself with the Spoils of other Nations, now suffered in her Turn. Eleven hundred and sixty three Years after the Foundation of it, being seven hundred Years of that time Queen of the Universe.

Here let us consider those execrable Villains the Courtiers, who were not content with all the sensual Pleasures and Delights of *Rome*, but must debauch the valiant Defenders of it, the Army, by procuring Commissions in it for Persons only qualified by Chance for so great a Trust.

Another fatal Error of theirs was, upon every Emergency Officers by royal Edicts, were ordered to their respective Legions; when thus compelled, they rather went as so many Infections to the Army than Assistants, it being then well known, that no Man who was charmed with *Rome*, would behave well in his Station out of it.

Among the Run of Emperors that reigned in *Rome*, in these Times, they had some very great and good; who would, when an Officer was imposed upon them, and scandalously misbehaved in the Service of their Country, make those that recommended him responsible for his Conduct, to the great Satisfaction of the Publick, which cost many a great Villain his Life. Few Men know their own Courage till try'd, and consequently ought not to have Experiments made of it or their Conduct at the Hazard of a State. All Trusts reposed in Men are but trivial, to that which has

324 BRADSTREET'S LIVES.

Religion, Laws and Country at Stake, which often depend upon the Fate of a single Battle.

It would be a great Blessing to Mankind to have no Occasion for Armies; but alas! Man must be reformed and new made before we can enjoy that Happiness. The Experience of all the Nations of the Earth, proves the Instability of a Reliance upon solemn Treaties or the Faith of Men; there not being a perfect Security in either, when the Prey is tempting and Opportunity inviting; therefore, it is the Interest of every one possessed of Property to take Care to be always upon their Guard.

This may be better effected by a small Army for Use, than a great one for Shew; but it can never be done if Miscreants who buy and sell Commissions are not punished, and none to get them but Men of tried and approved Qualifications. Let the Soldiery see what they are to come to, by devoting their Lives to their Country. Let publick Examinations once a Year be made at the Head of each Legion, to know how every Officer got his Commission, and if you love your Country, expunge those out of it who obtained them by Birth or Purchase. If a Camp be thus regulated, what Man of Honour would not be roused and rush to Arms upon a Call, and face Death boldly to serve his Country; for the Quality of Troops are of more Avail than their Numbers. A remarkable Instance of it was, when the *Roman* Army was marching to engage *Tigranes*, a mighty King, who beheld them at some Distance, as they were coming on in order of Battle, scarcely believing they would dare attempt to fight his numerous Army, he said of them, if the *Romans* are Ambassadors, they are a great many, if Soldiers very few; the Contempt he held their Numbers in that Day, he wofully experienced the Folly of.

Alexander's

Alexander's Troops in the Plains of *Arabella* scarcely exceeded thirty thousand Men, and the *Persians* were almost infinite, yet they were entirely defeated by the former. In this memorable Battle, the Simplicity of a *Macedonian* Soldier was very remarkable; in the Plunder he found a Purse full of Pearls, and threw away the precious Stones as an Incumbrance, but kept the Purse.

In our own Times or near them, what surprizing Success had *Gustavus Erickson* and *Gustavus Adolphus*, with a few Men against very great Armies.

Charles the Twelfth would have kept *Europe* in Awe, with less than sixty thousand Men, if his Conduct had been equal to the Valour of his Troops.

Webb, an *Irishman*, in *Queen Anne's* Wars with six thousand Men, engaged and defeated twenty thousand of the best Troops of *France*, but I never heard of his being advanced for it, tho' he lived to a great Age.

It was a Rule with those Heroes to prefer the good Services a Man did his Country to Birth, Fortune, or Interest; such Men may be considered in other Respects, but in the Army they are exceeding dangerous, where only true Merit ought to have the Preference.

How debauched and abandoned then must an Administration of the corrupt *Romans* be, to have Commissions in their Armies publicly advertised and prostituted for Sale, and no Qualification required but Money. I leave you to judge, what a Soldier must think of his Condition and Services, who reads or hears of such an Advertisement, which ought to make every honest Man ashamed of his being a *Roman*. These Practices of the infamous Great, were the best Invitations that could be given to those who attentively watched their Opportunities, and seized them (when they were

thoroughly rotten) with their whole Empire and Freedom, and have now continued them Slaves for a Course of seventeen hundred Years. Consider the Justice, Discipline, Regularity, Vices and Virtues of two Armies going to engage, and without a Spirit of Prophecy you may judge which will be victorious before a Blow is given; the Day of Battle is too late for Reformation, for no Promise will then be regarded, from a known luxurious and effeminate General, who will always be cruel to Enemies, severe in his Punishments to his own Soldiers, and extremely sparing in his Rewards. There is such a Sameness of Birth between the ancient *Romans*, myself and those of our School, as has engaged my Attention to their Affairs more than any other Nations could, except those of my own Country, who I hope will always have the Fall of this mighty Empire in view, which may be a Means to prevent their own Ruin.

I shall soon conclude, but must inform you first, that in the dying Agonies of *Rome*, and her long Sickness before, whole Provinces and Kingdoms rebelled, and shook off her Yoke; and the Governors of each Province appointed by the State assumed a Sovereign Authority in their several Precincts, whilst their common Mother was in the Convulsions of Death, by their perfidiously abandoning her. This was the Case of all that was thought valuable in *Europe* at that Time, from whence crowned Heads may date their divine and hereditary Right to their Thrones, or may if you please, trace them from the beginning of Time; but I fear I shall tire you with the Length of this Epistle.

Before

Before I set out on my Voyage I confided in you as to all that passed between Miss *Nancy Freeman* and me. If she happens to call upon you, which is very probable, inform her, that I had no Opportunity to take my Leave of her, and assure her from me, I shall inviolably keep the Promise I made her; as I always have had the greatest Honour and Esteem for her, I shall take no Notice of her in my Letters to her Father, who I believe, though agreeable to my Inclinations, has sent me into Exile upon her Account. By the next Opportunity you shall hear more from me. Voyagers Letters are generally long to their Friends, as the Opportunities of sending them do but seldom happen. Our Ship by this time being near ready to sail, I must hasten to it, and am,

Ever honoured Father and Mother,

Your dutiful and adopted Son,

William Gate.

William returned to *Naples*, where he made but a short stay, and proceeded on his delightful Voyage, in the Course of which we will leave him a while, and return to *London*, to see how his Friends are there.

He was scarcely gone two Months before Mr. *Freeman* heartily repented sending him, and cursed that Pride that occasioned it. The Value of a sincere Friend or good Servant is never feelingly known till wanted. The long Habit of Ease and Success *William* had given him, added to that extraordinary Affection he had for his present Wife, made his close Application to Business intolerable to him; the want of such an industrious Person's

watchful Eyes caused his Clerks to be remiss, and he abated nothing of his former Expences.

Unhappy Miss *Nancy*, when she heard of *William's* Banishment, surprisingly compos'd herself, but so publickly declared her Love for him as sometimes to be troublesome to those she conversed with, by always introducing something of him in every Subject she talked of, though ever so foreign to the Topic. The virtuous Actions of others she heard of, she compared to *Williams*, and was easy in no Company but those of his former Acquaintance, who were certainly his Friends.

She collected all the Things belonging to him that he had left behind, and kept them in her own Room, as dear Remembrances of him, and often gave Money to the Poor to pray for his Safety. The only Visits she paid were to Mr. *Landers*, who, together with his Wife, would join her for ever in the Praises of their dear *William*; there would she be attentively delighted, as if she had him in Possession, hearing of all his Progresses from Infancy to Maturity.

In less than five Months after his going she had the Joy to read his long Packet to Mr. *Landers* several times, and in Raptures said to them, Can I be justly censured for loving such a Man as this? Mr. *Landers* replied, as if to one of his Scholars, saying, Miss, were I a young Lady, and as perfectly acquainted with him as I am, I should adore him, and avow my Passion to the World. I am not ashamed of owning it, I assure you, Sir, says Miss *Nancy*.

By the Bankruptcies of several, to whom Mr. *Freeman* had given an ill-judged Credit, he lost upwards of forty thousand Pounds in less than twenty Months after *William* left him. His second Daughter was married with his Consent to a rich Gentleman,

Gentleman, and he invited several to pay their Respects to Miss *Nancy*, but no one who spoke to her upon that Head attempted it a second time, for she would not resign her Right to *William* for an Empire.

Her Father's Affairs were now more uneasy and perplexed than ever, which made him apply to Miss *Nancy* for the fifteen thousand Pounds he before had settled upon her, his opulent Son-in-law cautiously withdrawing his Friendship and Familiarity from him upon the Appearance of his Embarrassments. He had no Dependance now but Miss *Nancy's* Fortune, which was absolutely out of his Power to get without her Consent, to save him from immediate Ruin. When he first applied to her in private about it, she told him, she would not give it to him but would to her Mamma, who, by her Goodness, deserved all she was capable of bestowing.

Mrs. *Freeman* was called to them, and was told by her Husband what Miss *Nancy* said; when she heard it she positively declared against it, saying, As both of you, in your separate Affairs, have consulted me since I knew you, it gives me a Right to speak my Mind freely, as I am now greatly concerned in them, and I now do give it as my Opinion that Miss *Nancy's* Fortune will not retrieve you; it was by you worthily settled upon her before she knew me, and, Mr. *Freeman*, if you love me, let her not be sacrificed under my Protection upon any Consideration; I was bred to Thrift and Industry, which makes but very little Difference to me between an over-grown Fortune and an humble, independent Station; rely upon my Courage, if put to it, to struggle with the World to get you Bread; if you are not able to get out of your Bed, you may depend upon my Honour and Integrity while
I live

I live to serve you; I know your Love for me has made you conceal your Misfortunes till they became visibly pressing. The Advice I now give you on the present Complexion of your Affairs is this, I understand you have enough to pay your Debts, and very little to spare, summon your Creditors, pay them, quit the busy World, and retire with me on the little we may have left; Miss *Nancy*, I believe, will live with us, and let you have most of the Interest of her Fortune, till you and she think proper to dispose of it otherwise; let us go with clear Consciences, in Disguise, to some remote Country Place, where we may live and appear with our little Fortune, and bow your Head to none but those you like; you will in time be like a petty King, among those of equal Appearance, and don't hazard this happy Certainty, which is now in your Power, for vain and remote Prospects of Poms and Vanities, which if you could possibly accomplish to your Wishes, would not make us so really happy as the Life I have recommended to you, which solid Good you may lose in the Pursuit of other airy Shadows. The Bulk of your Fortune *William* is now taking Care of, I am sure he will give a good Account of it, settle your Affairs and have that clear to yourself, which will make you easy for ever in any Retirement.

Mr. *Freeman* did not approve of this Advice, nor of her recommending it to his Daughter to keep her Fortune, but addressing himself to her again, said, My Dear, I shall be ruined and exposed, which I find your Mamma does not regard, if you don't consent to let me have the Money. Miss *Nancy* replied, Dear Dada, for the World's Wealth I would not see you uneasy a Minute, take it, Sir, as soon as you please. Madam, I beseech you do not be angry with me, I have two powerful Motives for giving it, the first is, my Dada will have
quietness

quietness of Mind by it, and it gives me the greatest Opportunity I ever had to shew the sincere Love and Duty I have for him; the second is, that I am well assured, from *William's* Greatness of Soul, he would sooner have me without it, than it should be said he took me from my Dada on account of a Fortune; no Person will oppose us when that is gone, which was a Curse to me.

Mrs. *Freeman* replied, Miss, you are reasoning yourself into Ruin: Your Love and Duty to your Father is very commendable, but to give your Fortune away to obtain the Man you love, is a new Method, and I believe a very bad one; Mr. *Freeman*, if you take your Child's Fortune, you have used me ill to call me to this Council, when you were before determined to do as you thought proper; and as this is the Case, all that remains for me to do is to declare, in the Presence of God, that I am entirely against it. No Usage from you, Sir, could ever provoke me to declare what this Action of yours obliges me to, which is, that I always admired your Penetration and Judgment for getting *William* from his School to be your Clerk, but when you were convinced he exceeded your Expectations, and enriched you for the Time he was with you, to send him away for fear he should be married to your Daughter, shewed a great Failure in your Judgment; he was worth purchasing as a Son-in-Law for any Man, and I advised you then to let him have her, if you had, your Affairs would not now be as they are, send for him I beseech you, before you take her Money into Trade; pray where is he now? I believe, says Mr. *Freeman*, in *Syria*, at *Aleppo*, or *Damascus*, the last Account I had of him was from *Constantinople*, I hope he will be soon home, and when he comes manage Things as you please, but I cannot forbear taking her Money till then. I desire, says Mrs. *Freeman*,

man, that you will only take half of it till he arrives, and hope that will be sufficient, but he declared, the Whole was scarcely sufficient for his Occasions. Mrs. *Freeman* then burst into Tears and left them greatly dissatisfied. The next Day he received his Daughter's whole Fortune, which satisfied the present Demands.

Soon after Mr. *Landers* received a Letter from *William*, dated from *Troy*. I must here observe to my Readers, if their Patience can't hold out to read his Letters, I desire they would pass them by till they come nearer the End, where they will find Matter more relative to his Affairs at home. His Letter was as follows:

Honour'd Sir,

Ruins of *Troy*.

AS I always had Pleasure in accounting with you for every Transaction of my Life, I find the same Desire as strong as ever upon me, though now near two Years from you and at a great Distance. My last to you was from *Rome*, soon after I went to *Naples* and got aboard our Ship.

We sailed through the Streights of *Messina*, and plainly saw the Island of *Sicily* as we passed by; we then entered the *Ionian* Sea; the first Land we made was the *Morea*, Part of ancient *Greece*, and dropped our Anchors to take in Water at *Old Lacedæmon*, now called *Misira*; there I walked some Hours, and saw Monks from several Parts of *Europe*, who are the most intelligent Persons I met with there, and the best Antiquarians; one of them shewed me the Spot upon which stood the House of *Licurgus* their renowned Lawgiver. Their Habitations at present are very miserable, and their Subjection and Slavery to the *Turks* is more so.

From

From hence we were drove a little out of our Course by a Storm, and cast our Anchors near *Athens*, which is still one of the best Towns in *Greece*; *Delphina* is near it, where formerly stood their famed Oracle; I traced the most venerable Remains of Antiquity here, but shall defer giving you Particulars till I have the Pleasure of seeing you.

From this we sailed through the *Archipelago*, which is interspersed with beautiful Islands, those of greatest Note are *Candia*, or *Crete* of *Old Cyprus*; and in the *Levant*, *Rhodes*, the *Dardanells* are many little Islands; I was shewed the Remains of two old Walls in separate Islands, near each other, supposed to be *Ovid's* Castles of *Hero* and *Leander*.

We sailed to *Gallipoly*, and from thence to *Constantinople*, where our Business obliged us to make a considerable stay; the Seraglio, which was called the Seven Towers in the Times of the Christian Emperors, is one of the most glorious Sights in the World; but you are shockingly disappointed when you enter the City, by the Narrowness and Foulness of the Streets. Few Cities have had such extraordinary Changes as this. I shall go no farther back than *Constantine the Great*, who was so charmed with this Situation, and disgusted with that of *Rome*, that he made this City her happy Rival, by making it the usual Residence of the succeeding Emperors: They commonly here appointed the Emperors for the West, who generally kept their Courts in *Italy*. Whatever Reasons then appeared to *Constantine* to settle the Imperial Seat at *Byzantium*, Experience has since shewn they were weak and impolitic; undoubtedly the *Roman* Greatness received a fatal Stroke by it; he brought his numerous Legions with him, who were like Flowers transplanted into a foreign Clime, that languish by
Degrees

Degrees, and at length shrunk into nothing; he spared no Cost or Labour to make it beautiful and convenient; he divided it into fourteen Regions, built a Capitol, made a Circus Maximus, an Amphitheatre, several Forums, Porticus's, and other publick Works, which, together with the many Churches built upon a religious Account, added much to the Lustre of the City, which he dedicated to the God of Martyrs; many of these Works remain to this Day, and succeeding Emperors made it a most glorious Place.

The same Causes that ruined the *Western* Empire ruined this, first the City was taken by the Christians, concern'd in the Crusade or Holy Wars in the Year 1204, and afterwards recovered by the Greek Emperors, the *Saracens* or *Turks*, were continually stripping of one Part or other of this unhappy Empire, now enfeebled by their Corruptions, till the very City was taken by Storm on 29th of May 1453, by *Mahomet the Great*, after it had held out a long Siege, to the Knowledge of all the Christian Powers of *Europe*, who stirred not, but gazed on, to relieve the Worshippers of *Christ*; suffered them all to be sacrificed, and their unfortunate Emperor to be trampled to Death among the common Carnage.

The Calamities of this City, in that memorable Siege, was equal to the Sufferings of *Jerusalem*, when besieged and taken by *Titus*, by which Means the Infidels got the greatest, most glorious, and strongest Bulwark in *Europe* into their Hands, and have since extended their Empire in *Asia*, *Africa*, and *Europe* more considerable than all *Christendom* put together.

When *Vienna* was besieged by them, most of the Christian States and Kingdoms looked on. *France* attacked the Empire at the same time, none presuming to oppose the common Danger, or the Enemies of *Jesus Christ*, but *John Sobieski* King of *Poland*, who, the

the Morning of this great Day, prepared himself for Death and devoted his Life to his Saviour, who opened the Gates for Mankind to everlasting Life and Happiness; he bravely fought and routed the *Turks* at the Head of his *Polish* Horse, by which he saved *Christendom*, in all Probability, from receiving their Laws.

France, before now, would have been sensible of their unhappy Policy, by their Ruin, if the *Turks* had made a Conquest of *Germany*, which they were so near accomplishing by their hearty Assistance. Never, when you think of this, imagine *Lewis* the XIVth. or his Council, were either good Politicians or Christians.

When I read what our Historians say of this Empire, as to the badness of their Laws, Policy, Government, and Military Discipline, I am astonished at their scandalous Partiality and Ignorance; Persons who are not in the Councils or Cabinets of Princes can only judge from Appearances and Consequences, as to their Conduct and Policy; if so, Authors who have wrote upon the Infirmities of this Administration will appear notoriously false, when we consider they were a low, abject People, and suddenly rose to a stupendous Greatness, and have been so seven hundred Years, which is longer than the Empire of the *Medes*, *Persians*, *Romans*, or *Grecians* stood, without many Changes, and Dangers of Dissolution.

In the Course of that Time this Empire was in no great Danger, except the Defeat the glorious *Tamerlane* gave them, which they soon recovered. Their Adherence is so strict and steady to the Causes of their Greatness, that they still bloom as if Infancy and Maturity were blended together. Their Laws which are enforced give them three great Advantages, more than any other Part of Mankind I ever knew; Whoring, Drinking to Excess, or
Gaming,

Gaming, is not to be practised or committed here, which three Vices are the greatest Temptations to Luxury and Corruption; there is scarcely an Officer of State, or one in the Army, who knows what Father he had, being generally taken Captives very young, and bred in the Seraglio to the Love of Arms; their Capacities are taken great Care of by those who have Charge of their Education, and by their Recommendation are afterwards properly adapted to the Service of the Empire. A Coward was never known to be sent to the Army from one of those Schools, for they rise and fall suddenly, and no Interest can screen them from an Injury done the Publick, for those who recommended them are sacrificed to the Resentment of the Populace; their peculiar Punishment for those who buy or sell Commissions in the Army, is to sew them up in Sacks and drop them in the *Hellespont*. They have not an Officer in the *Turkish* Army or Fleet who is either obliged to his Birth or Fortune for his Commission, though other Armies have scarcely an Officer but what is indebted to one or the other for theirs.

Let our Heroes at home say what they will of the Discipline and manner of fighting of these People, it is easy to judge of their Power by their Conquests, for no Nation or Empire dare attempt any thing against them whilst they are quiet. The major Parts of *Asia* and *Europe* are in their Empire, and the best Part of *Africa* and *Tartary* are under their Protection; all the States and Kingdoms of *Christendom* are subject to their Vassals the States of *Barbary*; they will scarcely deign to send an Ambassador to any Court, yet have their own filled with them from all other Parts of the World, and are continually receiving Presents, by way of Tribute. The Ballance of Trade is quite in their Favour,

Favour, for they purchase little, but sell a great deal.

The Success of this mighty Empire is attributed to the happy Choice they make of Officers civil and military.

These Indications of their Power and the Homage paid them, together with their Tributaries, demonstrates to a Man of Reason that they are not impartially represented to us.

As to their Laws, they are easily understood, and Causes here are immediately determined; you may appeal from one Judge to another, and if you prove either corrupt, that Judge is impeached alive; if a Person be tried for a Crime, he is either entirely acquitted or found guilty; how shameful and barbarous must it then be for our Christian and civilized Country, that in most criminal Cases does neither; as for Example, a Man is sent to Gaol upon Suspicion, or by the Malice or Design of some Person or other against him, he is, after a long Imprisonment, fairly tried in open Court and acquitted of the Fact, but at the same time the injured, miserable Wretch is condemned to pay his Fees, which he is seldom able to do, and consequently unheeded languishes till he rots in Gaol, and this to the Knowledge of all our Judges and Juries; here Men are compassionated for the Wrongs and Injuries they receive from others; with us Christians it is directly the contrary, for it is not sufficient with us to see a Man falsely accused, and, after unspeakable Hardships in Gaol, justly acquitted, but we then add a Punishment almost equal to Death, which is, the Loss of Liberty to the unfortunate Sacrifice till he pays more Money than perhaps he is worth, and this Affliction is imposed upon him by his dear Country for his Misfortunes, which Cruelty cannot otherwise be accounted for, but as a Challenge to God the Father, Son,

Z

and

and Holy Ghost ; it resembles a strange Dog when seized by one of his own Kind, every Cur must have a Bite at him till he is devoured ; I hope a Generation may come that will blush at the Practices of this Age, that adds, by general Consent, Cruelties to suffering Innocence ; which is certainly the Case when a Man is acquitted by a sworn Jury, and afterwards confined for his Fees.

(I must here break in upon this Letter, and anticipate your reading a little, by informing you that *William*, when in the Senate many Years after, managed this Affair with such worthy Address, that every Person tried for capital Crimes in *London*, the Instant they were acquitted, have since been turned out of Court in the Presence of the Judges, and no Fees expected or demanded from them. But to proceed with the Letter.)

It is some Comfort to me that these Infidels have no other Christian Country to charge with this barbarous Practice but ours.

The Instructions to their Governors of Provinces are very short, and principally these, That special Care be taken to have the Ground cultivated, to bring forth more than a Sufficiency of Rice and Corn for the Inhabitants under their Jurisdiction ; to inculcate a Love of Glory early in the Minds of their Youth, as to military Atchievements ; to justly and impartially administer and execute Justice ; and to keep an exact Discipline among their Militia. The Neglect of any of these Ordinances is generally fatal to them, and especially the first, for if a Governor grows unaccountably rich, it is often his Ruin, it being attributed to his Corruption, and he is sacrificed to please the Publick, which the Ministry are very attentive to.

As

As to Marriages, a Man may have four Wives and as many Concubines as he pleases to maintain, which is not here deemed Whoring; this seems to be a political Indulgence of *Mahomet's*, their great Prophet, the Men being so wasted and destroyed by Wars in his Time, that upon a just Calculation there were twenty Females to one Male; nor can a Stranger scarcely see a Woman in their Streets or Houses.

The Sultan is prohibited to marry, but he generally has two or three thousand Concubines, and this Institution has been since the Defeat of *Bajazet*, by *Tamerlane*, the former unhappy Emperor seeing his beloved Empress taken from him, and in his Presence abused by the common Soldiers of his Enemy, without *Tamerlane's* Knowledge, who had too great a Soul to suffer it, which made them determine it should never be in the Power of Fortune again to insult their Monarchs that way.

They seem to grow wiser by Experience than any other People, for they never forget what Injuries or Services their State receives, and carefully after pursue the one and avoid the other. Their Emperors, though as absolute as any Monarchs in the World, have not for many Reigns past abused their Power by a tyrannical Use of it, when they do, they are generally deposed by their own Guards the Janizaries, who are the Defence of the Subject as well as the chief Power and Strength of the Court, and are always complimented with the Head of any Man they ask for; but it has been remarked, that they have not demanded any Man's Head for these hundred Years past, which has not given great Satisfaction to the Publick.

There is no Safety here either for Minister or Officer who has not the Good-will of the Publick at Heart, which makes them exceeding cautious not to provoke the People.

They seem to favour Republicks rather than kingly Governments, a Demonstration of which they gave during the Protectorship of *Cromwell*, whose Ambassador and King *Charles* the Second's appeared together at *Constantinople*, and after hearing of both in full Divan, or Council, they gave the latter up to the former, who was sent to *London* in Chains, and soon after beheaded before the *Royal Exchange*.

The Offspring of their Marriages seldom rises above the common Level in the State, but are very happy in private Stations. Of all the Women brought here from many Parts of the World the *Circassians* sell best, as they seem to excel their Sex in Beauty. Their Clergy must keep up to their Doctrine, or they are despised, which if they do is very austere; it is expected from them that they should have an utter Contempt for Money and all other Allurements, and by their Words and Examples powerfully to recommend Virtue and discourage Vice; when remarkable by the Sanctity and Goodness of their Lives, there are none in the Empire so honoured and esteemed.

The Sultan's Edict must have the Blessing and Approbation of the Mufti, or High-priest, to give it the Force of Law, and then it is thought prophane to murmur at it.

They are the most charitable People in the World to one another, which they extend even to Dogs, and all kind of Brutes, not suffering any to be put violently to Death on account of old Age, or being past their Service, but the Publick provide for them till they die naturally. They force no Man to their Religion; I have seen it common for a *Turk* and a *Christian* to be Partners together in Trade at *Aleppo*, *Constantinople*, *Gallipoly*, and *Damascus*, and never observed any Discord between them on account of their different Opinions.

Troy

Troy, where I now am, and came to more for Curiosity than Business, is a miserable, ruin'd Place, and was so long before the Birth of *Christ*, and yet there are People to be found here who will pretend to shew where King *Priam's* Palace stood, where *Paris* and *Helen* lived together, where *Hector* often fought, and this traditional Account of it is handed down to them by many succeeding Generations.

We are now preparing to sail home, very richly laden. Pray tell Miss *Nancy*, if you see her, I have got upon this Voyage a few Curiosities for her, which I hope will be acceptable to her, when I have the Pleasure of assuring her how much I am her humble Servant; I have likewise got some Things for you and Mrs. *Landers*, and hope to have the Happiness of dining with you in less than four Months, which will give both Comfort and Joy to,

Dear Sir,

Your dutiful Son,

William Gate.

From *Troy* they sailed to *Smyrna* and *Ephesus*, where *William* made a short Stay at both Places, and afterwards crossed the *Archipelago*, till he came upon the Coasts of *Greece*; then they sailed to the Island of *Sicilly*, between which and *Tunis* their Ship was one Morning very early attacked by two Corsairs from the latter Place, and after making all the Resistance that could be expected from Men in Despair, was taken, having a Cargo worth thirty thousand Pound, and brought into *Tunis*, where every Soul on board were sold as Slaves; there we will leave him, to contemplate upon the Uncertainty

tainty of human Affairs, and in the mean time give a Look at our Friends in *England*.

Mr. *Freeman* did not neglect the Business of Generation, as appeared by his having a young Son and Daughter in this Time; but he was now sensible, had *William* returned with all the Success he could reasonably expect, it would not have atoned for the Losses he had sustained in his Absence.

Miss *Nancy* had the Pleasure to read *William's* last Letter to Mr. *Landers*; the Presents he mentioned for her, and his Declaration of being her humble Servant, gave her unspeakable Satisfaction; but this did not last long, for there came an Express to Mr. *Freeman* with the mortifying News that his Ship, the *Sea Nymph*, was taken by the *Barbary* Pirates. This was a shocking Account to him, as his greatest Reliance was upon the safe Return of this Vessel, and made him fully sensible, when it was too late, of his want of Judgment, and that he ought to have taken his prudent Wife's Advice, who was so good upon this Occasion as not to upbraid him with the Conduct she would have had him pursued, though she saw his and her own Ruin inevitable by the Neglect of it; she exceeded in this Distress, if possible, the Love, Honour, and Respect she had ever shewn him, often telling him, if any thing could endear him more to her, it would be to behave with Courage and Resignation in his present Condition; that all the good and bad Fortune of this Life was but temporary, and that he was certainly the bravest Man who could bear either with Calmness; that the Dread of every Misfortune we see impending, though we cannot shun it, is generally, whilst in Suspense, more painful to the Mind than when overwhelmed by it, for the Horror of it makes the cowardly shrink back and not resist it, and causes him basely to abandon himself and those under his

Pro-

Protection ; we want all your Fortitude, therefore it would be unmanly to desert us now. My Dear, says Mr. *Freeman*, there is nothing left in my Power, for I am undone, and am more grieved for your Sake, my Life, than for my own. I believe, replied she, it is not now in your Power to keep your Credit, for those you are indebted to will take all you have ; for my Sake, whom you profess a sincere Love for, bear this Affliction like a Hero, and keep up your Spirits ; if they take all it is their Property, and it would be both base and treacherous in us to conceal a Pennyworth from them, as they reposed the greatest Confidence in us when they credited us ; it is certain, you lose by this the Appearance you had of Affluence, and therefore must submit that want of Respect from those who have heretofore paid it you, which is only a sort of Homage extorted by those supposed to be rich and powerful from their Inferiors ; reconcile yourself to an humble and low Station, where honest and downright Brutality is only professed ; fear not then, for you can fall no lower ; if I have no more than twenty Shillings to begin with, I do not fear getting a Support for us both, and have no Occasion to humble ourselves to any Man ; my Father, you know is a Farmer, and in good Circumstances, though I have been a dutiful Child to him, and believe he loves me, yet I would rather turn Basket-woman in a Market than you should be seen a Dependant in his Family ; I believe, when he hears of our Distress, he will relieve us, and all I expect on your Part is, to take such Care of yourself as not to leave us without a Husband or Father, to approve or disapprove of our good or bad Actions ; I can part with the expensive Gewgaws you generously provided for me, with as much Ease as the Toys of Infancy, and hope to appear as lovely in your sight in a Suit of home-

spun Grey; summon your Creditors and give them all you have, they can expect no more; and it is better to receive the Blow at once than to live in perpetual Fear of it.

Mr. *Freeman*, now almost broken hearted, told her he would take a little time to consider of what was best to be done.

In Consultations of this kind did this afflicted Couple spend the greatest Part of their Time. But one Woe seldom comes alone, for it is generally attended by more. Miss *Nancy* was inconsolable, and exclaimed by Turns against her Father and Fortune in his hearing, nor would Menaces or Endearments quiet her distracted Mind, she continually calling aloud for her dear *William*, and would say to her Father, when she became a little calm, Sir, I have been a Curse to you by loving *William*, it was not a voluntary Affection, I assure you, it was out of my Power to prevent it, for all who knew him admired him; but you have ruined yourself and undone me for ever, by sending him away; all the Hopes of Comfort I now have is to lose my Reason, which she certainly did, notwithstanding all the Pains her Father and Mother took to prevent it, who got the best Physicians in *London* to attend her, and worthy Clergymen often to talk to her; she grew at last so turbulent and noisy that it was insufferable to live in a House with her, upon which she was removed to Dr. *Newton's* Mad-house near *Islington*, who had three Pounds a Week for taking Care of her. Her Mother constantly visited her, and as often shed sincere Tears; she once brought her home, thinking she was recovered, but the constant sight of her Father made her as outrageous as ever, she was obliged to be sent back again; and never saw him after.

Mr.

Mr. *Freeman* was a Man of more Pride than Fortitude, and could not resist the Wound this Reverse of Fortune gave him, which from a happy Sunshine was now, by gathering Clouds of various Colours, benighted for ever, as he thought. Mrs. *Freeman* continually endeavoured to comfort and encourage him to resist with Manhood the Frowns of Fortune, explaining to him how her Industry should be employed in his Service, from a Beginning of ten thousand Pounds, down to all Gradations of Numbers till it came to one, saying, she would act for him with equal Chearfulness in all Stations of Life, and would never murmur at any Necessity, provided he was patient; but alas! the frequent Raps of his impatient Creditors at his Door, affected him so that he took to his Bed, and died in twenty-four Days, leaving behind him a Widow not twenty-three Years of Age, and as fine a Woman as any in *England*.

She had now an Opportunity of making her Fortune, which her Friends in general recommended to her; for, notwithstanding her Husband's Debts exceeded forty thousand Pounds, she had upwards of thirty thousand Pounds worth of Effects in her Hands which the Creditors could never come to the Knowledge of, or at least not above half; however, he was decently buried; and she administered, making herself acquainted with every Shillings worth he left behind him; then, contrary to the Advice of her nearest Relations, she summoned all his Creditors to meet at her House a few Days afterwards, which they all did except two, who were in Confinement for smaller Debts than Mr. *Freeman* owed them; having both her Children with her, she addressed the Creditors in the following Manner.

Gentle-

Gentlemen, the Fear of Want hereafter to myself, or to those Babes you now see, who are dearer to me than Life, shall not make me conceal to the Value of a Shilling from you; I will neither secure them nor myself from the Miseries which perhaps are before us, by the Spoils of those who confided in their Father, and I am therefore determined not to plunder for them; all that I request is, that you will please to admit me upon the footing of a Creditor: I had but eighteen hundred Pounds Fortune, which I hope you will be so generous as to return me, and I shall for ever acknowledge your Goodness; I do not mean by this to lay you under any sort of Obligation to do so, if you do not look upon it as a Debt of Conscience. Here is a Schedule of the whole Mr. *Freeman* died worth, likewise of all he owed, and I declare to you, upon my Word, I don't know of any thing left out of it.

The Creditors had a very high Opinion of her Worth and Honour, and when they read the Schedule, which was sixteen thousand Pounds more than they had expected, they gratefully rased out her Watch, Wearing Apparel, and some Rings, not worth three hundred Pounds, though if Mr. *Freeman* had his Will, he would have purchased Jewels and other valuable Things for her, that would have amounted to above a thousand.

The Creditors consulted privately, and some of them were for giving her five thousand Pounds out of the Effects, but this being opposed by the major Part of them, they at last agreed to give her two thousand, together with what they had before rased out.

When the Goods were disposed of each of the Creditors received fifteen Shillings in the Pound of what was due, but those who were in Gaol, by Mrs. *Freeman*'s Importunity, received more, by which

which Means they got themselves enlarged. She was extremely thankful for what they had allowed her, which was much more agreeable to her strict Honour, and with which she was better satisfied than if she had secreted the Value of ten thousand Pounds, and have been liable to Suits at Law for her Life.

She was now as much extolled for Moral Virtue as she had been celebrated for Beauty. She discharged all her Servants, except one Maid and a Clerk, which she was under a Necessity to keep, to settle a Variety of little Accounts for her and the Creditors, and continued some Months in the House she had been Mistress of before, but occupied only a Part of it, observing the strictest Frugality; she went three times a Week to see the unfortunate Miss *Nancy*, for whom she regularly paid twelve Pounds a Month.

In the fifth Month of her Widowhood one of her late Husband's Creditors, who had buried his Wife but ten Days, paid his Addresses to her, but she with a Frown dismissed him.

Not caring to venture her Money in Trade, she entrusted her Clerk to put it into the Stocks for her, which was very close upon two thousand Pounds, instead of doing as she desired him, he ran away, and the first News she heard of him was that he died in *Holland*; this quite ruined her Fortune; he likewise defrauded the Creditors of upwards of four thousand Pounds.

This Misfortune affected poor Miss *Nancy*, whom Mrs. *Freeman* would not neglect, to save her own or her Childrens Lives; she pledged her Watch, and going to the Mad-house where Miss *Nancy* was, told the Keeper the Loss she had sustained, and assured him that she was not able to support her any longer, and paying six Pounds for the last

Fort-

Fortnight, removed her a few Days after to *Bedlam* in *Moorfields*, where she still continued to visit her.

Notwithstanding her boasted Courage to her Husband in his Life-time, this last Stroke had a great Effect upon her, and occasioned her to send for the Minister of the Parish, who used to visit her when in Prosperity; when he came she addressed herself to him thus, Sir, my Husband and I always thought ourselves happy in your Conversation, we loved and liked you, because we believ'd you to be a Gentleman of good Example, the Remembrance of which makes me now desirous to explain myself to you; the People of this Neighbourhood and you know how altered my Circumstances are of late, I have been obliged to pawn my Watch, and have nothing left but my Wearing Apparel, except a few Trifles; the most severe Misfortune to me is, that I have not that Greatness of Mind with which I thought myself possessed, which would enable me to look upon all temporal Evils with Contempt, and resist them virtuously with my utmost Ability; I must now acquaint you with the Causes, which are these [presenting her two Children to him] they soften me into an Insensibility how to provide for them. Your present Condition, Madam, replied the Clergyman, grieves me to the Soul, but I have so thorough and perfect a Faith in God, that I am perswaded none who are possessed of such exalted Virtue as yours will ever be long distressed; I have really made it a Remark for upwards of forty Years, that People of good Lives have been surprisngly relieved when they least expected it; have you no Dependance upon your Father? I have not, said she, for I wrote several Letters to him, which he returned no Answer to, though I am well informed he received them. Do you and your Children
come

come and live with me, says he, for I am sure you will be as welcome to my Wife as to myself. Sir, replied she, I beg your Pardon, for I cannot accept of your Invitation, but request you would advise me what Method to pursue to get a Livelihood in my present Circumstances, before they are worse. I declare, says he, I am at a Loss what to advise you to, but one Thing I insist upon, which is, that you accept of my Note for fifty Pounds, payable in three Months, it will then be in my Power to discharge it, and in the mean time you may get it discounted by some Person that is acquainted with me, for I shall not enjoy a Minute's Peace whilst you are in such Necessity. Sir, replied Mrs. *Freeman*, I know you are too good a Man to have a Pound to spare, if your Income was double what it is, and therefore I will take nothing from you, but desire your Interest in the Parish, which I know is strong and prevailing. You may command it, Madam, says he. I believe, Sir, says she, the Apparel and Trinkets I have will sell for above two hundred Pounds, and I would willingly employ it in the Grocery Trade, but as I am not well skilled in the Business, would request you to recommend me to some Grocer, and become Bail for me, with whom I might continue a few Months, till I learn how to parcel, and to buy and sell such Goods as may be fit for a little Shop of that Kind; it is probable that those you recommend me to may know me, if so, pray assure them, that my Thoughts are as humble to get an honest Livelihood as if I had never been acquainted with a high Station, and that if I had Vanities they are gone with my Fortune. He replied, this was a happy Thought of yours, I will myself get you the best Business in this Parish till you are established, and I am sure you are so well known that you may, upon your own bare Word, get ten thousand

and Pounds worth of Goods, and have People pressing them upon you; I shall not be easy till I settle you, and it must be where you are known, therefore I will go about it instantly, and accordingly took his Leave.

He had not been long gone before she heard a Chairman's Rap at the Door, which surprized her, not having been accustomed to the like for some Months before; she soon after saw old *Landers*, supported by the Chairmen. Mrs. *Freeman* knew him, and told him she was sorry he gave himself so much Trouble, that if she had known he had any Business with her, she would have gone to him. He answered, it was his Duty to wait upon her in any Circumstances she was in, and that he came now to shew her a Letter he had received from *William*, Part of the Contents of which related to her, he accordingly gave it to her, which she read, and is as follows.

Gibraltar.

Honoured Sir,

LONG before now, I believe, you have heard of our Ship's being taken, and all the Hands aboard being made Slaves of in *Barbary*. I got thus far from them by the Friendship of the *French* Consul's Secretary, who is bound for my Return, or to pay three hundred Pounds Ransom; he put us aboard a *French* Ship, which is to carry me back, as I cannot raise that Sum here, which I expected to do; I applied to several and was refused, but all advised me not to keep Faith with Barbarians, not even regarding the *French* Gentleman that was responsible for the Money in a few Days, or my Return.

A thou-

A thousand Lives and Freedoms I would sooner abandon than betray the Trust reposed in me, to regain my Liberty; send therefore three hundred Pounds to the *French* Consul at *Tunis*, which will enlarge me, and enable me to buy Necessaries for coming home; I need not urge you to be expeditious in this Affair, as I know you love me and shall for that Reason leave it to yourself.

I have heard in this Place the sorrowful News of Mr. *Freeman's* Death, which makes all his extraordinary Kindnesses and good Acts recur afresh in my Memory. I am grieved it was not in his Power to leave his Family in a better Way. I hope my Congratulations tho' a captive Slave, will be accepted by Mrs. *Freeman*, on the just and honourable Distribution she made of the Effects her Husband died possessed of among his Creditors. I think they were not generous enough to her, to demonstrate the dear Remembrance I have of Mr. *Freeman's* Memory. In case I die or never return, my Will and Desire is, that out of the Interest of five thousand Pounds I have in the Stocks, the Securities of which are in your Hands, Mrs. *Freeman* my former Mistress may get and receive for her own and her Children's Use, one Half of the Interest of the said five thousand Pounds, Miss *Nancy Freeman* her Step-daughter one fourth of it, yourself and your Wife the other fourth, to enjoy it during your Lives, or any of you, and afterwards to go to the School I was bred in, under you for ever, to be disposed of as the Governors of it think proper. This Part of my Letter leave in Mrs. *Freeman's* Hands. In the mean time, let none that belonged to Mr. *Freeman* be distressed, while I have Money in the Stocks, for all I have I got by him.

If I return, depend upon it I shall devote my Life to serve you all; this is all the Business contained in this Letter, the Remainder is only for your own Amusement, being a short Recital of my Usage, and the Remarks I made in *Africa*, where taken Prisoner. We were all brought to *Tunis*, and with a vast Number of our Countrymen taken out of other Ships there, publicly exposed in the open Market Place, and our Limbs minutely examined. I had the Misfortune to be liked, and a higher Price set upon me than ordinary, whoever buys us is obliged to return us upon the Payment of such a Ransom as is laid upon our Heads, our Purchaser is to receive his full Money out of it, and has our Work for our keeping. I was bought by a rich Man whose Country House is where *Carthage* formerly stood; and used mercifully by him.

I found in the same Slavery an *Englishman* who had been there fifteen Years before me, he understood their Language well, and seemed reconciled with living there for ever; he was a great Favourite of our Masters and a very intelligent Man; he traced Part of old *Carthage* with me, and told me there was no Records there to shew its former greatness; that the best Accounts of it was their old barbarous Songs, in which Mention is often made of *Sicheus*, *Pigmalion*, *Dido* and *Æneas*; there are still some Vestigias of it, such as Pieces of the Walls, the Remains of a triumphal Arch, supposed to be erected soon after the Battle of *Canne*, to perpetuate that memorable Day, and *Hannibal's* Fame, out of which his very Name was raised afterwards.

For many Centuries after the Destruction of *Carthage*, this Part of *Africa* was little regarded by the *Romans*, till the Decline of their own Empire approached, then their Senate as if infatuated

or

or determined to ruin their Country, encouraged Tillage here and prevented it at home, by applying most of the Corn Grounds to Pasturage, which amazingly depopulated the Country in a few Generations, and obliged the *Romans* to recruit their Legions out of the barbarous Nations near them, for want of their own natural Inhabitants, who were banished from their old and well beloved Abodes, to make way for Flocks and Herds, which were more acceptable to those miscreant Lawgivers than their own Specie.

The few remaining Inhabitants were continually in Danger of Famine, as they relied upon the Barbarians for their Bread, and not upon their own Country, the Soil of which was, by one Means or other locked up from the industrious Poor.

Italy, which for so many Ages was Mistress of the World, was likewise with *Sicily*, the Granary of Mankind, in a flourishing State, till wicked Emperors and Senators neglected every Cause that had before contributed to its former Majesty; their Views were confined to their own Times and particular Interests, and their Arts used to prevent Agriculture, till, in process of Time, that Land, formerly famous for its abundant Fertility and its infinite Inhabitants, became so rank as rendered the Air infectious to human Constitutions to breathe in, by the noxious Vapours arising from it, which is the present Condition of most of *St. Peter's* Patrimony and other Parts of *Italy*, heretofore the richest Soils they had. In these cursed Days, the few Yeomanry that remained were the most miserable Objects in the World, and the want of Tillage increased their Wretchedness.

Barbary then began to rear its Head again, and to have *Rome* dependent upon it for Bread, and at last was obliged to the very Barbarians for their

A a

daily

If I return, depend upon it I shall devote my Life to serve you all; this is all the Business contained in this Letter, the Remainder is only for your own Amusement, being a short Recital of my Usage, and the Remarks I made in *Africa*, where taken Prisoner. We were all brought to *Tunis*, and with a vast Number of our Countrymen taken out of other Ships there, publicly exposed in the open Market Place, and our Limbs minutely examined. I had the Misfortune to be liked, and a higher Price set upon me than ordinary, whoever buys us is obliged to return us upon the Payment of such a Ransom as is laid upon our Heads, our Purchaser is to receive his full Money out of it, and has our Work for our keeping. I was bought by a rich Man whose Country House is where *Carthage* formerly stood; and used mercifully by him.

I found in the same Slavery an *Englishman* who had been there fifteen Years before me, he understood their Language well, and seemed reconciled with living there for ever; he was a great Favourite of our Masters and a very intelligent Man; he traced Part of old *Carthage* with me, and told me there was no Records there to shew its former greatness; that the best Accounts of it was their old barbarous Songs, in which Mention is often made of *Sicheus*, *Pigmalion*, *Dido* and *Aeneas*; there are still some Vestigias of it, such as Pieces of the Walls, the Remains of a triumphal Arch, supposed to be erected soon after the Battle of *Canne*, to perpetuate that memorable Day, and *Hannibal's* Fame, out of which his very Name was raised afterwards.

For many Centuries after the Destruction of *Carthage*, this Part of *Africa* was little regarded by the *Romans*, till the Decline of their own Empire approached, then their Senate as if infatuated

or

or determined to ruin their Country, encouraged Tillage here and prevented it at home, by applying most of the Corn Grounds to Pasturage, which amazingly depopulated the Country in a few Generations, and obliged the *Romans* to recruit their Legions out of the barbarous Nations near them, for want of their own natural Inhabitants, who were banished from their old and well beloved Abodes, to make way for Flocks and Herds, which were more acceptable to those miscreant Lawgivers than their own Specie.

The few remaining Inhabitants were continually in Danger of Famine, as they relied upon the Barbarians for their Bread, and not upon their own Country, the Soil of which was, by one Means or other locked up from the industrious Poor.

Italy, which for so many Ages was Mistress of the World, was likewise with *Sicily*, the Granary of Mankind, in a flourishing State, till wicked Emperors and Senators neglected every Cause that had before contributed to its former Majesty; their Views were confined to their own Times and particular Interests, and their Arts used to prevent Agriculture, till, in process of Time, that Land, formerly famous for its abundant Fertility and its infinite Inhabitants, became so rank as rendered the Air infectious to human Constitutions to breathe in, by the noxious Vapours arising from it, which is the present Condition of most of *St. Peter's* Patrimony and other Parts of *Italy*, heretofore the richest Soils they had. In these cursed Days, the few Yeomanry that remained were the most miserable Objects in the World, and the want of Tillage increased their Wretchedness.

Barbary then began to rear its Head again, and to have *Rome* dependent upon it for Bread, and at last was obliged to the very Barbarians for their

A a

daily

daily Food, whom she had fed whilst in her Glory.

Genferich, King of the *Vandals*, made a Conquest of *Barbary*, and settled himself in the sovereign Authority; he invaded *Italy*, and took *Rome*, which he sacked and plundered unmercifully. In several Sieges, the *Romans* suffered as much by Famine as ever any City did.

Barbary is now divided into many States, which States are continually insulting the Powers of *Christendom*, and have made all that Trade in a manner tributary to them; they themselves are under the Protection of his Sublime Highness the Grand Seignior.

I leave you to judge, or any other reasonable Person, what the Opinion ought justly to be of the *Ottoman* and of our Christian Powers, who pay such Homage to *Turkish* Vassals, notwithstanding their awful and brilliant Courts at home.

By all I can learn, the Continuance of the *Ottoman* Power is mostly to be attributed to the Justice administered in their Armies, and the great Plenty of the Necessaries of Life enjoined by their Government to be cultivated throughout this vast Empire.

For the last Excellence, as to the Encouragement of Tillage, our *British* Parliament are renowned in every Place I have been for the Plenty that is in *England*, and having it in their Power to relieve those Nations that are distressed by Famine: The same wise and material Care in *Poland* very much qualifies the Slavery of its common People, and renders them able to bear their Chains, as they are not subject to that great Tyrant, Hunger, whilst they are willing and able to work.

I have

I have heard nothing of Miss *Nancy*, but that her Father got her Fortune, and unhappily lost it in Trade; desire her from me not to be dismayed, and assure her I will take Care of her Interest, if I live, and am particularly concerned for the Loss of the Things I had for her. I am to go back as soon as the Wind permits us to sail. I am,

Honoured Sir,

Your dutiful and adopted Son,

William Gate.

Mrs. *Freeman* read all this Letter with more Patience than could be expected.

The worthy Clergyman returned, who went out to provide a fit Place where she might be instructed in Shop Business, and told her, Mr. *Landers* being yet with her, that he had fixed upon her Neighbour Mr. *Jebb's*, who promised he would behave as well to her as if she was his own Child. Mrs. *Freeman* then shewed him the Letter Mr. *Landers* had received from *William*, with whom he was well acquainted; after he had read it, she asked him to give his Opinion freely, saying, Mr. *Landers* was her Friend, and she would be glad to have the Advice of both of them as to what she ought to do.

In the course of this Consultation Mr. *Landers* was thoroughly informed of her Circumstances; he then proposed to Parson *Tilson*, that she should defer going into Business till *William* was consulted, whose Ransom he would send that Day, and in the mean time she and her Children should live with him till *William* returned, which Mr. *Tilson* readily agreed to; he then said, that all he had was owing to *William* and Mr. *Freeman*, for which

Reason, whilst he had a Shilling it should be at her Service; that his Circumstances were very easy and happy, and that he had nothing to trouble him but *William's* Absence, which he feared would break his Heart if it continued much longer; that he was his only Child, and to be possessed of the whole Kingdom of *England* would not compensate the Loss of him; he then insisted, as he knew it would be acceptable to *William*, and his Gratitude to the Memory of her Husband required it, that she and her Children, without Hesitation, should come to his House the next Day, at the same time assuring her that he had a very good Apartment ready to receive her, and then intreated her to accept of a fifty Pound Note to answer her present Occasions. She modestly refused both, but Parson *Tilson* at last prevailed on her to comply, which she did weeping.

Her little Boy came into the Parlour, a lovely Child about three Years old, holding a Part of his Frock in his Hand that had a Lump tied up in it, and seemed greatly pleased; his Mamma opened it, to her great Surprise found it contain'd fifteen Guineas, which she suspected Mr. *Tilson* to have put there, he having been with the Children some time before; she insisted that he would declare whether he had done it, of which he satisfied her, by confessing that he could not fix on any other Method to prevail on her to take it. She then said to him, Sir, you see I have been already well supplied by Mr. *Landers*, for which Reason you must positively take it again, for I will not keep it; she also addressed herself to Mr. *Landers*, saying, Sir, you must excuse me for not accepting your Note on any other account than to be chargeable with it as a Debt, and to pay you for the Time we shall stay with you, if you agree to this I shall be very well satisfied. Mr. *Landers* replied,

ed, I will agree, Madam, to any thing you please. She then said to Mr. *Landers*, I will go this Afternoon to poor *Nancy* and shew her the Letter, and in the Moring repair to your House, where I hope, Mr. *Tilson*, you will call and see us. Mr. *Tilson* replied, Depend upon it, Madam, for I regard you as my particular Charge, and will take all the Care in my Power to see you well provided for.

Matters being thus settled they withdrew, and Mrs. *Freeman* went to see *Nancy*, who happened to be pretty calm, and was always overjoyed to see her; when she got *William's* Letter in her Hands, she was quite transported with Joy, for she knew his Hand-writing well, and said, had I known he was alive, I would not have come to the Pass I am in. As she perused it, she made Remarks upon every Part of it; at last coming to what related to herself, she seemed to be roused, and said to Mrs. *Freeman*, He has lost the Things he had for me, pray what were they? She replied, indeed I don't know. I must know, says *Nancy*, for then I can enjoy them as well as if I had them in Possession; I fear his Head is a little turned, because he writes so much upon good and bad Government, and omits the Particulars of what he intended for me, which I think is much more material; if you find that to be his Case, send him here, you see there is room enough for him with me.

Mrs. *Freeman* desired *Nancy* to give her back the Letter when she had read it, but she begged her Pardon, declaring she would as soon part with her Life, and that the Contents were as much to her as to any other Person. Mrs. *Freeman* assured her it was a Letter of Consequence, and that she was obliged to return it, and would never call to see her again if she did not give it. *Nancy* replied,

plied, I value my own Ease more than any Consequence, and if you don't come to see me I shall not want Company whilst I have his Letter, and assure you, if any of the Keepers attempt to force it from me I will tear it to Pieces.

Mrs. *Freeman* was greatly embarrassed, and applied to some of the Keepers to endeavour to get the Letter from her by fair Means, promising to reward them if they did; they assured her they would endeavour to steal it from her the first Opportunity.

Mrs. *Freeman* went away greatly dissatisfied, and called again the next Morning, to try if she could prevail upon *Nancy* to give up the Letter, but all her Endeavours were fruitless; she afterwards took Coach and went to Mr. *Landers's*; she liked him and his Wife so well, that in a few Days she disposed of her Furniture, and entirely quitted her former House.

Before this time Mr. *Landers* paid the Money for purchasing *William's* Ransom to a Jew Merchant, who was to send it to the *French* Consul at *Tunis*.

Mrs. *Freeman* greatly endeared herself to Mr. *Landers* and his Wife, by constantly doing one Thing or another that was agreeable in their small Family.

The Governor and President of the School took friendly Notice of Mrs. *Freeman*, and greatly applauded the Gratitude of Mr. *Landers* to her late Husband. The second time of their assembling after she came there, one of the Governors waited upon her, and told her that his Brothers desired to see her, and if she pleased he was ready to introduce her. She went with him, when she entered the Room in which they were, they requested she would be seated, after which the President addressed her thus,

Madam,

Madam, my Brethren here present have appointed me to inform you, that they have considered your Conduct since their Acquaintance with you and the Misfortunes of Mr. *Freeman*, your late Husband; they are likewise sensible how justly you disposed of his Effects, and the Loss you sustained by your Clerk's running away with the Money you entrusted him to put into the Stocks: Mr. *Freeman's* being one of the Governors and late President of this House, has determined us all to give five hundred Pounds to each of your Children, to be laid out directly in the Stocks for their Use, and the Interest of it to be given to you for taking Care of them till they are able to apply it to their own Advantage; we likewise make you a Present of fifty Pounds a Year for your Life, secured in the same Manner, with this Exception, that the Principal is to revert, after your Death, to those who give you the Use of it. I am also directed to inform you, that the Gentlemen who have conferred this Favour upon you are not induced to it either by your Youth or the Beauties of your Person, but the high Opinion they have of the Charms of your Mind and distressed Virtue, are the Motives that prevailed with them. Thus to distinguish you for your happy Morals, Madam, is a greater Honour to you than if you had got ten times as much by the ordinary and common Courses of Fortune or Industry. The only Return we expect from you is, to imprint this Benefit upon your Childrens Minds, so that they may never forget it, and convince them, if ever they should have it in their Power, how incumbent it is upon them to return the like Benevolence to those whom they find worthy, and are in Need of it.

These Gentlemen likewise sent Mr. *Landers* a Present of thirty Pounds, which they directed to be laid out in Plate, as a Reward for the Notice he had taken of Mrs. *Freeman*. She then thankfully said, that the Manner in which they had so bountifully provided for her and her Children, made it of infinite Value to her, having neither applied for their Assistance or in the least expected it, and that she would be particularly careful to fulfil what had been recommended to her concerning the Children and herself. The Gentlemen severally requested she would visit them at their Houses, which she promised to do, and then withdrew. The same Evening the Secretary waited upon her with Securities, by which she was enabled to assure herself a comfortable Support.

Soon after this she became Friends with Miss *Nancy*, who could not be prevailed upon to part with the Letter; she frequently went to see her, and *Nancy* always took Care to shew her the Letter at a Distance, to let her see that she had it safe.

King *George* the First ascended the Throne of *England* about five Months before this Time, and gave an immense Sum of Money out of his private Purse to redeem all his Subjects who were in Slavery, which was the greatest and best disposed Charity that had ever been given by a Christian Prince, and his Majesty's good Intention was well executed by those employed in the several States of *Barbary*; according to my Information, there were upwards of fourteen hundred Captives ransomed at that Time, and *William* among the rest, before the Money Mr. *Landers* sent for that Purpose arrived there; they were all brought to *England*, and cloathed at the sole Expence of this wise, valiant and great King.

When

When they had got their new Clothes, near seven hundred of them, one *Sunday* Morning, and *William* among them, walked through a great Part of *London* to *St. Paul's* Church, to which his Majesty was to come that Day in State, in order to return him Thanks for their Redemption. His Majesty accordingly came, but they were advised not to present themselves to him till Service was over, after which his Majesty, being informed of their Desire, walked slowly through them, taking no Notice of any thing else as he passed but them. Every By-stander, who had their Eyes fixed upon him, observed the inward Joy of his great Soul upon viewing those Persons whom his Bounty had delivered out of the Hands of Infidels. As soon as he had got to the End of them he stopped a little, and turned about to look at them again; he then spoke to one of the Lords in waiting, which was immediately explained to them as follows: That his Majesty hoped they would make a good Use of their Liberty for themselves and their Country; that they would thank God for inclining his Heart to purchase their Freedom; that whilst they behaved well they might be assured of his Protection, and desired they would betake themselves to their several Vocations, and that if any of them were ill they should be taken Care of in Hospitals. He then ordered each of them a Guinea for present Support, and after receiving it, they dispersed.

William, and most of those who assembled to thank his Majesty, came only to *London* late the Day before, where they heard he was to go next Day to *St. Paul's*; they were advised to wait upon him there, and publicly acknowledge before him their Obligations to him; they likewise agreed not to see any of their Acquaintances till they had expressed and shewn their Gratitude this way to their Deliverer.

From

From Church *William* directly went to his late Master's House, and saw the Door he so often happily entered before, close shut up, with a Bill upon it, signifying it was to be let. From thence he went to Mr. *Landers*, whom he found with Mrs. *Landers* and Mrs. *Freeman* at Dinner. They were all amazed to see him, but most sincerely and joyfully received him; Mr. *Landers* embraced him, saying, my Life, my Comfort, my Child, you are welcome to those Arms again; I have what you left me safe for you. When the first Indications of real Affection was received by *William* from this Company, he sat down and dined with them, which was the happiest Dinner he had had for a considerable time before. Mr. *Landers* spoke of Mr. *Freeman's* Death, which made *William* take that Opportunity to condole it. Mrs. *Freeman* gave him an Account of all that related to herself since her Husband died, on the Recital of which he appeared affected like a real Friend, and when she concluded, he assured her, his Time and Fortune should be devoted to her Service, till she and Mr. *Freeman's* Children were as happily settled as was in his Power to do it. They all refrained giving him any Account of the unfortunate Miss *Nancy*, as they knew her Case would afflict him; he expected they would of Course speak of her, and waited with some Impatience to no Purpose to hear of her; at length, he says, to Mr. *Landers*, Sir, How does Miss *Nancy Freeman* do? He replied, we should all submit to the Will of God, she is afflicted and mad in *Bedlam*, and has been so from the first News of your being made a Slave of. None can imagine but those who have Souls of equal Goodness and Greatness with him, the Shock it gave him to hear this News, which rendered him speechless for some time; when recovered a little he spoke in great Disorder, Words like

like these; The Loss of Liberty and being a Slave to Infidels, did not affect me, when compared to what I now endure for her Condition, and that I to my Knowledge, who never had a guilty Thought, should be the Occasion of her Destruction; it pierces my very Heart, but I will have her out of where she is, and be her Keeper myself; I am impatient to see her; Mrs. *Freeman* replied, To-morrow, Sir, is one of my visiting Days to see her, and I will then shew you the Way to her; he declared himself greatly obliged to Mrs. *Freeman*, for the Care he was informed she took of her, and both agreed to see poor *Nancy* next Day.

After this Intelligence, nothing could cheer him, but he was melancholy and pensive whilst they staid up; he retired to his Lodging once more, after his long Absence and Wandering, where he received the first Impressions of his Morality.

Early next Morning he got one hundred Pounds from Mr. *Landers*, to dress himself properly, and left his Compliments for Mrs. *Freeman*, and said he would wait upon her at Twelve. He walked to Town, and returned at his appointed Time in a Coach genteely dress'd; Mrs. *Freeman* was ready, and both were drove to *Bedlam*. She was first to speak to Miss *Nancy*, before he appeared to her, to prepare her for the Sight of him, and then they both walked the long Gallery till they came very near Miss *Nancy's* Ward, where *William* stopped; Mrs. *Freeman* advanced two or three Steps and saw her; Miss *Nancy* spoke to her first, saying, I thank you, Madam, for this Visit, have you heard any thing in Relation to *William*? I have, says Mrs. *Freeman*, he will be here soon, the King ransomed him and all his Subjects that were Slaves all over the World. *Nancy* said, I believe you, Madam, I never knew
you

you to tell a Falshood, but what shall I do, if you don't help me to a Place to receive him, and some other Dress to put on, he will be shockingly surprized to see me in this Litter of Straw and Blankets tucked about me for Clothes; I expected to hear of his coming home soon; this Week past I could not put it out of my Head but that he and I sat upon a Throne, and governed the World; I was determined to make you in Rank next to myself; Have you got any Letters of late from him? If you have give them to me? See here, how safe I have his Letter; I have not, replied Mrs. *Freeman*; *Nancy* said, how do you know he will come home soon; Mrs. *Freeman* replied, because most of the Barbary Captives are arrived, and I believe he is in Town. *Nancy* said, I am sure if he be in Town, and the same lovely good and charitable *William*, he will soon come to see me, but I shall be confounded with Shame, if he should find me in this Condition; Mrs. *Freeman* replied, *William* has Sense and Goodness enough to make Allowances for every thing he may see and hear, that relates to you; but one Request I have to make you, is to go into no Flights when you see him, but behave as you do with me now. *Nancy* replied, the Despair of ever seeing him caused all my past Follies, nor can all the Art or Skill of Doctors, or the most refined Reasoning effect my Cure equal to one Sight of him. Dear Madam, without him Sense or Reason would be a Hell to me; let the Ignorant speak as they will of Madness, in the wildest Extravagance of it I am most happy, for then I have *William* with me. *William* that Instant came up to them, and said to Miss *Nancy*, here is *William*, dispose of him as you please.

Reader, I must leave it to your own Judgment to consider the extraordinary Emotions this Meeting occasioned; they were divided by a Wainscot, and obliged

obliged to speak to *Nancy* at a Window that opened to the Gallery. She replied, looking steadfastly at him, you are certainly my *William*, who has stray'd from me for some Years past; *William* my dear, take care of me, and forsake me no more, I have nothing to plead for me but Charity, which would be fruitless from any other Hand but yours. If you have Compassion on me now, I believe it will be for ever acceptable in the Sight of God, and an everlasting Cause of Bliss for you in the Mansions of Heaven. *William* replied, Madam, you may rely upon me, you shall be as happy as it is in my Power to make you, and I will get you out of this Place before Night.

After this they discoursed about half an Hour, in which time she spoke as rationally as any of them, and never after gave the least Indication of a disordered Mind. They agreed Mrs. *Freeman* should go for Clothes for her, and *William* to procure a Power to have her committed to his Care.

Most of all the Governors of Hospitals and Schools in *London* knew him. which made his Solicitations easy to get her out; by the time he returned with Leave of Liberty, Miss *Nancy* was completely dressed by Mrs. *Freeman*, who had carefully kept her Clothes which were exceeding good.

William shewed his Authority to her Keepers, and was generous to them, upon sight of which they gave her up to him. They took Coach, and Miss *Nancy* behaved as if she had only gone to see *Bedlam* out of Curiosity. There has been many Instances of sudden Cures of this Kind there, especially in raging Madness, but not in Melancholy.

When they came to Mrs. *Landers*, he and his Wife were joyfully surprized to see and hear the happy Change in Miss *Nancy*- *William's* first Care was to see how she could be accommodated as to Lodging

Lodging there; the House was convenient and capacious enough; Mrs. *Freeman* kindly requested she may lodge with her, which was very acceptable to all, none but those of equal Goodness with Mrs. *Freeman* would trust themselves in Bed with a Person so lately recovered from violent Madness; but this was the Effects of her Love and Tenderneſs for her. *William* propoſed to this beloved Company, that on Account of Miſs *Nancy's* Recovery, his own Delivery from Slavery, in both which the Hand of Providence ſo ſignally appeared, that they as his deareſt Friends ſhould rejoice with him a Week, without Thought of Buſineſs hereafter, and then would conſider what was beſt to be done. This was agreed to, and never was Company happier than they were, nor never was Man more loved and eſteemed by all than *William* was, who had a favourite Song or two for every one of them to crown the Evenings with; it was obſervd, contrary to Expectation, that Miſs *Nancy* could bear the ſhort Abſences of *William* with great Compoſure and Calmneſs, and became more ceremonious to him, and conſtantly attended Morning and Evening Prayers, with or without ſome of this Company.

William received his Bills from Mr. *Landers*, which amounted to five thouſand Pounds, the Inter-eſt of which anſwer'd more than was ſent to ranſom him, and the Hundred he received ſince he came home.

When the Week was elapſed, they conſulted how to diſpoſe of themſelves as to future Buſineſs; *William* was informed Mrs. *Freeman* intended to keep a Shop till his Letter prevented her, and he now recommended it to her, ſaying the moſt of what he had he would put in her Hands, and that from the Knowledge the World had of her, ſhe would have unlimited Credit. To this ſhe replied,

plied, she was not willing to hazard much, that she did not perfectly understand the Business, that she apprehended there was great Danger in any Trade, where Servants must be entirely depended upon, which must be the Case, when their Masters or Mistresses are ignorant of the Business they deal in, that she never intended it in an extensive Way, but were she able to chuse for herself, it would be a Farm near the City, and could not in that Way be so easily imposed upon as the other, being pretty much bred to the latter, and it suited her Disposition best, being of Opinion, there was more solid and tranquil Happiness in a Country Life, void of Fears and Anxieties, than in a dangerous Hurry of Business in Cities; that in the former Life, Ruin is seen approaching at a Distance, and probably may be avoided; that the latter is often suddenly and unavoidably overwhelmed, to the Surprise of all who knew them, and leave the unhappy Sufferers for ever to lament their hasty and greedy Pursuit of Riches.

William replied, Madam, as to the Business you approve of I cannot advise you, but to accomplish it will give you all the Assistance I can, though I confess your being settled in Town, where I must be, would abundantly be more agreeable to my Inclination, because I may have frequent Opportunities of assuring you the Honour and Esteem I have for you. To have your Advice, says she, and that you may see what I do, is the Reason I desire to live near the Town; I make no Doubt of your Goodness, to give me all the Assistance you can, but I will accept of nothing from you on no other Condition but to lay out what may be necessary to settle me, and afterwards take the Payments as I can make them; I have no Security to give you but myself, therefore if I fail you suffer, if
not,

not, you shall certainly be paid; if you venture, I must request you to provide the Place and Means and let me fall to work. *William* replied, Madam, I will get it done as soon as possible; then addressing himself to Miss *Nancy*, said, All that remains for us is to know your Inclination, Miss; speak it freely before your Friends here, and if in my Power it shall be accomplished. Miss *Nancy* said, Sir, as you are so good to give me Leave to chuse, my greatest Wish and Desire is to live with Mrs. *Freeman*, and to see you as often as possible; your providing for her is taking Care of me.

William and all present expected another kind of Declaration from her, as she made no Secret of her Love for him, and he assured her he would make her as happy that way as he could, and that it should ever be his Practice to do so in every other Respect that related to her.

Business being agreed upon, they afterwards spoke of indifferent Matters, and in a few Days *William* applied to a Land Broker, who purchased the Interest of a large Farm, not two Miles from the *Royal Exchange*, London, which had a very genteel House, Offices, and a fine Garden upon it; the Owner of it kept a very great Dairy, and proposed to sell him all his Stock in Trade; *William* desired only Time to consult Mrs. *Freeman*, to know what Use she intended to make of the Farm.

When he informed her, she was frightened at the greatness of the Undertaking, but told him, a Dairy is what she would wish to keep. He answered, if she permitted him to serve her she should not be in a peddling way in it.

Soon after, the Farmer's Stock and every other Thing of Value or Use to the Land was appraised and paid for by *William*, whose Bargain by all was thought to be very good, but happened to be
very

very dear to him, for the Farmer went into Trade in *London*, which he did not understand, and was broke in less than two Years, and had nothing to rely upon whilst he lived after but *William's* Bounty, who took Care of him, and provided happily for his two Children.

To return. Every Thing being prepared for the Reception of the Ladies, *William* took them there next Day, and wished Mrs. *Freeman* the most happy Success in it, if she had been there seven Years before she could not be more compleatly settled; the Farmer's Servants and Customers were hers now. She then desired to know how much she owed him, he produced the Particulars, which amounted to two thousand eight hundred Pounds, for which Mrs. *Freeman* gave several Bonds payable at different times.

In this great Undertaking she had sixteen Servants employed, and began her Reign with great Ease and Mildness for a Month, which gave some of them Hopes they might impose upon her as they pleased. By this time she judged well of their Inclinations, and dismissed those that were not safe to keep, and soon appeared to be one of the most vigilant Persons that ever followed the Business in that Neighbourhood. Providence accordingly blessed her Industry, for every Week she laid by twelve or thirteen Pounds clear Profit, besides entertaining her Friends and living well. To her Children she carefully gave such Instructions as they were capable of.

William had a Lodging in *London*, but frequently visited the Ladies; he told them he was offered three hundred Pounds a Year to be first Clerk to a *Turkey* Merchant; both the Ladies declared against it, or his ever serving any Merchant; Mrs. *Freeman* advised him to set up for himself, saying, she would soon increase his Stock. *William*, though

he believed himself right, submitted to the Ladies Judgment. He could not bear being idle, and his Stock was small, therefore he entered into Partnership with a Paper Merchant, who likewise carried on the Printing Business. In less than a Year *William*, to his Cost, discovered his Partner had such vicious Extravagancies as neither his Fortune or Virtues could bear with, which made him break off the Partnership at the Loss of twelve hundred Pounds to his Share, and all he had for it was a perfect Knowledge in the Business, which he liked well, and follow'd it after by himself with surprising Success.

In this time poor old Mrs. *Landers* died. Mr. *Landers* was not able to mind the School, and was discharged from it by Order of the Governors, who allowed him a Pension of twenty Pounds a Year for Life. *William* lodged him at Mrs. *Freeman's*, who took as much Care of him as if he had been her own Father.

Miss *Nancy* devoted most of her Time to reading Books of Divinity and constant Attendance at Church, and *William* made her a Present of a very genteel Horse and Chair for that Purpose, which every *Saturday* he made use of to carry him to see them, and generally stay'd till *Monday*.

In the course of these Visits, *William* told Miss *Nancy*, in the hearing of Mrs. *Freeman* and Mr. *Landers*, that the Regard she formerly professed for him seemed now to be forgot, that he never was in so fair a way to make her happy as at present, and never more at her Service; to which she very gravely answered, that he got a Rival, which was God, that she would never marry, and requested she no more might be spoke to about it; that she as dearly loved and admired his Virtues as ever, but as to his Person she disclaimed all Right

to it. *William*, as it happen'd, was never in Love with her, but was actuated by a Principle of Gratitude and Goodness, therefore he immediately changed the Subject, and never after mentioned it to her, but sincerely continued his Friendship whilst she lived.

The Sanctity and Resignation of Miss *Nancy* surprized every one who knew her, especially that of her Love for *William*, by the Force of which, for a considerable Time she lost her Reason, to be now so languid, at a Time he was so ready to compleat her Happiness, notwithstanding the Mortification it might be to herself, gained her the Esteem and a kind of Veneration from Numbers who knew her Story, except Mrs. *Freeman*, who often told her of the Folly and Madness in her Conduct to declare against marrying *William*, after the known Afflictions she endured for Love of him; for he was as virtuous as ever, as fine a Person as any in *England*, and they growing rich upon his Bounty, and said, in Romance there was nothing equally extravagant and silly as her unsteady and fickle Disposition. All she said to her could not affect her, but still remained immovable; at length she told Mrs. *Freeman*, if she spoke any more to her upon that Subject she would confine herself to her Room, which made her desist.

For eight Months all went on in the same Manner, in which Time it appeared poor Miss *Nancy* was in a deep Decay, and what was very extraordinary, as she lost Strength and Health her Cheerfulness increased; all the Power of Medicine she was prevailed upon to make use of was to no Purpose, and was pleasant and facetious with them, though she knew Death was certainly near her.

When weak and feeble, she addressed *William* in the Presence of Mrs. *Freeman* and Mr. *Landers*, as follows: My dear *William*, I think it incumbent upon me to satisfy you as to my Reasons for rejecting your unparallelled Goodness to me, in the Offers you made since you came home, and as I would not have these Reasons sink into the Grave eternally with me, now tell you, that by Means unaccountable to me, the Instant I saw you in *Bedlam* my Distraction forsook me, and I believe in that dreadful Convulsion also took with it my former delusive Follies and Vanities, which misled me before, and left my Reason clear and unclouded from the Poison of them, and has since convinced me, by my own Experience, and what I hear of others, that nothing is worthy of our Attention but what leads to everlasting and solid Bliss, and that no Madness can equal the woful Consequences of an eager Pursuit of worldly Interests and Passions, by which Engagements our only material and essential Happiness, as more remote, though certain, is unaccountably neglected by the World, till the last uncertain Moments of Life.

The first Use I made of this way of thinking was impartially to view my own Person, which I could not do before, and then, being honest to myself, saw Nature was not so kind in my Formation as she generally is to others of my Sex, which made me determine, from a Principle of Honour and Justice, which God has since that memorable Day inspired me with, determine that my Person should not be the Reward of all your Excellencies and Virtues; it would be most ungrateful and barbarous in me, when I knew you and myself, to give you my Hand in Wedlock. The World who hears my Story will call it romantic Folly, defend me, *William*, and tell them, since I had my Reason

son my Soul was too great, and I loved you too well to sacrifice you.

Here *William* interrupted her, and was beginning to praise her Person; she immediately silenced him, by saying it was too late to compliment her; and then proceeded, saying to *William* and *Mrs. Freeman*, My chief Obligations to the World are to you both, which I wish gratefully to acknowledge before I leave you, and can I am sure recompence your Goodness to me, if you take my Advice, which is, to join your own Hands in Wedlock; you match in Age, Virtue, Beauty, and Industry; nor can there be more said for either of you, than that you know each other, and the World knows you.

Old *Landers*, who was not apt to speak too much, was seized with some sudden Impulse, and said, it ought to be a Match, for it was a good one.

Mrs. Freeman and *William* were suddenly confounded and embarrassed, as never having the least Declaration or Notion of Love between them before, though as near it as possible by Esteem and Friendship. Miss *Nancy* took Notice of their Confusion, but still continued, saying, there is nothing I desire more than to see you married, because I am sure you will both be happy, and I think it will be an acceptable Service of mine to advise it, in the Sight of God, before whom I hope soon to appear.

Mrs. Freeman interrupted her, and said, My dear *Nancy*, what you now spoke of is extremely odd from you; I fear you have forgot me, imagining I could be prevailed upon to be your Rival, or hear of any Husband whilst your State of Health is so doubtful. *William* spoke to the same Purpose. She replied to both, and assured them she could not die in Peace if she did not see them engaged

before she departed, and then would rest satisfied, as thinking she had no more to do in the World; nor would she speak to either of them for many Days after upon any other Subject.

When they found her so exceedingly intent upon it, and restless to gain this Point, they agreed to it, without the Ceremony of a formal Courtship. This was an incredible Instance of a Lady's Resignation and Generosity, to give up and in a manner compel the Man she loved to Distraction to marry another Lady. Inconceivable was her Chearfulness after this Affair was concluded, and could scarcely think of any thing else, unless at Prayers or speaking of the Immortality of the Soul.

She often used to speak to them of the odd Fantasies she used to have in *Bedlam*, observing the Misfortune of the Ambitious, that they did not raise themselves to a proper pitch of Madness, which would instantly accomplish their most sanguine Wishes, and hold it till cursed with Intervals of Reason.

Towards the Close of her Life she used to have many fainting Fits, but when recovered from them would be chatting among her afflicted Friends; and repined at nothing but the Delays she had in setting out upon her Journey to everlasting Happiness, which her Faith, Resignation, and Repentance assured her of.

Thus she continued a few Days longer, and then, like a Midnight Light almost consumed, which sports and plays, rising and falling on its Parent Fire, as if rejoiced at approaching Ease, vanishes, and leaves human Eyes bewildered; so departed the generous and great Soul of the unfortunate *Nancy*, who for her Years had great Afflictions in the World.

William

William paid all the requisite Honours to her Remains; both he and Mrs. *Freeman* were excessively grieved at her Death.

Poor Miss *Nancy* left it in charge with Mr. *Landers*, to see them married in a Month after her Funeral, which was a Command he liked, and with a kind of fatherly Right he insisted upon it, which was not disagreeable to them, for they now loved each other exceedingly. Their Passion was founded upon Virtue, which is such a Basis as nothing but Death can dissolve.

William's Trade in the City and Mrs. *Freeman's* in the Country were both very successful. But Fortune now comes like a Torrent upon him, Mr. *Landers* had a Brother who died, and left a Fortune of upwards of one hundred thousand Pounds between his Son and Grand Children; the Son died soon after the Father, and all the Grand Children before they came to Maturity, by which Incidents this large Fortune came to old *Landers*. When he got it, without the least Emotion of Joy he said to *William*, Here take this Wealth, let me not be troubled with it, I will only desire you to lay out five thousand Pounds for the School I kept, and one thousand in charitable Uses as you will approve of.

William earnestly recommended to him to keep all his Fortune, except the Charities he mention'd, and that he would rather be a Dependent upon him than get it out of his Hands. Mr. *Landers* replied, that if he did not take it he would give it to Mrs. *Freeman*, and seemed displeased till he took it.

The first Act *William* did, after properly laying out the Charities in Mr. *Landers's* Name, was to settle five thousand Pounds on each of Mrs. *Freeman's* Children, and twenty thousand Pounds in

the Stocks, the Interest of which was for the Use of Mr. *Landers* for Life; with the rest he launched deeply and happily into Trade, and married Mrs. *Freeman* with great Solemnity publicly in Church; neither of them were upwards of twenty-four Years old, and allowed to be as beautiful and good a Pair as any in *England*.

Mrs. *Freeman*, now Mrs. *Gate*, was prevailed upon to quit the Business she followed, except so much of it as supplied her own Family with Necessaries that way. They had a very genteel House in the City, and kept their Country one, where some of her Relations now favoured them with Visits. They had many Children of both Sexes, and in the Course of some Years were as remarkable for their uninterrupted Happiness as any Couple that ever lived. He was presented with his Freedom from many Towns and Corporations, passed with the greatest and best Reputation through all the Honours of the City of *London*, and was one of their Representatives in many Parliaments, where he always acquitted himself to the full Satisfaction of his Constituents, and acquired a vast Fortune, employed many Servants, and provided for them all, if not abandoned in their Morals. *Cæsar's* Soul was not greater than his, as to the Forgiveness of Injuries, and in all his Excellencies of Mind, Mrs. *Gate* his Wife, was equal to him.

I now conclude their History and this Book, with a short Remark, which you may make what Use you please of. In the active Part of my Life I made it my Business to be as observant as possible upon the Conduct of Persons remarkable for Vice or Virtue, and never yet knew one practice the former that had not sensible Afflictions adequate to their Crimes, or any strictly adhere to the

the latter who had not Blessings and Comfort in Proportion to what they possessed of it.

Reader, if you are of the common or vulgar Kind, no more of this Work is intended for you, but designed only for the Perusal of succeeding Authors, to crave their Assistance in another Work I have almost ready, and to give them some Advice in their Practice, if obliged to write for Bread.

The Relation of scheming the flat-bottom'd Boats cannot with Safety be printed, I therefore hope the Publick will pardon me.

TO



T O A L L

Scriblers and Writers.

Dear Brothers,

OF all Species, and of all Times present and to come, Experience has proved the Utility to all Trades, to form themselves into distinct and corporate Bodies, without Exception, as to the Knowledge of any Person to the Trade he professes, but receive him as a Brother, if he performs the Requisites. We have been earlier in the World than most Trades now in Use, and yet we have neglected this Sort of Policy very much, to commune with one another; many a Roost in *Dublin* have I searched for some of you, which was all fruitless, to consult you upon this unhappy Omission, and if possible to form a Society among ourselves, to have our Correspondents in all the Counties and Towns of *Ireland*, to furnish us with all the remarkable Intelligence from their several Divisions; but despairing of Success this Way, by not finding of you, I send this abroad to seek you, and advise you in the Subscription Way, if you write for Bread, by laying my own Practice before you, for which Service I intend to enjoin you to some Things which you shall know before we part.

When

When my former Work was published, I lay hush for some time, till I received several Letters from my Printer, encouraging me to prepare a second Volume, that my first was going off fast, which it certainly did, all being sold except half a Dozen Books, which I desired him to keep for Subscribers.

I took with me a faithful Servant I brought from *England*, with a Parcel of my Books and new Specimens, the North-East Circuit, but before that began, I went to *Mullingar*, and gave the Rt. Hon. the Earl of *Belvedere* a Specimen and Book; he was exceeding bountiful to me, his Lordship being famed for Goodness and in his Friendship sincere, a Soul elevated above Falshood or Oppression, courteous to all who come in his Way, and distinguished for his Courage. Afterwards I gave a Specimen to the Honourable *Brinsley Butler*, now the Honourable Lord *Newtonbutler*, then Foreman of the Grand-Jury, by his Interest I got all the Gentlemen of the Jury to subscribe; he is Son-in-Law to the abovementioned Lord, and is a young Nobleman remarkable for Sobriety, good Sense, Humanity, and captivating all his Acquaintances. I likewise gave the renowned *Anthony Malone*, Esq; a Specimen and Book, who was also very generous to me; I am obliged in particular to all his Name, and to most of the Gentlemen of *Westmeath*, and particularly to *Duke Tyrrell*, Esq; a Gentleman greatly valued and esteemed.

I must now observe to you Brothers, that bad Men never will nor never did patronize an Author, except upon Party Affairs, but from the Malignity of their Dispositions, will use their Endeavours to damn them, unread or unheard. My Practice is in strange Places, where I have no friendly Aid, to fasten upon at Assizes, I view the Ground where most Gentlemen are apt to assemble, and
remark

remark my Stations for the Hours of Action; my next Care is to look at them all with great Circumspection; when my Judgment as to their Faces are formed, I then without any Introduction offer my Specimens to those I like best; as to the Reception of them, I am rarely disappointed this Way, I have certainly experienced that the Countenance is an Index to the Mind, but must be cautious not to give Specimens without a Patron, where too many are together, for if one objects which is generally the Case, they all do.

But to proceed; From *Mullingar* I went to *Longford*, where I got some Subscribers; from thence I went to *Trim*, where Counsellor *Chapman* disposed of twenty, Mr. *Tool* ten, and *Daniel Kanning*, Esq; fourteen. Here I was introduced to *John Colpoys*, Esq; Register to Lord Chief Justice *York*, a Gentleman the most universally beloved and esteemed of any Person I ever knew, famed for the Goodness and Humanity of his Disposition, and most justly so, he put off one hundred and twenty Specimens for me, upon this Circuit. From thence I went to *Drogheda* and *Dundalk*, then to *Monaghan* and *Armagh*, where the Right Hon. Lord *Charlemount* and *Thomas Adderley*, Esq; were both very bountiful to me in Gold. Lord *Charlemount* has not only made the Tour of *Europe*, but has travelled most of the vast *Turkish* Empire; to finish the Character of a great and good Man is to say he is like Lord *Charlemount*. Incredible are the Sums of Money laid out by him in clearing Goals of unfortunate Debtors, and a variety of other unbounded Charities. As to the Love and Esteem the Publick have for Mr. *Adderley* it is sufficiently demonstrated by the Presents he receives of his Freedom from Corporations, for his Wisdom, Virtue and Conduct in Parliament. I was also greatly obliged to Colonel *Graham*, a Gentleman beloved and esteemed.

esteemed. From thence I went to *Belfast*, about forty Miles of which are the best inhabited and best improved Country I ever saw; this is a rich Town of good Trade and excellent People; from thence to *Carrickfergus*, here — *Roan*, Esq; High Sheriff of the County of *Antrim* patronized me, a young Gentleman of known Worth, Goodness, and Honour, and engaged me to see him at his House in *Lisburn*, a beautiful Inland Town, which I did afterwards, and was kindly received by him. From thence I went to *Downpatrick*, where the Circuit ended.

By the List of Subscribers you will find I got a great many in this Ramble. From this Town I went to the Races of *Boyle*, an unfortunate Journey of ninety five Miles, occasioned by my own Imprudence. When I arrived here I first applied to the Hon. *Henry King*, and to — *Knox*, Esqrs. who were bountiful to me in Gold, and patronized me. It is inconceivable to hear how greatly Lord *Kingsborough's* Death was deplored by all Degrees of People for his unlimited Goodness, and Sweetness of Temper; so happy was he in these Excellencies and all the humane Virtues, that he has scarcely left an equal behind him. His Brother *Henry*, who possesses his Estate is greatly loved and esteemed for his amiable Qualities, and by all I can hear and learn the whole Family of them are blessed with an uncommon Sweetness of Disposition, and Propensity to Goodness. I had Reason to share in Grief for my Lord's Death, but being for some time before determined, never to be affected by the Joys or Sorrows of the World, no more than a Spectator ought to be of Things indifferent to him, which Resolution I was greatly in need of after.

A hundred

A hundred Pounds was my Mark, to make me easy in the World; at this time I had forty Guineas, I joined a Person of Fortune and Distinction at a Hazard Table, upon his Hand and my own I soon lost every Piece of Gold I had; Fortune that never before quite abandoned me, now declared against me.

Next Day Mr. *Knox* and Mr. *King*, who were Witnesses of my unhappy Conduct, subscribed a Guinea each to me, tho' they were very generous two Days before, on the same Account. This furnished me with Money enough, to pay my Bill at the Inn, and about nine Shillings over; upon all Disasters I consulted my Servant, and especially this great one. After mature Deliberation we agreed to travel which ever Way the Wind blew to, and to change our Course as it varied. Thus resolved, we rode off, or rather set Sail, upon a hopeless Voyage, bound for no Port, certain of nothing but Distresses and a fair Wind. Publick Meetings in the Country were over, our chief Dependence was about twenty Books, and a sufficient Number of Specimens. I determined to call at every good or snug House I saw to try to sell a Book or put off a Specimen; the Weather was exceeding stormy, being about the 28th of *September*, we were benighted about six Miles from *Boyle*, on the Road to *Athlone*; no Inn being near us, we set up at an old Cabbin on the Road, and agreed with the Owner to give him his Demand, which was two Shillings for our Lodging, and Entertainment that Night, which blew so dreadful a Tempest, that about two o'Clock in the Morning, my Host awoke me, and said his House was almost down, and advised me to get up; half the Roof was in upon the Floor at this Time, but the Part I was in seemed to stand the Storm; upon which I made Answer, I would not stir till Morning, and said, I
heard

heard of Authors starving, but never any crushed to death by the Fall of Houses. Miserable was the Havock the Hurricane made of this poor Cottage, and many others.

We went off in the Morning, and staid a Night at *Roscommon*, and afterwards with a fair Wind entered *Athlone*, where upon a strict Examination, I found myself Master only of fourteen Pence.

I set up at one of the best Inns, and determined to use all my Industry to dispose of Books and Specimens; I accordingly fell to Work, and in half a Day got ten Crowns. I was particularly obliged to ——— *St. George*, Esq; who bought the first Book; I got Subscribers in his House, and was hospitably entertained by him. This Gentleman is so beloved in this Town, that he is always welcomed home from Parliament, or elsewhere, by Bonfires, and other publick Demonstrations of Joy.

From thence I went to *Moatagrenoge*, eight Miles from *Athlone*; near the Road at a Gentleman's House, I disposed of two Books and four Specimens. I am sorry I cannot say it was a fair Wind to this Town that drove me to it; however, I set up at the best Inn, kept by *Robert Ward*; the first Night of my being there, my poor Servant was taken very ill, next Day it appeared he had a Fever, which delayed me longer than I expected. The learned and worthy Doctor *Cuppadge* frequently visited him, and took no other Fee but a Book I made him a Present of.

In this Inn I lived three Weeks and some Days, in less than a Fortnight my Money was near out, I told my Landlord of it, and that my Stock was not above eight Shillings; he kindly told me I should have what Credit I pleased, and would ask no Security for it but my Word; to which I replied, he was very wrong, as I was a continual Wanderer,

Wanderer. it was probable I might die in some Publick House, without his ever hearing more of me; but I thought the safest Course for him and me was to retrench my Expences, and to endeavour to get by Subscriptions as much as possible. This he approved of, and made my Expences after less than he could afford I fear, in every Respect.

He and his Family behaved with the greatest Candour and Goodness to me; I put off some Specimens and sold some Books here. Mr. *Edward Bermingham*, a Gentleman of this Town I was greatly obliged to, he is the best beloved Man of his Fortune I ever knew; but to none in this Distress was I more obliged to, than the excellent Parson *Travers*, and the Widow *Judge*; I was frequently invited by one or other of this Town, my faithful Servant languished twenty two Days and then expired, and was decently buried in *Kilmoghban* Church-yard, and tho' a Stranger, there was a very great Appearance of Horse and Foot at his Funeral.

There were many Adventures incredible and extraordinary in the Life of this Servant, which to relate would require sixty or seventy Pages, therefore will now pass them by, and keep close only to what relates to myself. The Publick shall have them faithfully hereafter, tho' I cannot grieve I will record.

This eternal Separation being over, I prepared for *Dublin*; Mr. *Ward*, my Landlord, suspected I had no Money; I told him I had, and produced a Crown; he said it was too little, and was for pressing Half a Guinea upon me, which I absolutely refused, and told him, I was never so industrious or inventive as when I had least. I set off and rode a Mile when I met *Peter Marsh* and *Edward Bermingham*, Esqrs. they were both Subscribers

bers to me before, but I recollected neither; they spoke to me for their Books, and shewed me two beautiful Seats near the Road, where they lived, and said they would be well pleased to receive their Books at their Houses from myself. I said nothing of my Intent of going to *Dublin*, but waited upon them at the appointed Hour. I went pretty early in the Morning to Mr. *Marsh's*, but he was abroad; however, I waited about an Hour, in which Time he came home, and not only received a Book from me, but subscribed for this. I was then for going, but he insisted I should stay and dine with him, which I did.

His Doors are always open to Gentlemen, and from his Kitchen are the Poor abundantly served; this Day a great many Gentlemen dined with him, which I afterwards saw was every Day's Practice in his House. Never did I see Hospitality at a higher Pitch nor better regulated than here, and what is very extraordinary, no Man more careful of his very considerable Estate and Business than he. The Office of High Sheriff he served with great Honour, even when Factions were violent, and received the Thanks of his Country for it; he captivates all Degrees of People who are acquainted with him. Never was Landlord more beloved by Tenants, nor Master by Servants than he; my Existence I would stake for him, that he will never disappoint the Publick in any Confidence they repose in him, nor Particulars who rely upon him, so confident am I as to his Sense and Honour. When he marries, I wish he may get a Lady of a Mind equal to the Beauties of his own.

Mr. *Bermingham* of *Kilflan*, my other Subscriber was one of the Company, he engaged me next Day, and do believe from my Knowledge of this Gentleman, no Temptation could prevail upon him to do a base, dishonourable or dishonest

Thing, and believe the Person would be in some Danger that would attempt to corrupt him. I was in a most obliging Manner pressed to stay three Weeks between these two Houses, in which Time I was under many Obligations to Mrs. *Birmingham*, for procuring as many Subscribers as she could for me, and having the same Care taken of me in her House, as if I had been some respected Relation. Mr. *Birmingham* gave me a Letter to a Gentleman near him, who gave me three Guineas for Specimens, and engaged me to dine and stay a Night with him. In this House I saw the finest Assembly of young Ladies all Sisters, that ever I beheld in one Family, and a Mother at their Head, a real Lady Bountiful to the Poor of the Country. To consider her as a Parent to those Ladies, and the Gentleman who took my Specimens, she was a very fine Woman, and a Lady of solid Sense and strong Reason. I was enjoined by this Gentleman not to mention his Name. In this Family I saw what was very extraordinary, a beautiful female Child, not twenty two Months old, knew the twenty four Letters in any Book; tho' incredible it may appear, the Fact is known to be so.

Next Day I was heartily invited by this worthy Family to stay some time, but could not; I returned to Mr. *Birmingham* and next Day to Mr. *Marsh's*. I now found myself by the Countenance of those two Gentlemen and the Subscribers they got me, worth fourteen Pounds. I told Mr. *Birmingham* I owed eight Pounds and was very uneasy to pay it, as it was then in my Power. To keep me two or three Days longer, he sent a Servant of his own near forty Miles forwards and backwards who paid the Money as ordered.

Now

Now Brothers, observe my first Injunction, that on pain of my highest Displeasure, this Part of my Remains or Works may be kept from the rapacious Hands of sneering Apprentices or any others, who may make Folding of it, or other base Uses, as a perpetual Record of the Succour your Brother got in his Distress here.

At length by a kind of Force I took my Leave of those Gentlemen, and set out for *Dublin*, where you may now attend me if you please.

In this Campaign my Clothes were all regularly wore out, and not in the Power of a most experienced Council summoned from *Plunket-street* to retrieve them. After the eight Pounds paid I had six left, which I laid out in Dress with the strictest Oeconomy, and had not half a Crown left.

Here you find me broke again, and being thus circumstanced, my Invention put me on the following Scheme; I got a Pack of Cards, and went to some Friends who were so kind as to write Compliments upon them to their Acquaintances to subscribe to me. Among many others, *Robert Powell*, Attorney, a Gentleman I am greatly obliged to gave me thirty two Cards, twenty eight of which were well received. This Scheme fell first upon two excellent Men, *Richard Malone* was one of them; I never saw him before, but heard of his Fame every where, for his exalted Virtue, Eloquence, Wisdom, unbounded Humanity, and Benevolence; for his Specimen I got a Guinea. I need say no more of the other Gentleman, than tell the World it was *Marlborough Sterling*, Esq; of the *Common-Pleas* Office; he gave me a Guinea for himself, but I would not compound with him for that, therefore left him twenty Specimens to give away, for which he paid me in a few Days. As Compliments grew thin, I recruited and got them mostly from Persons of the first Distinction.

If this Book is well received, I will pursue the same Course for the next. By this Conduct in sixteen Days I cleared upwards of thirty Pounds, in which Time I grew tired of the Town, and to the great Ease of the Citizens, marched from thence home to *Multifarnan*, and laid in a good Stock of Necessaries to make the Winter comfortable. My Amusements were preparing this Work for the Press, making my Will, which you shall have hereafter, as neither you nor the Publick are forgot in it, and once a Week counting my Money, which in a short time fell into a deep Decay, and was invisibly consumed in a few Months.

I then went the North West Circuit, and at *Cavan* I was patronized by *Robert Nugent*, Esq; of *Bob's-grove*, a Gentleman greatly esteemed. In this Journey I was greatly obliged to the beautiful and happy Town of *Strabane*, and in particular to *William Aughinleck*, Esq; and to Mr. *McAstor*, a sensible honest Man, who keeps now as handsome an Inn as I know in *Ireland*.

At *Omagh* — *Stewart* of *Killemoon*, Esq; and Member of Parliament, patronized me; no Man more beloved than he, for his known Worth and Honour.

I got a great many Subscribers in *Derry*, which is a fine and famous Town, beautifully laid out, and the People exceeding good. I was here in particular obliged to — *Society Hamilton*, Esq; to Mr. *Lee* and Mr. *Egan*. I cleared about twenty Pound upon this Circuit, and returning home, happy as I thought, having so much, and less to do with it than I had for Years before; when behold, within six Mile of my own House, a Parcel of Fellows out of a House on the high Road, rushed upon me, and told me I was the King's Prisoner at the Suit of Mr. *F. G. Attorney*, for thirty six Pound. Authors are generally in great Danger

ger of a Goal, when arrested for want of Bail, but my Fate was happier, for *William* and *James Dardis*, Esqrs. bailed me to Mr. *North*, Sub-sheriff, whom I thank for being easy with me as to his Fees, and likewise Mr. *Young*, Officer in the Court of *Exchequer*, who would take no Fees from me, when I gave Bail at Bar.

Robert Bonham, whom I have known for Years, was the Attorney I employed to take my Defence upon him; I think, and have heard Judges say, he knows his Business very well, and can from my Knowledge affirm, he is a Man of strict Honour, and Virtue, and if he does not appear so to all who know him, and does him Justice, I never will write a Word after; as yet his Reputation is unspotted. He got a Nonprocess against *F. G.* in this Affair, but the Cause is still depending. I must inform you, Mr. *F. G.* got seventeen Pounds four Shillings of mine, to pay one *Savage*, a Tanner, near *Finglas*, to whom I owed a hundred Pounds, and sent him that in Part, which Trust he basely betrayed, and applied the whole Money to his own Use; I charged him with this Villainy, which he could not deny. At the End of his Acquaintance and mine, I took his Note with another Person joined with him, for the seventeen Pounds he defrauded me of; he was decreed upon this Note, and he lodged an Appeal with such artful Management, that I never got my Expence for the first Decree, but decreed him again upon his Appeal. Besides this Breach of Trust, he owed me on other Accounts above twenty Pounds, which I despaired of; however, he swore I owed him thirty six Pounds, took a Writ, and when I was in his Hands upon it, he told me he had conducted several Law-suits for me, and would drop his Demand if I did so. I rejected his Offer with Contempt, and now declare I owed him nothing,

which by the Date of the Note he passed to me testifies, being at the End of all Dealings and Interchange between us.

I have since paid *Savage* off, for which I thank the Publick that enabled me, and was never yet sued for a just Debt.

The only Thing I have been sued for was a glandered Mare, warranted sound to me, I have dismissed the Plaintiff twice upon it at *Mullingar*; and before I proceed farther, will take this Opportunity to thank the Gentlemen of the Law, who appeared for me there without Fee, which were Counsellor *Hart*, Mr. *Bonham*, Mr. *Williams*, Mr. *White*, Mr. *Boys*, Mr. *North*, and many others. I don't mean these trifling Affairs and Troubles of mine as Amusement for the Publick, they are intended for you only, and that you and our Brethren, may for ever remember the Friends I have mentioned.

I now set out for *Munster*; from *Mullingar* I went to *Limerick*, and was patronized by *Samuel Hays*, Esq; a young Gentleman of Honour and good Sense, well read, and greatly beloved, he gave me two Guineas for Specimens. From thence I went to *Ennis*, at which Place I never was before, and all there appeared as strange to me, as the Children of a new Generation. There was a great number of Gentlemen at this Assizes, which I reconnoitered with great Exactness; my Plan being laid, I applied to the Right Hon. Earl of *Inchiquin*, Knight of the Bath; he has many more Titles but I don't know them; he took in the Publick Street a Specimen, which was of very great Service to me, and was bountiful to me in Gold.

Colonel *Augustin Fitzgerald* patronized me, and put off a great many, he is a Gentleman extremely regarded for his strict Honour and Virtue, and his Conduct keeps up to the Dignity of his anti-
ent

ent Family. From thence I went to *Galway*, and gave Counsellor *Blake* out of eighteen Pounds I got at *Limerick* and *Ennis*, fourteen Pounds twelve Shillings, to give two Creditors of mine he knew, for fear of Accidents. He came to publick Change to serve me, where the Gentlemen upon it took my Specimens very fast. He has the best Estate of any Lawyer at the Bar; he is a common Father to his numerous Kindred, the Poor who have a just Cause are sure of his powerful Succour, his Honour and Virtue untainted, his Charities unbounded, and as universally beloved as any Man can be.

From thence I went to *Cork*, and was there patronized by *Thomas Newenham*, Esq; one of the Representatives in Parliament for that City; Virtue, Honour and Goodness are blooming upon him, he was very bountiful to me in Gold; and likewise the excellent Sir *John Freke*, Bart. *John Becher*, Esq; and — *Baker*, Esq; Sheriff, both Men of Worth and Honour, paid me in Gold for their Specimens.

From thence I went to *Clonmell*, and then to *Waterford*; Counsellor *Dwyer* put off a great many Specimens for me, he is greatly loved and regarded by all who know him; here ended the Circuit. I applied to *John Smith*, Esq; one of the Judges of Assize; he behaved exceeding well to me, and said he was sorry I did not apply to him at the beginning of the Circuit. He subscribed himself, and gave me a Letter to a Gentleman of Distinction at the Assizes of *Wexford*, where I once more had the Pleasure to find my worthy Patrons and resting Pillars, *John Colpoys* and *Thomas Kanning*, Esqrs; to whom I kept close, and travelled with. From this Town going to *Wicklow*, we staid a Night at a handsome Town called *Gorey*, where I heard Mr. *Kanning*, as Clerk of

the Crown, by many greatly applauded for a variety of humane Actions, and particularly the following : The Fees of one *Reily* in his Office came to five or Six Pounds; *Reily* was miserably poor, but had a good Character, and had more Friends than Persons generally have in his Circumstances, who applied to Mr. *Kanning* to remit his Fees, but he, to the Surprize of all who knew him, appeared inexorable, and would hear no more upon the begging Account. *Reily's* Advocates begged from the Publick, and made a Collection of three Pounds seventeen Shillings for the unhappy Prisoner, which they brought to Mr. *Kanning*, declaring they could get no more; all this Time he had the Prisoner's Discharge wrote in his Pocket, and sent it and the whole Money to the unfortunate *Reily*, which made it a happy Bondage to him, to have so much Money to begin the World with, which was new to him.

Many Examples of this Kind could I give of this Gentleman, and his Brother *Daniel* in this Journey. I saw a great Instance of his and Mr. *Colpoys* Humanity and Generosity to a Gentleman in Distress, who was fined twenty Pounds, but cannot relate the Affair without dirtying those who were clean in the Sight of the World before. On this Circuit I was much obliged to Mr. *Hornege*, Attorney.

This whole Journey was a most delightful Ride, on the Summit of *Wind-gate Hill*, I beheld the greatest Variety of Nature's Sports, intermixed with human Art. In short, I believe this to be as fine a Prospect as the World can produce, with which I close this Campaign, but Soldier-like, will take Notice of some Things I remarked. In open Court I saw an Evidence whisper'd, and heard him dictated, the Whisperer got off with Impunity. Nothing could be more scandalous, except a Judge being drunk upon the Bench, before whom are
often

often the Lives, Liberty and Property of the Subjects in Question. Another Remark I made; a Fellow was tried and convicted of stealing two Cows, the Owner took him immediately after he received the Price of them in a Fair, he brought the Thief before a Magistrate, who took the Money from him and committed him to Goal. Upon his Conviction the Magistrate produced the Money to the Court. The Wretch that was hanged, in a Fortnight after begged this Money that his Life was to pay for, to give to his Wife and to bury him; the Man who was robbed likewise begged it, as it was certainly the Price of his Goods, but neither got it.

In a Civil Bill Court, a Man brought his Action for four Pounds nineteen Shillings and ten Pence, the Judge snarl'd, and said, why was not this Action brought for four Pounds nineteen Shillings and eleven Pence three Farthings; observe, in Actions amounting to five Pounds, Council must be employed; and the Judge insinuated by this Action's coming so close to the Mark, that it was managed to save a Lawyer's Fee, at least the complaisant Attorney understood his Lordship so, for he was mute after, till his unhappy Client feed Council, which is a most dead Weight upon the happy Intention of that good Act in such small Sums. Let it therefore be ordered by us, that all such Practices as have a Tendency to murder Laws and Equity, may henceforth cease, where we are, or clear the Courts of us, that we may not behold Sacrifices we cannot help.

The next Sort of Gentlemen that come under my Speculation, are, the fighting Bucks and Heroes, a Specie of Knight Errants, with this Difference, that the antient Knights set out with the most sublime Notions, and Practice of Honour, and devoted their Lives to relieve the Oppressed.

The

The Moderns are actuated by quite different Sentiments, not having so much as a Glimpse of Honour or Virtue in view, but a most unhappy Love for the Indulgence of their own ill-judged Passions, which hurries them to Violence, Rapine and Oppression. From those cursed Desires of the Insolent, the Knights of old defended the humane and peaceable; the Moderns are impatient of the justest Contradiction, when perhaps a good Reputation or spotless Virtue is in Question; a Whore, a Dog, a Word misplaced, a Horse, the Omission of a trifling Punctilio or Ceremony; rustick Mirth and Freedom, are often the leading Causes to the Death of some unhappy Gentlemen.

To prevent the bad Effects such Pests have upon Society, I would recommend to have them presented as Nuisances to the Publick, for they are such. I challenge the Kingdom to give one Example of a good Man who is reputed a Dueller, or a fighting Man. They seldom have one good Quality, and are remarkably Cowards when the Honour of their King, or the Service of their Country call them to Arms.

I have Notes now before me, of two Officers who behaved as Bears in every Company they got into; one of them killed a worthy Gentleman. These two upon Sight of the Enemies of their Country, basely deserted their Colours, and ran away, for which they were both cashier'd. Experience has proved it, and is now taken for granted, they never behave well in a Field of Battle. The present barbarous Custom is, to send a Messenger called a Second, a formal Sort of Gentleman to invite the intended Victim to meet at a certain Time and Place, to be methodically murdered, or to murder. Its now become so fashionable, that a Gentleman's Reputation is undone if he refuses the Invitation.

I am

I am grieved I have not heard of one Example, made in our Courts of Justice, of those declared Enemies of Mankind, for these premeditated Murders; they have not in their Justification so much to say as a Highwayman has, who kills those he meets for sake of their Money. To extirpate or reform them, no more is requisite than a Judge and Jury who believe in God to try them, if they have the least Faith in God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, they never will acquit a Murderer, but have him tuck'd up. Mercy to them is a Cruelty to the Publick, when the Duel is fought by Assignation. To prevent this Practice and make it unfashionable is very easy, by hanging a Dozen or two of the first Offenders, and punishing their Seconds as severe as possible; the Experiment is very cheap, as they are the Excrements of the People.

Before I wander with you into other Matters, give my Compliments to the late Lord Mayor, Alderman *Hunt*, Junior, and tell him from me, his Name will ever be famous, for being the glorious Defender of the Liberty of the Poor of *Dublin*, and in that single Act of summoning for small Debts before they can be arrested, has done the Publick more Good, than all his Predecessors ever did, that I have read or heard of. I will more largely speak of this great Benefit in another Work; likewise, tell his Successors, if they don't join the publick Voice, against any particular Set of Men, they are of the wrong Side the Question, and disappoint the Hopes of those who expected they would be Fathers to them.

In Imitation of the World, I have left the Poor, which is the Bulk of Mankind, for our last Consideration. In my Travels I have seen such Shoals of them, as would affect a Person of Humanity and Reason, more than beholding a Heap of human Carnages on a Field of Battle, who were then out
of

of their Miseries ; but the former had Famine upon them, and what is more shocking, all their Misery proceeding from one Cause, which shall before we part be taken Notice of ; these Sights are so common here, and have continued so long, they affect the Beholders no more, than publick Executioners are, who by a long Practice to torture their Specie, make it at length familiar and easy to them.

I must except one Gentleman, whom to my Knowledge I never saw, nor was it in his Way to oblige me.

In the Beginning of the Calamities of the Poor as to Famine, in the Summer of seventeen hundred and fifty six, *William Smith* of *Barbarville* and County of *Westmeath*, Esq; published an Invitation three Days in a Week, to all Poor without Distinction, to come to the Entertainments he provided for them ; to see his extraordinary Charity duly executed, he appointed no Deputy, but with Joy in the Service of God, had his own Eyes and Hands engaged with his Servants, to relieve them plentifully, which he did with good Meat, Bread, and Broth, and frequently had above an hundred Beggars with him, many of whom he saved from perishing. This Gentleman deservedly has acquired the Character of a great Oeconomist, a Man of strict Virtue and Honour, and an excellent Magistrate ; but, alas ! I cannot tell you of another *William Smith* ; on the contrary, I can inform you of Numbers who close their Gates against the Poor ; the Porters of those Gates, in executing their cruel Orders, will tell those who apply, their Lords or Masters cannot dine with Pleasure if they appear in sight ; and at those Houses the Fragments of their plentiful Tables are carefully destroyed, rather than given to the Poor, to prevent their making a Practice of calling or being troublesome.

blesome. Nor do I ever hear of any kind of Charities or good Acts of those who close their Hearts and Gates against the Poor, though themselves greatly contribute to the Cause of their Calamity. Those Persons believe not a Word of *Dives* and *Lazarus*, their whole Faith being in their Rents and Distinctions. Though Charity is agreed upon by all Religions and Sects of Mankind to be essentially necessary to Salvation; but they regard not the universal Belief.

I will now give you a few Hints as to my Opinion of the Cause from whence proceeds most of the Distress of the laborious Poor, with Expectation of this Allowance from you, Brothers, that the Poor have generally but poor Friends and Advocates, and hope, for the goodness of my Design, you will rather improve any Hints I give than criticise upon them. I will proceed by way of Question and Answer.

Quest. Can *Ireland* produce the Necessaries of Life?

Ans. It can plentifully.

Quest. Why then are you so infamous all over the World for starving your Poor, you must certainly be an idle People?

Ans. We are not, but the fertile Lands are all locked up from us, and now most of the Mountains, which are the only Grounds the Poor can get, in the Possession of Graziers, whose Interest it is to extirpate human Kind, and replace them by Herds and Flocks. Shocking would it be to a civilized Stranger to travel this Kingdom, and trace the Villages destroyed by them these thirty Years past; if not informed, he must conclude it done by Fire and Sword. We seldom have five Months Provision in the Year, nor have we Ground to cultivate

tivate that can produce more, which every Year grows less. *Dublin*, like Ships sometimes at Sea, has often been reduced of late to ten or twelve Days Provision, whilst all *Europe* abounded in Plenty, except us; but Famine will certainly be the End of it, and all our Towns, if the Parliament does not interpose and take other Measures.

How precarious is the Existence of Cities which receive their daily Bread from abroad, and are denied it by their unnatural Mother at home. Except we had a People as wise, good, and rich as the *Dutch*, who always keep Magazines sufficient to serve for Years, and this because the Productions of their Country are too scarce for their numerous Inhabitants; they, like all other wise States and Kingdoms, invite People to them, our Conduct banishes them; though our Towns appear inhabited, our Country is almost desolate. We are a prolifick People, and notwithstanding we have had no Wars, or any other Plague to waste us, except Famine, for fifty Years past, our Inhabitants are less increased than in any other Part of *Europe* in that Time.

Quest. How many Acres may a Grazier hold?

Ans. They are, unhappily for the Country, not limited, but the common Run is from ten thousand Acres to five hundred; those under the last Number are not much considered. A few Herds and Shepherds are all they have Occasion for, and banish the rest, who seldom find a Place to receive them, for want of which they are obliged to go into Exile, without Distinction of Religion. It is judged, by this Practice only, that abundantly more have been banished, and perish'd to Death by Hunger and Cold, than were destroyed by the bloody Massacre of 1641.

Quest.

Quest. Do you ever hear what becomes of those Exiles?

Ans. We do; they are remarkably the strongest and best Chairmen, Coal-heavers, and Labourers in *England*; as to those who go farther to seek their Fortunes, take the following Character of them from the *English* News-papers, dated the 16th or 18th of *June*, 1737, which says, "We can hardly meet with a foreign Gazette but we find some *Irishman* or *Scotchman* that makes a great military Figure in it."

France and *Spain* swarm with *Irish* General Officers, Men who have distinguished themselves by their Swords among some of the bravest Troops in the World. The Emperor has at this Time about a dozen *Irish* Generals in his Service, and likewise several *Scots*, and all of them in very great Esteem at the Imperial Court. The Empress of *Russia* has an *Irishman*, Count *Lacy*, one of her Veldt Marshals, with whom she entrusts the Command of a powerful and numerous Army, and the important Expedition of the *Crim*. To these, as for Courage, we may add the Officers and Men of *Ligonier's* Horse, the *Irish* Brigades at *Cremona* and *Fontenoy*, Sir *Peter Warren*, General *Johnson*, and General *Blakeney*. Look upon all these as a small Sample of the Sons of *Ireland*, who have served their King gloriously; those in foreign Service were obliged to quit their native Home.

Quest. Is not the Kingdom enriched by the great Stocks and Flocks?

Ans. Particulars are, but the Kingdom in general is ruined and depopulated by them. Nor is this Misfortune peculiar to *Ireland*, there is not a Country in *Europe* or *Asia*, that relies upon Stock for Exportation, that is not a poor and despised People in the sight of their Neighbours; and the Reason is obvious, where Herds flourish, Mankind, which

which is the real Strength and Riches of a Nation, must be thinned to make way for them. To demonstrate this, look at *Holland, England, France,* and the North East of *Ireland*, they regard Inhabitants more than Stock, except what may serve themselves. On the other Hand, behold *Tartary* in *Asia* and *Europe*, the most miserable Parts of *Germany, Bohemia, Hungary, Scotland, Wales,* and three Provinces of *Ireland*, these prefer Beasts to human Kind; judge you of the Figure the latter make to the former in the sight of the World.

Quest. What becomes of the Money these Cattle and Flocks are sold for?

Ans. The Hides, Flesh, Tallow, and Wool are not sufficient to pay for our Wine only, besides an infinite Variety of other Luxuries; there is a great Ballance against us. Incredible are the Tuns of Claret consumed in *Ireland* every Year; the closest Calculations I heard made was, that every two Bottles of Claret consumed in *Ireland* paid a Soldier for a Day in *France*; and upon the most modest Computation, we paid at least twenty six thousand Men each Year for the *French* King, and help to recruit his Legions by those we send abroad.

Quest. Have you no Liquors of your own Growth?

Ans. We have, Beer, Ale, and Spirits, but few above the Degree of Coblers or Porters will touch them, and yet have all the Excellencies of Wine, by making those drunk and mad who take a Sufficiency of them, with this Advantage to those who drink the latter, they live to a greater Age and are more healthy than those who use the former.

Quest. As Corn generally bears so high a Price, I am surprized the Graziers who have the Land do not fall into that Business?

Ans.

Ans. The Profits they have by Grazing are so easy to them, that they will never change it for the Labour and Care the Plow requires.

Quest. What Expectations have you to relieve your Distresses?

Ans. None, till it pleases God to incline our Parliament to compassionate us, and make such compulsory Laws for Tillage, that the Evasion or Disobedience of them should fall with the heaviest Vengeance and Destruction upon the Enemies of this Land who will not comply.

Quest. Do you not think an Act of this Kind would occasion Corn to become a Drug?

Ans. No; where it is known to be in Plenty, all the unhappy Nations of the World resort there to buy; if carefully kept a short time it never wants Purchasers. Look into History, from the ancient *Egyptians* to this Time, and you will find in all Ages and Places since, they were a great, rich, and powerful People, who abounded with it, preferable to any other Commodity, and those as despicable, poor, and wretched who neglected this Blessing. It is certain we have exceeding good Men, who encourage Tillage by Premiums, but neither Premiums or Navigation will ever do, till Quantities of Land are appointed by Parliament for that Purpose, and then every Year our Yeomanry will increase, to the great Strength and Wealth of the Nation. The Corn Trade adds more Wealth to *England* than her Commerce to the *East* and *West-Indies*, which you may soon be informed of.

Quest. Do you think *England* would suffer you to bring Tillage to Perfection?

Ans. I am certain they would as soon order their Dragoons to cut our Throats as prevent it, if our Parliament had it at Heart.

Quest. Don't you think there ought to be some Encouragements from Parliament, as well as compulsory Laws for it?

Ans. I do, and am sure they are wise enough to nurse this wish'd-for Blessing, if ever they give it to us, in its Infancy.

Quest. Have you ever thought of any Scheme that may change the dreadful Desolation of *Ireland*?

Ans. The Voice of all who behold the Miseries of it, and the Happiness of others, agree, that if the Parliament limited a Quantity of Acres, which no Man should exceed, in the farming way, and the smaller these Limitations were, till they came to fifty Acres, the better for the Publick, would soon relieve us. Demonstrations to this Point may be given in sight of us; for Example, *Holland, England*, the North East of *Ireland*, all a rich and formidable People, and their being so, attributed to this Cause more than any other. Longer Leases to be given of those Farms than what is now customary, and a Lease formed by Parliament for Plantations and Improvements, for the Good of Posterity, which should be the Standard of all Leases executed between Landlords and Tenants, whether recited or no; the Reversion of no Tenant's Lease to be taken or sold, which if it be, in spite of Laws will occasion Waste, and is generally bad for Landlord and Tenant; no Lease to hold good if the Tenant, his Assign, or Representative did not live upon the Land set to him; those who have Leases already of large Tracts, to oblige them to parcel them out into small Farms, or to plow a great Proportion of them. Another Calamity requires parliamentary Redress, it being almost sufficient to frustrate any good Intention as to Tillage, which are Manor Mills, where the Inhabitants of a Lordship or Manor are obliged to grind their Corn, and must run the

the Risque whether the Mills be good or bad, the Miller or his Servants honest or dishonest; this Incumbrance lies as a dead Weight at present upon Tillage. Suffer what they may, the Poor will not nor cannot help themselves; I don't know a Manor that would not advance in their own Rents, as much as their Landlord receives, from such Mills to be discharged from the Obligation of grinding at them. It is proved by the Experience of all Places, that any Trade which admits of no Rivalship in it, never uses those well who depend upon it. Some Landlords now go farther, and lead the Way for others to follow, that is, by setting up Manor Malt-houses, and they speak of establishing Manor Bakers, Shoemakers, Taylors, Smiths, and Artificers of all Kinds, and none of their Tenants to deal with any others but those appointed, which Practices tend to ruin and enslave the People.

Dear Brothers, join me in Defence of the Poor, and let us draw our Pens in their Service, which is all the Power we have, that we may, as far as in us lies, prevent for the future such Scenes of woful Wretchedness as we beheld for Years past by Scarcity; and the continued Deliverances our Country has had, by being supplied from abroad, which has kept it from being desolate and waste before now. Let us no longer depend upon the Uncertainty of being supplied by others, as one Disappointment may be fatal to a Kingdom; therefore let it be made publick and known from us to all working Tradesmen, Chairmen, Coachmen, and all the laborious Poor, to concern themselves no more as to Court and Country, Liberty or Slavery, till this essential Concern of Bread is provided for them, and that from their Mother Earth, and no other Place. Let their Words with all Humility be, when the Rulers pass by to Senate, Fa-

D d 2

thers,

thers, let us have Bread, we are ready to work, fight, and die to serve our King and Country.

If the general Voice makes an Impression upon their Hearts, who have it for ever in their Power to give or refuse this Blessing, then let those be revered in the august Assembly who speak for it, and their Names be eternally recorded as the Champions of *Ireland*; let Generations to come thank them Names for the Increase of Millions of human Kind to this at present deserted Nation; I now commit the Poor to your Care. When at Leisure read the following Letter, and consider it, from the River *Seine* to the *Shannon* in *Ireland*.

Dearly beloved Sister,

I SEND these Presents greeting you and all our Floody Sisters of *Ireland*, to shew the earnest Desire I have to hold Correspondence and mingle Waters with you; though Mankind on our Shores are forbid Correspondence, that cannot affect our watry Element; and to convince you of our Love, am now desired by all our Sisters here, in which I heartily join, to assure you all, that we are fully satisfied your People are our best and sincerest Friends in Peace or War; you know our Intelligence may be relied upon, as Part of us passes through every human Body here. I am this Minute inform'd by Part of myself, directly returned from the beautiful Madam *Pompadour*, that before this Express was fully dispatched *Lewis the Beloved* came to her with a Paper in his Hand, signifying the great Affection of *Ireland* for him; that wisely foreseeing the War that immediately ensued, did then discontinue a considerable Part of the Duty upon Wine imported there, from his Kingdom, and carefully continued the Duties upon their own Growth, being such a masterly Stroke of Policy to advance his Designs, that

that *Richieu* or *Mazarin* never executed any thing equal to it; that Tillage was lately proposed, but his powerful and numerous Friends would not hear of it by any Means; that he would throughout his Dominions order Prayers for the Increase of Beef, Butter, and Wool in *Ireland*, and Dispensations to be sent his worthy Friends there to drink in Bumper Toasts, Destruction, Annihilation, and Damnation to *France*, provided they take them in Claret. Upon which the lovely *Pompadour* arose and said, *Lewis*, Prayers for them is too publick a Declaration of your Friendship, and may injure them otherwise; it is true Policy, when Things go well as Heart can wish, to make no Change; you see no other Country we are at War with will taste a Drop of our Wine, except they get it by Plunder, but *Ireland* gives all she is worth for it, in War as well as Peace. In short, my dear *Lewis*, were it situated in the Heart of *France* the People could not be more serviceable to us than they are, therefore no Alteration in our past Conduct, I insist upon it, but to prepare Chains, they are ready; to all which the Grand Monarch agreed.

I must now complain to you of our Sister *Thames*; I wrote her as kind a Letter of Thanks as possible, for the polite Adm——ls she sent of late to command her Fleets in the *Mediterranean*, and the kind Reward she intended *Lig——r's* Horse, to make Drag——ns of them, for their Rudeness to us at *Dettingen*, requesting the Continuance of her Favours that way, with a few Directions what Sort of Men to send to fight their Country's Cause against us, which were to be Commanders bred at Court, as delicate in their Food as possible, and not touch a Morsel laid before them, if any except Cooks and Conjurers knew what it was; to be only instructed in their
Nurseries

Nurseries at home, by a Ship in Miniature hung in their Apartment; to give them an early Taste for Perfumes and all other Soft-delights; to be awoke by a Symphony of Musick. These are requisite Preparatives for young Adm——ls to resist the offensive Smell of Pitch, Tar, Sea Cooks, and the rude Thunder of Morning and Evening Guns. When thus accomplished, my dear Sister, send them as soon as possible to fight us, and for their Success be you regardless of the outrageous Resentment, Cries, and Tears of your People at home, for lost Honour and Dominion; their Anger and Sorrow being like that of Children, which is immediately qualified by a new Play-thing, and the former Loss and Glory forgot.

Here she stopped, and would read no more of it, but, like a saucy Jade, fretted, frothed, foamed, and swore, with her Consent, an Adm——l or Gen——l should never be sent for from Court more, nor any have Command but those of Conduct, Courage, and known Abilities, without Regard to Birth or Fortune; this is all the Answer I hear she gave.

Now, dear Sister, I return to you, which is, to enjoin you to keep our Friends steady to their old Practices, that is, the Prevention of Tillage, the Banishment of the People, and the Consumption of Claret, as all three must go Hand in Hand together, and let us know the Names of those famous Friends of ours that are remarkable for drinking from one Quart of it to six every Afternoon, before they can compose themselves to Rest. Nothing can endear them to us more than a constant Practice of that Kind, which so clearly demonstrates their Love, though they know every Bumper of Wine poured down to be in effect the vital Blood of the Poor. But such Trifles are not to be considered

dered by Friends hearty in our Pursuit to universal Empire. I must likewise request when any Part of you, or of our Sisterhood, gets into the Recesses of your beautiful Females, you may be attentive to their Amours, that we may have the Narratives of them, for the Amusement of the matchless, great, and delightful Madam *Pompadour*, who is now giving Fashions, regarded more than Laws, to *Europe*. A Letter from you with Impatience I will expect, and am,

Dear Sisters,

Yours affectionately during Time,

Seine.

F I N I S.

[Faint, illegible markings]

1. The first part of the book is a history of the city of London, from its foundation to the present time. It is written by a learned and judicious author, who has collected a vast number of facts and anecdotes, and has arranged them in a clear and concise manner.

1872



and the Army
ment in China
all Officers and
is created by
to which was

RECEIVED

Printed by S. E. Lawrence, Cambridge, Mass.